

L. RON HUBBARD

DIANETIC

The Modern Science of Mental Health

PUBLICATIONS, INC.

:)Bitsoup.org:)

Important Note

In reading this book, be very certain you never go past a word you do not fully understand.

The only reason a person gives up a study or becomes confused or unable to learn is because he or she has gone past a word that was not understood.

The confusion or inability to grasp or learn comes AFTER a word that the person did not have defined and understood.

Have you ever had the experience of coming to the end of a page and realizing you didn't know what you had read? Well, somewhere earlier on that page you went past a word that you had no definition for or an incorrect definition for.

Here's an example. "It was found that when the crepuscule arrived the children were quieter and when it was not present, they were much livelier." You see what happens. You think you don't understand the whole idea, but the inability to understand came entirely from the one word you could not define, crepuscule, which means twilight or darkness.

It may not only be the new and unusual words that you will have to look up. Some commonly used words can often be misdefined and so cause confusion.

This datum about not going past an undefined word is the most important fact in the whole subject of study. Every subject you have taken up and abandoned had its words which you failed to get defined.

Therefore, in studying this book be very, very certain you never go past a word you do not fully understand. If the material becomes confusing or you can't

seem to grasp it, there will be a word just earlier that you have not understood. Don't go any further, but go back to BEFORE you got into trouble, find the misunderstood word and get it defined.

Definitions

As an aid to the reader, words most likely to be misunderstood have been defined in footnotes the first time they occur in the text. Words sometimes have several meanings. The footnote definitions in this book only give the meaning that the word has as it is used in the text. Other definitions for the word can be found in a dictionary.

A glossary including all the footnote definitions is at the back of this book.

Contents

How to Read This Book 1

Book One: The Goal of Man

Chapter Two The Clear 16

Chapter Three The Goal of Man 31

Chapter Four The Four Dynamics 51

Chapter Five Summary 57

Book Two: The Single Source of

All Inorganic Mental and Organic Psychosomatic Ills

Chapter One The Analytical Mind and the

Standard Memory Banks 65 Chapter Two The Reactive Mind 73 Chapter Three The Cell and the Organism 101 Chapter Four The "Demons" 120 Chapter Five Psychosomatic Illness 131 Chapter Six Emotion and the Dynamics 158 Chapter Seven Prenatal Experience and Birth 176 Chapter Eight Contagion of Aberration 193 Chapter Nine Keying In the Engram 203 Chapter Ten Preventive Dianetics 219

Book Three: Therapy

Chapter One The Mind's Protection 235 Chapter Two Release or Clear 242 Chapter Three The Auditor's Role 247 Chapter Four Diagnosis 255 Chapter Five Returning, the File Clerk and

the Time Track 276 Chapter Six The Laws of Returning 293 Chapter Seven Emotion and the Life Force 319 Chapter Eight Some Types of Engrams 367 Chapter Nine Mechanisms and Aspects

of Therapy-Part 1386

Mechanisms and Aspects of Therapy-Part 2 439 Chapter Ten Dianetics—Past and
Future 553

Appendix: Dianetics: The Bridge to Clear 568 About the Author 581

For More Information

Glossary

Index

Bibliography

587

599

640

659

xi

How to Read This Book

Dianetics is an adventure. It is an exploration into terra incognita,¹ the human mind, that vast and hitherto unknown realm half an inch back of our foreheads.

The discoveries and developments which made the formulation of Dianetics possible occupied many years of exact research and careful testing. This was exploration, it was also consolidation. The trail is blazed, the routes are sufficiently mapped for you to voyage in safety into your own mind and recover there your full inherent potential, which is not, we now know, low but very, very high.

As you progress in therapy, the adventure is yours to know why you did what you did when you did it, to know what caused those dark and unknown fears which came in nightmares as a child, to know where your moments of pain and pleasure lay. There is much which an individual does not know about himself, about his parents, about his "motives." Some of the things you will find may astonish you, for the most important data of your life may be not memory but engrams² in the

1. terra incognita: an unknown land; a region or subject of which nothing is known.

2. engrain: a mental image picture which is a recording of an experience containing pain, unconsciousness, and a real or fancied threat to survival. It is a recording in the reactive mind of something which actually happened to an individual in the past and which contained pain and unconsciousness, both of which are recorded in the mental image picture called an engram. It must, by definition, have impact or injury as part of its content. These engrams are a complete recording, down to the last accurate detail, of every perception present in a moment of partial or full unconsciousness.

L. RON HUBBARD

hidden depths of your mind, not articulate³ but only destructive.

You will find many reasons why you "cannot get well" and you will know at length, when you find the dictating lines in the engrams, how amusing those reasons are, especially to you.

Dianetics is no solemn adventure. For all that it has to do with suffering and loss, its end is always

laughter, so foolish, so misinterpreted were the things which caused the woe.

Your first voyage into your own terra incognita will be through the pages of this book. You will find as you read that many things "you always knew were so" are articulated here. You will be gratified to know that you held not opinions but scientific facts in many of your concepts of existence. You will find, too, many data that have long been known by all, and you will possibly consider them far from news and be prone to under-evaluate them: be assured that underevaluation of these facts kept them from being valuable, no matter how long they were known, for a fact is never important without a proper evaluation of it and its precise relationship to other facts. You are following here a vast network of facts which, reaching out, can be seen to embrace the whole field of man in all his works. Fortunately you do not have to concern yourself with following far any one of these lines until you are done. And then these horizons will stretch wide enough to satisfy anyone.

Dianetics is a large subject, but that is only because man is himself a large subject. The science of his thought cannot but embrace all his actions. By careful compart-menting and relating of data, the field has been kept narrow enough to be easily followed. Mostly this handbook will tell you, without any specific mention, about

3. articulate: well formulated; clearly presented.

2

How TO READ THIS BOOK

yourself and your family and friends, for you will meet them here and know them.

This volume has made no effort to use resounding or thunderous phrases, frowning polysyllables⁴ or professorial detachment. When one is delivering answers which are simple, he need not make the communication any more difficult than is necessary to convey the ideas. "Basic language" has been used, much of the nomenclature⁵ is colloquial;⁶ the pedantic⁷ has not only not been employed, it has also been ignored. This volume communicates to several strata of life and professions; the favorite nomenclatures of none have been observed since such a usage would impede the understanding of others. And so bear with us, psychiatrist, when your structure is not used, for we have no need for structure here; and bear with us, doctor, when we call a cold a cold and not a catarrhal⁸ disorder of the respiratory tract. For this is, essentially, engineering, and these engineers are liable to say anything. And "scholar," you would not enjoy being burdened with the summation signs and the Lorentz-FitzGerald-Einstein equations,' so

4. polysyllables: words having several, especially four or more, syllables.

5. nomenclature: the set of terms used to describe things in a particular subject.

6. colloquial: characteristic of or appropriate to ordinary or familiar conversation rather than formal speech or writing; informal.

7. pedantic: having unnecessary stress on minor or trivial points of learning; displaying a scholarship lacking in judgment or sense of proportion.

8. catarrhal: having to do with inflammation of a mucous membrane, especially of the nose or throat, causing an increased flow of mucus.

9. Lorentz-FitzGerald-Einstein equations: mathematical equations developed by Hendrik Lorentz and George Francis FitzGerald, closely related to the work of Einstein. These formulas, also known as the Lorentz-FitzGerald contraction, contain the hypothesis that a moving body exhibits a contraction in the direction of motion when its velocity is close to the speed of light.

L. RON HUBBARD

we shall not burden the less puristic reader with scientifically impossible Hegelian¹⁰ grammar which insists that absolutes exist in fact.

The plan of the book might be represented as a cone which starts with simplicity and descends into wider application. This book follows, more or less, the actual steps of the development of Dianetics. First there was the dynamic principle of existence," then its meaning, then the source of aberration,¹² and finally the application of all as therapy and the techniques of therapy. You won't find any of this very difficult. It was the originator who had the difficulty. You should have seen the

10. Hegelian: of Hegel (Georg Wilhelm Friedrich Hegel [1770-1831], German philosopher) or his philosophy. Hegel put forth a philosophy based on the principle that an idea or event (thesis) generates its

opposite (antithesis) leading to the reconciliation of opposites.

11. dynamic principle of existence: survival. The goal of life can be considered to be infinite survival. Man, as a life form, can be demonstrated to obey in all his actions and purposes the one command "Survive!" It is not a new thought that man is surviving. It is a new thought that man is motivated only by survival.

12. aberration: a departure from rational thought or behavior. From the Latin, aberrare, to wander from; Latin, ab, away, errare, to wander. It means basically to err, to make mistakes, or more specifically to have fixed ideas which are not true. The word is also used in its scientific sense. It means departure from a straight line. If a line should go from A to B, then if it is "aberrated" it would go from A to some other point, to some other point, to some other point, to some other point, to some other point and finally arrive at B. Taken in its scientific sense, it would also mean the lack of straightness or to see crookedly as, in example, a man sees a horse but thinks he sees an elephant. Aberrated conduct would be wrong conduct, or conduct not supported by reason. When a person has engrams, these tend to deflect what would be his normal ability to perceive truth and bring about an aberrated view of situations which then would cause an aberrated reaction to them. Aberration is opposed to sanity, which would be its opposite. This is the most fundamental level of aberration: "If the food smells good, go away from it!" This is directly against the survival intention of the organism.

How TO READ THIS BOOK

first equations and postulates" of Dianetics! As research progressed and as the field developed, Dianetics began to simplify. That is a fair guarantee that one is on a straight trail of science. Only things which are poorly known become more complex the longer one works upon them.

It is suggested that you read straight on through. By the time you get into the Appendix, you should have an excellent command of the subject. The book is arranged that way. Every fact related to Dianetic therapy is stated in several ways and is introduced again and again. In this way, the important facts have been pointed up to your attention. When you have finished the book you can come back to the beginning and look through it and study what you think you need to know.

Almost all the basic philosophy and certainly all the derivations of the master subject of Dianetics were excluded here, partly because this volume had to stay under half a million words and partly because they belong in a separate text where they can receive full justice. Nevertheless, you have the scope of the science with this volume in addition to therapy itself.

You are beginning an adventure. Treat it as an adventure. And may you never be the same again.

13. postulates: things assumed to be true, especially as a basis for reasoning.

Book One

The Goal of Man

CHAPTER ONE

The Scope of Dianetics

A science of mind is a goal which has engrossed thousands of generations of man. Armies, dynasties' and whole civilizations have perished for the lack of it. Rome went to dust for the want of it. China swims in blood for the need of it. And down in the arsenal is an atom bomb,² its hopeful nose full-armed in ignorance of it.

No quest has been more relentlessly pursued or has been more violent. No primitive tribe, no matter how ignorant, has failed to recognize the problem as a problem, nor has it failed to bring forth at least an attempted formulation. Today one finds the aborigine³ of Australia substituting for a science of mind a "magic healing crystal." The shaman⁴ of British Guyana⁵ makes shift⁶ for actual mental laws with his monotonous song and consecrated⁷ cigar. The throbbing drum of the

1. dynasties: successions of rulers who are members of the same family.

2. atom bomb: a bomb that uses the energy from the splitting of atoms to cause an explosion of tremendous force, accompanied by a blinding light.

3. aborigine: any of the first or earliest known inhabitants of a region; native.

4. shaman: a priest or witch doctor among certain peoples, claiming to have sole contact with the gods, etc.

5. British Guyana: country in northeastern South America: formerly a British colony, it became independent and a member of the Commonwealth in 1966.

6. makes shift: manages or does the best one can (with whatever means are at hand).

7. consecrated: set apart or declared as holy.

L. RON HUBBARD

Goldi" medicine man serves in the stead of an adequate technique to alleviate the lack of serenity in patients.

The enlightened and golden age⁹ of Greece yet had but superstition in its principal sanatoria¹⁰ for mental ills, the Aesculapian" temple. The most the Roman could do for peace of mind for the sick was to appeal to the penates, the household divinities, or sacrifice to Febris, goddess of fevers. And an English king, centuries after, could have been found in the hands of exorcists who sought to cure his deliriums by driving the demons from him.

From the most ancient times to the present, in the crudest primitive tribe or the most magnificently ornamented civilization, man has found himself in a state of awed helplessness when confronted by the phenomena of strange illnesses or aberrations. His desperation, in his efforts to treat the individual, has been but slightly altered during his entire history; and until this twentieth century passed midterm, the percentages of his alleviations, in terms of individual mental derangements,¹² compared evenly with the successes of the shamans confronted with the same problems. According to a modern writer, the single advance of psychotherapy was clean quarters for the madman. In terms of brutality in treatment of the insane, the methods of the shaman or

8. Goldi: a people, traditionally hunters and fishermen, who inhabit the valley of the Amur River in southeastern Siberia and northeastern Manchuria (a region and former administrative division of northeast China).

9. golden age: the period in which a nation, etc., is at its highest state of prosperity, or in which some human art or activity is at its most excellent.

10. sanatoria: establishments for treating chronic diseases.

11. Aesculapian: of Aesculapius, the god of medicine and healing in ancient Greek and Roman mythology.

12. derangements: disturbances of the functions of the mind; mental disorders; insanities.

10

THE SCOPE OF DIANETICS

Bedlam¹³ have been far exceeded by the "civilized" techniques of destroying nerve tissues with the violence of shock and surgery—treatments which were not warranted by the results obtained and which would not have been tolerated in the meanest primitive society, since they reduce the victim to mere zombiism,⁴ destroying most of his personality and ambition and leaving him nothing more than a manageable animal. Far from an indictment of the practices of the "neurosurgeon" and the ice pick which he thrusts and twists into insane minds, they are brought forth only to demonstrate the depths of desperation man can reach when confronted with the seemingly unsolvable problem of deranged minds.

In the larger sphere of societies and nations, the lack of such a science of mind was never more evident; for the physical sciences, advancing thoughtlessly far in advance of man's ability to understand man, have armed him with terrible and thorough weapons which await only another outburst of the social insanity of war.

These problems are not mild ones; they lie across every man's path; they wait in company with his future. As long as man has recognized that his chief superiority over the animal kingdom was a thinking mind, so long as he understood that his mind alone was his weapon, he has searched and pondered and postulated in efforts to find a solution.

Like a jigsaw puzzle spilled by a careless hand, the equations which would lead to a science of the mind and, above that, to a master science of the universe, were stirred round and round. Sometimes two fragments would be united; sometimes, as in the case of the golden

13. Bedlam: an old insane asylum (in full, St. Mary of Bethlehem) in London, infamous for the brutal ill-treatment inflicted upon the insane.

14. zombiism: existence as a person who seems to have no mind or will, taken from the voodoo word for a corpse said to have been animated by some power and made to obey commands.

11

L. RON HUBBARD

age of Greece, a whole section would be built. Philosopher, shaman, medicine man, mathematician: each looked at the pieces. Some saw they must all belong to different puzzles. Some thought they all belonged to the same puzzle. Some said there were really six puzzles in it, some said two. And the wars went on and the societies sickened or were dispersed, and learned tomes⁵ were written about ever-increasing hordes of madmen.

With the methods of Bacon,¹⁶ with the mathematics of Newton,¹⁷ the physical sciences went on, consolidating and advancing their frontiers. And, like a derelict¹⁸ battalion, careless of how many allied ranks it exposed to destruction by the enemy, studies of the mind lagged behind.

But after all, there are just so many pieces in any puzzle. Before and after Francis Bacon, Herbert Spencer¹⁹ and a very few more, many of the small sections had been put together, many honest facts had been observed.

To adventure into the thousands of variables of which that puzzle was composed, one had only to know right from wrong, true from false, and use all man and nature as his test tube.²⁰

Of what must a science of mind be composed?

1. An answer to the goal of thought.

15. tomes: large or scholarly books.

16. Bacon: Francis Bacon (1561-1626), English philosopher and essayist who insisted that investigation should begin with observable facts rather than with theories.

17. Newton: Sir Isaac Newton (1642-1727), English mathematician and natural philosopher. One of the greatest geniuses the world has known, he made three scientific discoveries of fundamental importance: first, the method of change in varying quantities, which forms the basis of modern calculus; second, the law of the composition of light; third, the law of gravity.

18. derelict: neglectful of duty; delinquent; negligent.

19. Herbert Spencer: (1820-1903), English philosopher. One of the few modern thinkers to attempt a systematic account of all cosmic phenomena, including mental and social principles.

20. test tube: a tube of thin, transparent glass closed at one end, used in chemical experiments, etc. Used figuratively.

12

THE SCOPE OF DIANETICS

2. A single source of all insanities, psychoses,²¹ neuroses,²² compulsions,²³ repressions²⁴ and social derangements.

3. Invariant scientific evidence as to the basic nature and functional background of the human mind.

4. Techniques, the art of application, by which the discovered single source could be invariably cured; ruling out, of course, the insanities of malformed, deleted or pathologically²⁵ injured brains or nervous systems and, particularly, iatro-genic psychoses (those caused by doctors and involving the destruction of the living brain itself).

5. Methods of prevention of mental derangement.

6. The cause and cure of all psychosomatic²⁶ ills, which number, some say, 70 percent of man's listed ailments.

Such a science would exceed the severest terms previously laid down for it in any age, but any computation on the subject should discover that a science of mind ought to be able to be and do just these things.

A science of the mind, if it were truly worthy of that name, would have to rank, in experimental precision, with physics and chemistry. There could be no "special cases" to its laws. There could be no recourse²⁷ to

21. psychoses: severe forms of mental disorder; insanities.

22. neuroses: emotional states containing conflicts and emotional data inhibiting the abilities or welfare of the individual.

23. compulsions: irresistible, repeated, irrational impulses to perform some act.

24. repressions: commands that the organism must not do something.

25. pathologically: in a manner caused by or having to do with disease. See also pathology in the glossary.

26. psychosomatic: psycho refers to mind and somatic refers to body; the term psychosomatic means the mind making the body ill or illnesses which have been created physically within the body by derangement of the mind.

27. recourse: a turning or seeking for aid, safety, etc.

13

L. RON HUBBARD

authority. The atom bomb bursts whether Einstein²⁸ gives it permission or not. Laws native to nature regulate the bursting of that bomb. Technicians, applying techniques derived from discovered natural laws, can make one or a million atom bombs, all alike.

After the body of axioms and technique was organized and working as a science of mind, in rank with the physical sciences, it would be found to have points of agreement with almost every school of thought about thought which had ever existed. This is again a virtue and not a fault.

Simple though it is, Dianetics does and is these things:

1. It is an organized science of thought built on definite axioms (statements of natural laws on the order of those of the physical sciences).

2. It contains a therapeutic technique with which can be treated all inorganic mental ills and all organic psychosomatic ills, with assurance of complete cure in unselected cases.

3. It produces a condition of ability and rationality for man well in advance of the current norm, enhancing rather than destroying his vigor and personality.

4. Dianetics gives a complete insight into the full potentialities of the mind, discovering them to be well in excess of past supposition.

5. The basic nature of man is discovered in Dianetics rather than hazarded²⁹ or postulated, since that basic nature can be brought into action in any individual completely. And that basic nature is discovered to be good.

28. Einstein: Albert Einstein (1879-1955), German physicist, US citizen from 1940; formulated the theory of the conversion of mass into energy, opening the way for the development of the atomic bomb.

29. hazarded: offered (a statement, conjecture, etc.) with the possibility of facing criticism, disapproval, failure or the like; ventured.

14

THE SCOPE OF DIANETICS

6. The single source of mental derangement is discovered and demonstrated, on a clinical or laboratory basis, by Dianetics.

7. The extent, storage capacity and recallability of the human memory is finally established by Dianetics.

8. The full recording abilities of the mind are discovered by Dianetics with the conclusion that they are quite dissimilar to former suppositions.

9. Dianetics brings forth the nongerm theory of disease, complementing biochemistry³⁰ and Pasteur's³¹ work on the germ theory to embrace the field.

10. With Dianetics ends the "necessity" of destroying the brain by shock or surgery to effect "trac-tability"³² in mental patients and "adjust" them.

11. A workable explanation of the physiological effects of drugs and endocrine³³ substances exists in Dianetics, and many problems posed by endocrinology are answered.

12. Various educational, sociological, political, military and other human studies are enhanced by Dianetics.

13. The field of cytology³⁴ is aided by Dianetics, as well as other fields of research.

This, then, is a skeletal sketch of what would be the scope of a science of mind and of what is the scope of Dianetics.

30. biochemistry: the chemistry of living organisms.

31. Pasteur: Louis Pasteur (1822-1895), French chemist and bacteriologist; he proved that decay and putrefaction are caused by bacteria and developed serums and vaccines for such diseases as cholera and rabies.

32. tractability: state of being easy to manage or deal with; docility.

33. endocrine: designating or of any gland producing one or more internal secretions that are introduced directly into the bloodstream and carried to other parts of the body whose functions they regulate or control.

34. cytology: the scientific study of cells.

The Clear

Dianetically, the optimum individual is called the Clear. One will hear much of that word, both as a noun and a verb, in this volume, so it is well to spend time here at the outset setting forth exactly what can be called a Clear, the goal of Dianetic therapy.

A Clear can be tested for any and all psychoses, neuroses, compulsions and repressions (all aberrations) and can be examined for any autogenetic (self-generated) diseases referred to as psychosomatic ills. These tests confirm the Clear to be entirely without such ills or aberrations. Additional tests of his intelligence indicate it to be high above the current norm. Observation of his activity demonstrates that he pursues existence with vigor and satisfaction.

Further, these results can be obtained on a comparative basis. A neurotic' individual, possessed also of psychosomatic ills, can be tested for those aberrations and illnesses, demonstrating that they exist. He can then be given Dianetic therapy to the end of clearing these neuroses and ills. Finally, he can be examined, with the above results. This, in passing, is an experiment which has been performed many times with invariable results. It is a matter of laboratory test that all individuals who have organically complete nervous systems respond in this fashion to Dianetic clearing.

Further, the Clear possesses attributes, fundamental and inherent but not always available in an uncleared

1. neurotic: one who is insane or disturbed on some subject (as opposed to a psychotic person, who is just insane in general).

16

THE CLEAR

state, which have not been suspected of man and are not included in past discussions of his abilities and behavior.

First there is the matter of perceptions. Even so-called normal people do not always see in full color, hear in full tone or sense at the optimum with their organs of smell, taste, tactile² and organic sensation.

These are the main lines of communication to the finite world which most people recognize as reality. It is an interesting commentary that while past observers felt that the facing of reality was an absolute necessity if the aberrated individual wished to be sane, no definition of how this was to be done was set forth. To face reality in the present, one would certainly have to be able to sense it along those channels of communication most commonly used by man in his affairs.

Any one of man's perceptions can be aberrated by psychic³ derangements which refuse to permit the received sensations to be realized by the analytical portion of the individual's mind. In other words, while there may be nothing wrong with the mechanisms of color reception, circuits⁴ can exist in the mind which delete color before the consciousness is permitted to see the object. Colorblindness can be discovered to be relative or in degrees in such a way that colors appear to be less brilliant, dull or, at the maximum, entirely absent. Anyone is acquainted with persons to whom "loud"⁵ colors are detestable and with persons who find

2. tactile: of or using the sense of touch.

3. psychic: of or pertaining to the human soul or mind; mental (opposed to physical).

4. circuit: a part of an individual's bank (a colloquial name for the reactive mind) that behaves as though it were someone or something separate from him and that either talks to him or goes into action of its own accord, and may even, if severe enough, take control of him while it operates.

5. "loud": (colloquial) too vivid; flashy.

17

L. RON HUBBARD

them insufficiently "loud" to notice. This varying degree of colorblindness has not been recognized as a

psychic factor but has been nebulously⁶ assumed to be some sort of a condition of mind when it was noticed at all.

There are those persons to whom noises are quite disturbing, to whom, for instance, the insistent whine of a violin is very like having a brace and bit⁷ applied to the eardrum; and there are those to whom fifty violins, played loudly, would be soothing; and there are those who, in the presence of a violin, express disinterest and boredom; and, again, there are persons to whom the sound of a violin, no matter if it be playing the most intricate melody, is a monotone. These differences of sonic (hearing) perception have, like color and other visual errors, been attributed to inherent nature or organic deficiency or assigned no place at all.

In a like manner, from person to person, smells, tactile sensations, organic perceptions, pain and gravity vary widely and wildly. A cursory check around amongst his friends will demonstrate to a man that there exist enormous differences of perception of identical stimuli.⁸ One smells a turkey in the oven as wonderful, one smells it with indifference, another may not smell it at all. And somebody else may maintain that roasting turkey smells exactly like hair oil—to be extreme.

Until we obtain Clears it remains obscure why such differences should exist. For in the largest measure, such wild quality and quantity of perception is due to aberration. Because of pleasurable experiences in the past and inherent sensitivity, there will be some difference

6. nebulously: hazily, vaguely, indistinctly or confusedly.

7. brace and bit: a tool for boring, consisting of a removable drill (bit) in a rotating handle (brace).

8. stimuli: things that rouse a person or thing into activity or energy or that produce a reaction in an organ or tissue of the body.

18

THE CLEAR

amongst Clears; and a Clear response should not be assumed automatically to be a standardized,

adjusted middle ground, that pallid⁹ and obnoxious goal of past doctrines. The Clear gets a maximum response compatible with his own desire for the response. Burning cordite¹⁰ still smells dangerous to him, but it does not make him ill. Roasting turkey smells good to him if he is hungry and likes turkey, at which time it smells very, very good. Violins play melodies, not monotones, bring no pain and are enjoyed to a fine, full limit if the Clear likes violins as a matter of taste—if he doesn't, he likes kettledrums, saxophones or, indeed, suiting his mood, no music at all.

In other words, there are two variables at work. One, the wildest, is the variable caused by aberrations. The other, and quite rational and understandable, is caused by the personality.

Thus, the perceptions of an aberree (noncleared individual) vary greatly from those of the cleared (un-aberrated) individual.

Now there are the differences of the actual organs of perception and the errors occasioned" by these. Some of these errors, a minimum, are organic: punctured eardrums are not competent sound-recording mechanisms. The majority of perceptic (sense message) errors in the organic sphere are caused by psychosomatic errors.

Glasses are seen on noses everywhere around, even on children. The majority of these spectacles are perched on the face in an effort to correct a condition which the body itself is fighting to uncorrect again. Eyesight, when the stage of glasses is entered (not because of

9. pallid: lacking in spirit or vitality; dull.

10. cordite: a smokeless explosive used as a propellant in bullets and shells.

11. occasioned: given occasion or cause for; brought about.

glasses), is deteriorating on the psychosomatic principle. And this observation is about as irresponsible as a statement that when apples fall out of trees they usually obey gravity. One of the incidental things which happen to a Clear is that his eyesight, if it had been bad as an aberree, generally improves markedly, and with some slight attention will recover optimum perception in time. (Far from an optician's argument against Dianetics, this assures rather good business, for Clears have been known, at treatment's end, to have to buy, in rapid succession, five pairs of glasses to compensate adjusting eyesight; and many aberrees, cleared late in life, settle down ocularly¹² at a maximum a little under optimum.)

The eyesight was reduced in the aberree on an organic basis by his aberrations so that the perceptive organ itself was reduced from optimum operating function. With the removal of aberrations, repeated tests have proven that the body makes a valiant effort to reconstruct back to optimum.

Hearing, in addition to other perceptics, varies organically over a wide range. Calcium deposits, for instance, can make the ears "ring" incessantly. The removal of aberrations permits the body to readjust toward its reachable optimum; the calcium deposit disappears, and the ears stop ringing. But far and beyond this very specific case, there are great differences in hearing on the organic basis. Organically, as well as aberrationally, hearing can become remarkably extended or closely inhibited so that one person may hear footsteps a block away as a normal activity and another would not hear a bass drum thundering on the porch.

That the various perceptions differ widely from individual to individual on an aberrational and psychosomatic basis is the least of the discoveries outlined

12. ocularly: of or relating to the sense of sight.

20

THE CLEAR

here. Ability to recall is far more fantastic in its variation from person to person.

An entirely new recall process which was inherent in the mind but which had not been noticed came to light in the process of observing Clears and aberrees. This recall process is possible in only a small proportion of aberrees in its fullest sense. It is standard, however, in a Clear. Naturally, no intimation¹³ is

made here that the scholars of past ages have been unobservant. We are dealing here with an entirely new and hitherto nonexistent object of inspection, the Clear. What a Clear can do easily, quite a few people have, from time to time, been partially able to do in the past.

An inherent, not a taught, ability of the remembering mechanisms of the mind can be termed, as a technical word of Dianetics, returning. It is used in its dictionary sense, with the addition of the fact that the mind has it as a normal remembering function, as follows: The person can "send" a portion of his mind to a past period on either a mental or combined mental and physical basis and can reexperience incidents which have taken place in his past in the same fashion and with the same sensations as before. Once upon a time, an art known as hypnotism used what was called "regression" on hypnotized subjects, the hypnotist sending the subject back, in one of two ways, to incidents in his past. This was done with trance techniques, drugs and considerable technology. The hypnotic subject could be sent back to a moment "entirely" so that he gave every appearance of being the age to which he was returned with only the apparent faculties and recollections he had at that moment: this was called revivification (reliving). Regression was a technique by which part of the individual's self remained in the present and

13. intimation: hint; indirect suggestion.

21

L. RON HUBBARD

part went back to the past. These abilities of the mind were supposed native only in hypnotism and were used only in hypnotic technique. The art is very old, tracing back some thousands of years and existing today in Asia as it has existed, apparently, from the dawn of time.

Returning is substituted for regression here because it is not a comparable thing and because regression, as a word, has some bad meanings which would interrupt its use. Reliving is substituted for revivification in Dianetics because, in Dianetics, the principles of hypnotism can be found explained and hypnotism is not used in Dianetic therapy, as will be explained later.

The mind, then, has another ability to remember. Part of the mind can "return" even when a person is wide awake and reexperience past incidents in full. If you want to test this, try it on several people until one is discovered who does it easily. Wide awake, he can "return" to moments in his past. Until asked to do so, he probably will not know he has such an ability. If he had it, he probably thought everybody could do it (the type of supposition which has kept so much of this data from coming to light before). He can go back to a time when he was swimming and swim with full recall of hearing, sight, taste, smell,

organic sensation, tactile, etc.

A "learned" gentleman once spent some hours demonstrating to a gathering that the recall of a smell as a sensation, for instance, was quite impossible since "neurology¹⁴ had proven that the olfactory¹⁵ nerves were not connected to the thalamus."¹⁶ Two people in the gathering discovered this ability to return and despite this evidence, the learned gentleman continued the

14. neurology: the science of the nerves and the nervous system, especially the diseases affecting them.

15. olfactory: of or relating to the sense of smell.

16. thalamus: the interior region of the brain where sensory nerves originate.

22

THE CLEAR

dispute that olfactory recall was impossible. A check amongst the gathering on this faculty," independent of returning, brought forth the fact that one-half of those present remembered smell by smelling it again.

Returning is the full performance of imagery recall. The entire memory is able to make the organ areas resense the stimuli in a past incident. Partial recall is common, not common enough to be normal, but certainly common enough to have merited considerable study. For it, again, is a wide variable.

Perception of the present would be one method of facing reality. But if one cannot face the reality of the past, then, in some part, he is not facing some portion of reality. And if it is agreed that facing reality is desirable, then one would have to face yesterday's reality as well if he were to be considered entirely "sane" by contemporary definition. To "face yesterday" requires a certain condition of recall to be available. One would have to be able to remember. But how many ways are there of remembering?

First there is the return. That is new. It gives the advantage of examining the moving pictures and other

sense perceptions recorded at the time of the event with all senses present. He can also return to his past conclusions and imaginings. It is of considerable aid in learning, in research, in ordinary living, to be able to be again at the place where the data desired was first inspected.

Then there are the more usual recalls. Optimum recall is by the return method of single or multiple senses, the individual himself remaining in present time.¹⁸ In other

17. faculty: an ability, natural or acquired, for a particular kind of action.

18. present time: the time which is now and becomes the past as rapidly as it is observed. It is a term loosely applied to the environment existing in now.

23

L. RON HUBBARD

words, some people, when they think of a rose, see one, smell one, feel one. They see in full color, vividly—with the "mind's eye" to use an old colloquialism. They smell it vividly. And they can feel it even to the thorns. They are thinking about roses by actually recalling a rose.

These people, thinking about a ship, would see a specific ship, feel the motion of her if they thought of being aboard her, smell the pine tar¹⁹ or even less savory odors and hear whatever sounds there were about her. They would see the ship in full color-motion and hear it in full tone-audio.

These faculties vary widely in the aberree. Some, when told to think of a rose, can merely visualize one. Some can smell one but not see it. Some see it without color or in very pale color. When told to think of a ship some aberrees only see a flat, colorless, still picture, such as a painting of a ship or the photograph of one. Some perceive a vessel in motion without color but with sound. Some hear the sound of a ship but fail to see any picture whatever. Some merely think of a ship as a concept that ships exist and that they know about them, and fail to see, feel, hear, smell or otherwise sense anything on a recall basis.

Some past observers have called this "imagery" but the term is so inapplicable to sound and touch, organic sensation and pain that recall is used uniformly as the technical Dianetic term. The value of recall

in this business of living has occupied such scant attention that the entire concept has never been formulated previously. It is therefore detailed at some length here, as above.

It is quite simple to test recalls. If one will ask his fellows what their abilities are, he will gain a remarkable

19. pine tar: a thick, dark liquid obtained by destructive distillation (decomposition by heat in the absence of air) of pine wood, used in ointments, tar paints, etc.

24

THE CLEAR

idea of how widely varied this ability is from individual to individual. Some have this recall, some have that, some have none but operate on concepts of recall only. And remember, if you make a test on those around you, that any perception is filed in the memory and therefore has a recall which is to include pain, temperature, rhythm, taste and weight with the above-mentioned sight, sound, tactile and smell.

The Dianetic names for these recalls are visio (sight), sonic (sound), tactile (touch), olfactory (smell), rhythmic, kinesthetic (weight and motion), somatic (pain), thermal (temperature) and organic (internal sensations and, by new definition, emotion).

Then there is another set of mental activities which can be summed under the headings of imagination and creative imagination. Here again is abundant material for testing.

Imagination is the recombination of things one has sensed, thought or intellectually computed into existence, which do not necessarily have existence. This is the mind's method of envisioning desirable goals or forecasting futures. Imagination is extremely valuable as a part of essential solutions in any mental problem and in everyday existence. That it is recombination in no sense deprives it of its vast and wonderful complexity.

A Clear uses imagination in its entirety. There is an imagination impression for sight, smell, taste, sound—in short, for each one of the possible perceptions. These are manufactured impressions on the

basis of models in the memory banks combined by conceptual ideas and construction. New physical structures, tomorrow in terms of today, next year in terms of last year, pleasure to be gained, deeds to be done, accidents to avoid: all these are imaginal functions.

The Clear has full color-visio, tone-sonic, tactile, olfactory, rhythmic, kinesthetic, thermal and organic

25

L. RON HUBBARD

imagination in kind.²⁰ Asked to envision himself riding in a gilded coach-and-four,²¹ he "sees" the equipage,²² moving, in full color, he "hears" all the noises which should be present, he "smells" the smells he thinks should be there and he "feels" the upholstery, the motion and the presence in the coach of himself.

In addition to standard imagination there is creative imagination. This is a very wide undimensional²³ ability, quite variable from individual to individual, possessed in enormous quantity by some. It is included here, not as a portion of the operation of the mind treated as a usual part of Dianetics, but to isolate it as an existing entity. In a Clear who possessed creative imagination, even if inhibited as an aberration, it is present and demonstrable. It is inherent. It can be aberrated only by prohibition of its general practice, which is to say, by aberrating the persistence in its application or encysting²⁴ the whole mind. But creative imagination, that possession by which works of art are done, states built and man enriched, can be envisioned as a special function, independent in operation and in no way dependent for its existence upon an aberrated condition in the individual, since the examination of its activity in and use by a Clear possessing it adequately demonstrates its inherent character. It is rarely absent in any individual.

Finally, there is the last but most important activity of the mind. Man is to be regarded as a sentient²⁵ being.

20. in kind: in proper or good condition.

21. coach-and-four: a coach pulled by four horses.

22. equipage: a carriage drawn by horses and attended by servants.

23. undimensional: without measurable extent or limit.

24. encysting: enclosing in or as if in a cyst or sac.

25. sentient: of, having or capable of feeling or perception; conscious.

26

CLEAR

His sentience depends upon his ability to resolve problems by perceiving or creating and understanding situations. This rationality is the primary, high-echelon function of that part of the mind which makes him a man, not just another animal. Remembering, perceiving, imagining, he has the signal²⁶ ability of resolving conclusions and of using conclusions resolved to resolve further conclusions. This is rational man.

Rationality, as divorced from aberration, can be studied in a cleared person only. The aberrations of the aberree give him the appearance of irrationality. Though such irrationality may be given the gentler names of "eccentricity"²⁷ or "human error" or even "personal idiosyncrasy,"²⁸ it is, nevertheless, irrationality. The personality does not depend upon how irrationally a man may act. It is not a personality trait, for instance, to drive while drunk and kill a child on a crosswalk—or even to risk killing a child by driving while drunk. Irrationality is simply that—the inability to get right answers from data.

Now, it is a curious thing that although "everybody knows" (and what a horrible amount of misinformation that statement lets circulate) it is "human to err," the sentient portion of the mind, which computes the answers to problems and which makes man man, is utterly incapable of error.

This was a startling discovery when it was made, but it need not have been. It could have been deduced some time before. For it is quite simple and easy to understand. The actual computing ability of man is never in error even in a very severely aberrated person. Observing

26. signal: not average or ordinary; remarkable; notable.

27. eccentricity: unusual or odd behavior, or a peculiar habit.

28. idiosyncrasy: a characteristic, habit, mannerism or the like that is peculiar to an individual.

27

L. RON HUBBARD

the activity of such an aberrated person, one might thoughtlessly suppose that that person's computations were wrong. But that would be an observer error. Any person, aberrated or Clear, computes perfectly on the data stored and perceived.

Take any common calculating machine (and the mind is an exceptionally magnificent instrument far, far superior to any machine it will invent for ages to come) and put a problem on it for solution. Multiply seven times one. It will answer, properly, seven. Now multiply six times one but continue to hold down the seven. Six times one is six but the answer you will get is forty-two. Continue to hold down seven and put other problems on the machine. They are wrong, not as problems, but as answers. Now fix seven so that it stays down no matter what keys are touched and try to give the machine away. Nobody will want it because, obviously, the machine is crazy. It says ten times ten is seven hundred. But is the calculating portion of the machine really wrong or is it merely being fed the wrong data?

In the same way, the human mind, being called upon to resolve problems of a magnitude and with enough variables to confound any mere calculating machine a thousand times an hour, is prey to incorrect data. Incorrect data gets into the machine. The machine gives wrong answers. Incorrect data enters the human memory banks, the person reacts in an "abnormal manner." Essentially, then, the problem of resolving aberration is the problem of finding a "held-down seven." But of that, much, much more later. Right now we have accomplished our immediate ends.

These are the various abilities and activities of the human mind in its constant task of resolving and putting into solution a multitude of problems. It perceives, it recalls or returns, it imagines, it conceives and then resolves. Served by its extensions—the perceptics and

THE CLEAR

the memory banks and the imaginations—the mind brings forth answers which are invariably accurate, the solutions modified only by observation, education and viewpoint.

And the basic purposes of that mind and the basic nature of man, as discoverable in the Clear, are constructive and good, uniformly constructive and uniformly good, modified only by observation, education and viewpoint.

Man is good.

Take away his basic aberrations and with them go the evil of which the scholastic²⁹ and the moralist were so fond. The only detachable portion of him is the "evil" portion. And when it is detached, his personality and vigor intensify. And he is glad to see the "evil" portion go because it was physical pain.

Later there are experiments and proofs for these things and they can be measured with the precision so dear to the heart of the physical scientist.

The Clear, then, is not an "adjusted" person, driven to activity by his repressions now thoroughly encysted. He is an unrepressed person, operating on self-determinism.³⁰ And his abilities to perceive, recall, return, imagine, create and compute are outlined as we have seen.

The Clear is the goal in Dianetic therapy, a goal which some patience and a little study and work can bring about. Any person can be cleared unless he has been so unfortunate as to have had a large portion of his brain removed or to have been born with a grossly malformed nervous structure.

29. scholastic: one who narrowly adheres to traditional teachings, doctrines or methods.

30. self-determinism: the state wherein the individual can or cannot be controlled by his environment according to his own choice. He is confident in his interpersonal relationships. He reasons but does not need to react.

29

L. RON HUBBARD

We have seen the goal of Dianetics here. Let us now inspect the goal of man.

Editor's Note: Live demonstrations of Dianetics procedure and public lectures given by L. Ron Hubbard have been reproduced on cassette, providing real examples of the practice and results of these techniques. See page 590.

30

CHAPTER THREE

The Goal of Man

The goal of man, the lowest common denominator of all his activities, the dynamic principle of his existence, has long been sought. Should such an answer be discovered, it is inevitable that from it many answers would flow. It would explain all phenomena of behavior; it would lead toward a solution of man's major problems; and, most of all, it should be workable.

Consider all knowledge to fall above or below a line of demarcation. Everything above this line is not necessary to the solution of man's aberrations and general shortcomings and is inexactly known. Such a field of thought could be considered to embrace such things as metaphysics¹ and mysticism.² Below this line of demarcation could be considered to lie the finite universe. All things in the finite universe, whether known or as yet unknown, can be sensed, experienced or measured. The known data in the finite universe can be classified as scientific truth when it has been sensed, experienced and measured. All factors necessary to the resolution of a science of the mind were found within the finite universe and were

discovered, sensed, measured and experienced and became scientific truth. The finite universe contains time, space, energy and life. No other factors were found necessary in the equation.

Time, space, energy and Me have a single denominator

1. metaphysics: a branch of philosophy that deals with the nature of existence and of truth and knowledge.

2. mysticism: the beliefs or practices of those who claim to have experiences based on intuition, meditation, etc., of a spiritual nature, by which they learn truths not known by ordinary people.

31

L. RON HUBBARD

in common. As an analogy³ it could be considered that time, space, energy and life began at some point of origin and were commanded to continue to some nearly infinite destination. They were told nothing but what to do. They obey a single order and that order is "Survive!"

The Dynamic Principle of Existence Is Survival

The goal of life can be considered to be infinite survival. Man, as a life form, can be demonstrated to obey in all his actions and purposes the one command: "Survive!"

It is not a new thought that man is surviving. It is a new thought that man is motivated only by survival.

That his single goal is survival does not mean that he is the optimum survival mechanism which life has attained or will develop. The goal of the dinosaur was also survival and the dinosaur isn't extant anymore.

Obedience to this command, "Survive!" does not mean that every attempt to obey is uniformly successful. Changing environment, mutation and many other things militate⁴ against any one organism attaining infallible survival techniques or form.

Life forms change and die as new life forms develop just as surely as one life organism, lacking immortality in itself, creates other life organisms, then dies as itself. An excellent method, should one wish to cause life to survive over a very long period, would be to establish means by which it could assume many forms, and death itself would be necessary in order to facilitate the survival of the life force itself, since only death and decay could clear away older forms when new changes in the environment necessitated new forms. Life, as a force, existing over a nearly infinite period, would need

3. analogy: explanation of something by comparing it point by point with something similar.

4. militate: are directed (against)', operate or work (against or, rarely, for): said of facts, evidence, actions, etc.

32

THE GOAL OF MAN

a cyclic aspect in its unit organisms and forms.

What would be the optimum survival characteristics of various life forms? They would have to have various fundamental characteristics, differing from one species to the next just as one environment differs from the next.

This is important, since it has been but poorly considered in the past that a set of survival characteristics in one species would not be survival characteristics in another.

The methods of survival can be summed under the headings of food, protection (defensive and offensive) and procreation.⁵ There are no existing life forms which lack solutions to these problems. Every life form errs, one way or another, by holding a characteristic too long or developing characteristics which may lead to its extinction. But the developments which bring about successfulness of

form are far more striking than their errors. The naturalist and biologist are continually resolving the characteristics of this or that life form by discovering that need rather than whim governs such developments. The hinges of the clamshell, the awesome face on the wings of the butterfly, have survival value.

Once survival was isolated as the only dynamic* of

* In order to establish nomenclature in Dianetics which would not be too complex for the purpose, words normally considered as adjectives or verbs have occasionally been pressed into service as nouns. This has been done on the valid principle that existing terminology, meaning so many different things, could not be used by Dianetics without making it necessary to explain away an old meaning to bring forth a new. To remove the step of explaining the old meaning and saying then that one doesn't mean that, thus entangling our communications inextricably, and to obviate the ancient custom of compounding ponderous and thundering syllables from the Greek and Roman tongues, this principle and some others have been adopted for nomenclature. Dynamic is here used as a noun and will so continue to be used throughout this volume. Somatic, perceptic and some others will be noted, defined when used. — LRH

5. procreation: bringing living things into existence by the natural process of reproduction.

33

L. RON HUBBARD

a life form which would explain all its activities, it was necessary to study further the action of survival. And it was discovered that when one considered pain and pleasure, he had at hand all the necessary ingredients with which to formulate the action life takes in its effort to survive.

As will be seen in the accompanying graph, a spectrum of life has been conceived to span from the zero of death or extinction toward the infinity of potential immortality. This spectrum was considered to contain an infinity of lines, extending ladderlike toward the potential of immortality. Each line as the ladder mounted was spaced a little wider than the last, in a geometric progression.⁶

The thrust of survival is away from death and toward immortality. The ultimate pain could be conceived as existing just before death and the ultimate pleasure could be conceived as immortality.

Immortality could be said to have an attractive type of force and death a repelling force in the consideration of the unit organism or the species. But as survival rises higher and higher toward immortality, wider and wider spaces are encountered until the gaps are finitely impossible to bridge. The urge is away from death, which has a repelling force, and toward immortality, which has an attracting force; the attracting force is pleasure, the repelling force is pain. j

For the individual, the length of the arrow could be j considered to be at a high potential within the fourth zone. Here the survival potential would be excellent and the individual would enjoy existence. I

From left to right could be graphed the years. f

i

6. geometric progression: a sequence of terms, such as 1, 3, 9, j 27, 81, etc., each of which is a constant multiple of the immediately preceding term.

34

D n POTENTIAL

!;I 1

H ^ I

~^> H n 1 f.

D >H ^ u —————•

> C •<3W1 C J/ (A O) C C

7 a 0! i. / 5 < ^ < •

E .s / CD a > _

c ^ (A

/ O

^/ I

X

1 \

1 X

\ \

F 7^ 1 y-

•Jt \

X

/1 1 JC

\(/

Z3 // 1 X

Q. • \

<^ 3- y.

V

r i f

m w' 1

1 0 GO X

r g^ c /

• 9" ^ Jf

S ?, /

3 Si -y

| N N N N N o o o o o o

1 Z Z Z Z Z

i m m m fn rn

1 O ->> IO CO •**

TIO

o --

33 VJ

> s ? °

m

fc (/>

L. RON HUBBARD

The urge toward pleasure is dynamic. Pleasure is the reward, and the seeking of the reward—survival goals—would be a pleasurable act. And to ensure that survival is accomplished under the mandate "Survive!" it seems to have been provided that reduction from a high potential would bring pain.

Pain is provided to repel the individual from death, pleasure is provided to call him toward optimum life. The search for and the attainment of pleasure is not less valid in survival than the avoidance of pain. In fact, on some observed evidence, pleasure seems to have a much greater value in the cosmic scheme than pain.

Now, it would be well to define what is meant by pleasure, aside from its connection with immortality. The dictionary states that pleasure is "gratification; agreeable emotions, mental or physical; transient enjoyment; opposed to pain." Pleasure can be found in so many things and activities that a catalog of all the things and activities man has, does and may consider pleasurable alone could round out the definition.

And what do we mean by pain? The dictionary states: "physical or mental suffering; penalty."

These two definitions, in passing, are demonstrative of an intuitive type of thought which runs through the language. Once one has a thing which leads to the resolution of hitherto unsolved problems, even the dictionaries are found to have "always known it."

If we wished to make this graph for a life-form cycle, it would be identical except that the value of the years would be increased to measure eons. For there is no difference, it seems, except magnitude, in the scope of the individual and the scope of the species. This inference could be drawn even without such remarkable evidence as the fact that a human being, growing from

36

THE GOAL OF MAN

zygote⁷ to adult, evolves⁸ through all the forms which the whole species is supposed to have evolved through.

Now, there is more in this graph than has been remarked as yet. The physical and mental state of the individual varies from hour to hour, day to day, year to year. Therefore, the level of survival would form either a daily curve or the curve of a life on a measure of hourly or yearly position in the zones. And there would be two curves made possible by this, the physical curve and the mental curve. When we get

toward the back of the book, the relationships between these two curves will be found vital and it will also be seen that, ordinarily, a sag in the mental curve will precede a sag in the physical curve.

The zones, then, can apply to two things: the physical being and the mental being. Therefore, these four zones can be called zones of the states of being. If a person is happy mentally, the survival level can be placed in zone 4. If the person is extremely ill physically, he might be plotted, on estimation of his illness, in zone 1 or close to death.

Very unprecise, but nevertheless descriptive, names have been assigned to these zones. Zone 3 is one of general happiness and well-being. Zone 2 is a level of bearable existence. Zone 1 is one of anger. Zone 0 is the zone of apathy. These zones can be used as a Tone Scale⁹ by which a state of mind can be graded. Just above death, which is 0, would be the lowest mental apathy or lowest level of physical life, 0.1. A tone 1,

7. zygote: the first cell of a new individual.

8. evolutes: evolves; develops.

9. Tone Scale: a scale which shows the emotional tones of a person. These, ranged from the highest to the lowest, are, in part, serenity (the highest level), enthusiasm (as we proceed downward), conservatism, boredom, antagonism, anger, covert hostility, fear, grief, apathy.

37

L. RON HUBBARD

where the body is fighting physical pain or illness or where the being is fighting in anger, could be graded from 1.0, which would be resentment or hostility, through tone 1.5, which would be a screaming rage, to a 1.9, which would be merely a quarrelsome inclination. From tone 2.0 to tone 3.0 there would be an increasing interest in existence, and so forth.

It so happens that the state of physical being or mental being does not long remain static. Therefore, there are various fluctuations. In the course of a single day an aberree may run from 0.5 to 3.5, up and

down, as a mental being. An accident or illness could cause a similar fluctuation in a day.

These are, then, figures which can be assigned to four things: the mental state on an acute¹⁰ basis and the mental state on a general, average basis, and the physical being on an acute basis and the physical being on a general basis. In Dianetics, we do not much employ the physical Tone Scale. The mental Tone Scale, however, is of vast and vital importance!

These values of happiness, bearable existence, anger and apathy are not arbitrary" values. They are deduced from observation of the behavior of emotional states. A Clear is usually found varying around tone 4, plus or minus, in an average day. He is a general tone 4, which is one of the inherent conditions of being Clear. A norm in current society, at a wild guess, is probably around a general tone 2.8.

In this descriptive graph, which is two-dimensional, the vital data for the solution of the problem of the life dynamic are workably combined. The horizontal lines are in terms of geometric progression beginning with

10. acute: brief and severe.

11. arbitrary: based on one's preference, notion, whim, etc.; capricious.

38

GOAL OF MAN

the zero line immediately above death. There are ten lines for each zone and each zone denotes a mental or physical state of being, as noted. Geometric progression, so used, leaves ever-increasing spaces between the lines. The width of this space is the survival potential existing at the moment the top point of the survival dynamic arrow is within that space. The further away from death the top point of the survival dynamic arrow is, the better chance the individual has of survival. Geometric progression reaches up toward the impossible of infinity and cannot, of course, reach infinity. The organism is surviving through time from left to right. Survival optimum—immortality—lies in terms of time to the right. Potential only is measured vertically.

The survival dynamic actually resides within the organism as inherited from the species. The organism is part of the species as a railroad tie might be said to be part of a railroad as seen by an observer on a train, the observer being always in now—although this analogy is not perhaps the best.

Within itself the organism possesses a repulsive force toward pain sources. The source of the pain is not a driving force any more than the thorn bush which tears the hand was a driving force; the organism repulses the potential pain of a thorn.

At the same time the organism has at work a force which attracts it to the sources of pleasure. Pleasure does not magnetize the organism into drawing near. It is the organism which possesses the attraction force. It is inherent.

The repulsion of pain sources adds to the attraction for pleasure sources to operate as a combined thrust away from death and toward immortality. The thrust away from death is no more powerful than the thrust toward immortality. In other words, in terms of the survival

39

L. RON HUBBARD

dynamic, pleasure has as much validity as pain.

It should not be read here that survival is always a matter of keeping an eye on the future. Contemplation of pleasure, pure enjoyment, contemplation of past pleasures: all combine into harmonies which, while they operate automatically as a rise toward the survival potential, by their action within the organism physically, do not demand the future as an active portion of the mental computation in such contemplation.

A pleasure which reacts to injure the body physically, as in the case of debauchery,¹² discovers at work a ratio between the physical effect (which is depressed toward pain) and the mental effect of experienced pleasure. There is a consequent lowering of the survival dynamic. Averaging out, the future possibility of strain because of the act, added to the state of being at the moment the debauchery was experienced, again depresses the survival dynamic. Because of this, various kinds of debauchery have been in indifferent odor³ with man throughout his history. This is the equation of "immoral pleasures." And any action which has brought about survival suppression or which can bring it about, when pursued

as a pleasure, has been denounced at some time or another in man's history. Immorality is originally hung as a label upon some act or class of actions because they depress the level of the survival dynamic. Future enforcement of moral stigma¹⁴ may depend largely upon prejudice and aberration and there is, consequently, a continuous quarrel over what is moral and what is immoral.

Because certain things practiced as pleasures are

12. debauchery: indulgence in harmful or immoral pleasures.

13. odor: repute; esteem.

14. stigma: a mark of shame, a stain on a person's good reputation.

40

THE GOAL OF MAN

actually pains—and how easy it will be to trace out why when you've finished this volume—and because of the moral equation as above, pleasure itself, in any aberrated society, can become decried.¹⁵ A certain kind of thinking, of which more later, permits poor differentiation between one object and another. Confusing a dishonest politician with all politicians would be an example of this. In ancient times, the Roman was fond of his pleasures and some of the things he called pleasure were a trifle strenuous on other species, such as Christians. When the Christian overthrew the pagan¹⁶ state, the ancient order of Rome was in a villain's role. Anything, therefore, which was Roman was villainous. This went to such remarkable lengths that the Roman love of bathing made bathing so immoral that Europe went unwashed for some fifteen hundred years. The Roman had become a pain source so general that everything Roman was evil and it stayed evil long after Roman paganism perished. Immorality, in such a fashion, tends to become an involved subject. In this case it became so involved that pleasure itself was stigmatized.

When half the survival potential is struck from the list of lawful things, there is a considerable reduction in survival indeed. Considering this graph on a racial scale, the reduction of survival potential by one-half would forecast that direful¹⁷ things lay in wait for the race. Actually, because man is after all man, no set of laws, however enforced, can completely wipe away the attraction of pleasure. But in this case enough was removed and banned to occasion precisely what

15. decried: spoken out against strongly and openly; denounced.

16. pagan: non-Christian; refers to those peoples who worshipped many gods, such as the Greeks and the Romans.

17. direful: dreadful; awful; terrible.

41

L. RON HUBBARD

happened: the Dark Ages¹⁸ and the recession of society. Society brightened only in those periods such as the Renaissance,¹⁹ in which pleasure became less unlawful.

When a race or an individual drops into the second zone, as marked on the chart, and the general tone ranges from the first zone barely into the third, a condition of insanity ensues. Insanity is irrationality. It is also a state in which nonsurvival has been so closely approached continually that the race or the organism engages in all manner of wild solutions.

In further interpretation of this descriptiv²⁰ graph there is the matter of the survival suppressor. This, it will be seen, is a thrust downward out of potential immortality at the race or organism represented as the survival dynamic. The survival suppressor is the combined and variable threats to the survival of the race or organism. These threats come from other species, from time, from other energies. These are also engaged in the contest of survival to potential immortality in terms of their own species or identities. Thus there is a conflict involved. Every other form of life or energy could be plotted in a descriptiv as the survival dynamic. If we were to use a duck's survival dynamic in a descriptiv graph, we would see the duck seeking a high survival level and man would be a part of the duck's suppressor.

18. Dark Ages: the Middle Ages, especially the earlier part from about A.D. 476 to about the end of the 10th century: so called from the idea that this period in Europe was characterized by intellectual stagnation, widespread ignorance and poverty, and cultural decline.

19. Renaissance: the great revival of art, literature and learning in Europe in the 14th, 15th and 16th centuries, based on classical (Greek and Roman) sources. It began in Italy and spread gradually to other countries and marked the transition from the medieval world (from about A.D. 500 to 1450) to the modern.

20. descriptic: representing or delineating by a picture or figure.

42

THE GOAL OF MAN

The balance and nature of things do not permit the infinity of the goal of immortality to be reached. In fluctuating balance and in almost unlimited complexity, life and energies ebb and flood, out of the nebulous, into forms and, through decay, into the nebulous once more.* Many equations could be drawn concerning this, but it is outside the sphere of our present interest.

In terms of the zones of the descriptic, it is of relative concern what the extent of the force of the suppressor is against the survival dynamic. The dynamic is inherent in individuals, groups and races, evolved to resist the suppressor through the eons. In the case of man, he carries with him another level of offensive and defensive techniques, his cultures. His primary technology of survival is mental activity governing physical action in the sentient echelon. But every life form has its own technology, formed to resolve the problems of food, protection and procreation. The degree of workability of the technology any life form develops (armor or brains, fleetness of foot or deceptive form) is a direct index of the survival potential, the relative immortality, of that form. There have been vast upsets in the past; man, when he developed into the world's most dangerous animal (he can and does kill or enslave any life form, doesn't he?), overloaded the suppressor on many other life forms and they dwindled in number or vanished.

* The Veda;1' also Lucretius'22 Nature of Things. —LRH

21. Veda: the most ancient sacred writings of the Hindus.

22. Lucretius: (987-55 B.C.) Roman poet who was the author of the unfinished *On the Nature of Things*, a didactic (instructional) poem in six books, setting forth in outline a complete science of the

universe. The purpose of the work was to prove, by investigating the nature of the world in which man lives, that all things—including man—operate according to their own laws and are not in any way influenced by supernatural powers.

43

L. RON HUBBARD

A great climatic change, such as the one which packed so many mammoths in Siberian²³ ice, may overload the suppressor on a life form. A long drought in the American Southwest in not too ancient times wiped out the better part of an Indian civilization.

A cataclysm²⁴ such as an explosion of the core of the Earth, if that were possible, or the atom bomb or the sudden cessation of burning on the sun would wipe out all life forms on Earth.

And a life form can even overload the suppressor on itself. A dinosaur destroys all his food and so destroys the dinosaur. A bubonic plague²⁵ bacillus²⁶ attacks its hosts with such thorough appetite that the whole generation of *Pasteurella pestis*²⁷ vanishes. Such things are not intended by the suicide to be suicide; the life form has run up against an equation which has an unknown variable, and the unknown variable unfortunately contained enough value to overload the suppressor. This is the "didn't know the gun was loaded" equation.

And if the bubonic plague bacillus overloads its own suppressor in an area and then ceases to trouble its food and shelter—the animals—then the animals consider themselves benefited.

Reckless and clever and well-nigh²⁸ indestructible, man has led a course which is a far cry²⁹ from "tooth

23. Siberian: of Siberia, a part of the Soviet Union in north Asia, extending from the Ural Mountains to the Pacific.

24. cataclysm: any great upheaval that causes sudden and violent changes, as an earthquake, war, etc.

25. bubonic plague: a very dangerous contagious disease, accompanied by fever, chills and swelling of the lymphatic glands. It is carried to humans by fleas from rats or squirrels.

26. bacillus: loosely, any of the bacteria, especially those causing a disease.

27. Pasteurella pestis: organism causing bubonic plague.

28. well-nigh: very nearly; almost.

29. a far cry: only remotely related; very different.

44

THE GOAL OF MAN

and claw" in every sphere. And so have the redwood tree and the shark. Just as a life form, man, like every life form, is "symbiotic."³⁰ Life is a group effort. Lichens³¹ and plankton³² and algae³³ may do very well on sunlight and minerals alone, but they are the building blocks. Above such existence, as the forms grow more complex, a tremendous interdependence exists.

It is very well for a forester to believe that certain trees willfully kill all other varieties of trees around them and then conclude a specious³⁴ "attitude" of trees. Let him look again. What made the soil? What provides the means of keeping the oxygen balance? What makes it possible for rain to fall in other areas? These willful and murderous trees. And squirrels plant trees. And man plants trees. And trees shelter trees of another kind. And animals fertilize trees. And trees shelter animals. And trees hold the soil so less well-rooted plants can grow. Look anywhere and everywhere and we see life as an assist for life. The multitude of the complexities of life as affinities³⁵ for life is not dramatic. But they are the steady, practical, important reason life can continue to exist at all.

30. symbiotic: having to do with the living together of similar or dissimilar organisms for mutual benefit.

31. lichens: any of a large group of plants that look somewhat like moss and grow in patches on trees, rocks, etc.

32. plankton: the small animal and plant organisms that float or drift in water, especially at or near the surface. Plankton serves as an important source of food for larger animals, such as fish.

33. algae: a group of plants, either one-celled or many-celled, often growing in colonies. Algae contain chlorophyll (the green coloring matter of plants) and other pigments, but have no true root, stem or leaf. They are found in water or damp places and include seaweed, pond scum, etc.

34. specious: seeming to be good, sound, correct, logical, etc., without really being so; plausible but not genuine.

35. affinities: the attractions which exist between two human beings, or between human beings and other life organisms.

45

L. RON HUBBARD

A redwood tree may be first out for redwood trees and although it does an excellent job of seeming to exist as redwood alone, a closer glance will show it has dependencies and is depended upon.

Therefore, the dynamic of any life form can be seen to be assisted by many other dynamics and combines with them against the suppressive factors. None survive alone.

Necessity has been declared to be a very wonderful thing. But necessity is a word which has been taken rather loosely for granted. Opportunism³⁶ seems to have been read largely into necessity. What is necessity? Besides being the "mother of invention," is it a dramatic, sudden thing which excuses wars and murders, which touches a man only when he is about to starve? Or is necessity a much gentler and less dramatic quantity? "Everything," according to Leucippus,³⁷ "is driven by necessity." This is a keynote of

much theorizing down through the ages. Driven: that is the key to the error. Driven, things are driven. Necessity drives. Pain drives. Necessity and pain, pain and necessity.

Recalling the dramatic and overlooking the important, man has conceived himself, from time to time, to be an object of chase by necessity and pain. These were two anthropomorphic (manlike) things which, in full costume, stuck spears at him. It can be said to be a wrong concept merely because it does not work to produce more answers.

Whatever there is of necessity is within him. Nothing is driving him except his original impetus to survive. And he carries that within himself or his group. Within

36. opportunism: the policy or practice, as in politics, business or one's personal affairs, of adapting actions, decisions, etc., to expediency or effectiveness regardless of the sacrifice of ethical principles.

37. Leucippus: Greek philosopher of the 5th century B.C.

46

THE GOAL OF MAN

him is the force with which he fends off pain. Within him is the force with which he attracts pleasure.

It chances to be a scientific fact that man is a self-determined organism to the outermost limit that any form of life can be, for he still depends upon other forms of life and his general environment. But he is self-determined. This is a matter which will be covered later. But right here it is necessary to indicate that he is not inherently a determined organism in the sense that he is driven on this wonderful stimulus-response basis which looks so neat in certain textbooks, and works so completely unworkably in the world of man. The happy little illustrations about rats do not serve when we are talking about man. The more complex the organism, the less reliably the stimulus-response equation works. And when one reaches that highest complexity, man, he has reached a fine degree of variability in terms of stimulus-response. The more sentient, the more rational an organism, the more that organism is self-determined. Self-determinism, like all things, is relative. Compared to a rat, however, man is very self-determined indeed. This is only a scientific fact because it can easily be proven.

The more sentient the man, the less he is a "pushbutton" instrument. Aberrated and reduced, he can, of course, in a limited degree, be made to perform like a marionette; but then it is understood that the more aberrated a person is, the closer he approaches the intelligence quotient of an animal.

Given this self-determinism, it is interesting to observe what a man does with it. While he can never escape the "didn't know it was loaded" equation in terms of cataclysm or the unexpected gain of some other life form, he operates in a high zone level of survival potential. But here he is, self-determined, rational, his primary weapon—his mind—in excellent

47

L. RON HUBBARD

working order. What are his necessity instincts?

Necessity, according to that very sentient if rapidly subject-changing article, the dictionary, is "the state of being necessary; that which is unavoidable; compulsion." It also adds that necessity is "extreme poverty," but we don't want that. We are talking about survival.

The compulsion mentioned can be reevaluated in terms of the survival dynamic. That is interior in the organism and the race. And what is "necessary" to survival?

We have seen and can prove clinically that there are two factors at work. The necessity of avoiding pain is a factor because degree by degree, little things, not much in themselves, can amount to large pains which, compounded in that rapid geometric progression, bring on death. Pain is the sadness of being bawled out³⁸ for poor work, because that may lead to being fired, which may lead to starvation, which may lead to death. Run any equation into which pain has entered and it can be seen that it reduces down to possible nonsurvival. And if this were all there were to surviving and if necessity were a vicious little gnome³⁹ with a pitchfork, it seems rather obvious that there would be scant reason to go on living. But there is the other part of the equation: pleasure. That is a more stable part than pain, Stoics⁴⁰ to the contrary, as clinical tests in Dianetics prove.

There is therefore a necessity for pleasure, for working, as happiness can be defined, toward known goals over not unknowable obstacles. And the necessity for

38. bawled out: (slang) scolded angrily.

39. gnome: (folklore) any of a race of small, misshapen, dwarf-like beings, supposed to dwell in the earth and guard its treasures.

40. Stoics: people who maintain or affect the mental attitude advocated by the Stoics, a Greek school of philosophy, founded by Zeno about 308 B.C. , holding that human beings should be free from passion and calmly accept all occurrences as the unavoidable result of divine will.

48

THE GOAL OF MAN

pleasure is such that a great deal of pain can be borne to attain it. Pleasure is the positive commodity. It is enjoyment of work, contemplation of deeds well done; it is a good book or a good friend; it is taking all the skin off one's knees climbing the Matterhorn;⁴¹ it is hearing the kid first say "Daddy"; it is a brawl on the Bund⁴² at Shanghai or the whistle of amour⁴³ from a doorway; it's adventure and hope and enthusiasm and "someday I'll learn to paint"; it's eating a good meal or kissing a pretty girl or playing a stiff game of bluff on the stock exchange. It's what man does that he enjoys doing; it's what man does that he enjoys contemplating; it's what man does that he enjoys remembering; and it may be just the talk of things he knows he'll never do.

Man will endure a lot of pain to obtain a little pleasure. Out in the laboratory of the world, it takes very little time to confirm that.

And how does necessity fit this picture? There is a necessity for pleasure, a necessity as live and quivering and vital as the human heart itself. He who said that a man who had two loaves of bread should sell one to buy white hyacinth,⁴⁴ spoke sooth.⁴⁵ The creative, the constructive, the beautiful, the harmonious, the adventurous, yes, and even escape from the maw⁴⁶ of oblivion: these things are pleasure and these things are necessity. There was a man once who had walked a thousand miles just to see an orange tree and another who was a

41. Matterhorn: a mountain on the border of Switzerland and Italy.

42. Bund: a street running along the waterfront in Shanghai (a seaport in eastern China).

43. amour: (French) love.

44. hyacinth: a plant of the lily family, widely cultivated for its cylindrical cluster of fragrant flowers in a variety of colors.

45. sooth: truth.

46. maw: anything thought of as consuming, devouring, etc., without end.

49

L. RON HUBBARD

mass of scars and poor-set bones who was eager just to get a chance to "fan⁴⁷ another bronc."

It is very well to dwell in some Olympian⁴⁸ height and write a book of penalties and very well to read to find what writers said that other writers said, but it is not very practical.

The pain-drive theory⁴⁹ does not work. If some of these basics of Dianetics were only poetry about the idyllic⁵⁰ state of man, they might be justified in that, but it happens that out in the laboratory of the world, they work.

Man, in affinity with man, survives, and that survival is pleasure.

47. fan: (Western US, chiefly cowboy use) slap the flanks (of a horse or other animal) repeatedly with a hat to get it to move or move faster.

48. Olympian: of, resembling, characteristic of or suitable to the gods of Olympus (mountain in northeastern Greece); majestic or aloof.

49. pain-drive theory: the theory that pain, deprivation or other unpleasant consequence imposed on or experienced by an organism responding incorrectly under specific conditions establishes, through avoidance, the desired learning or behavior.

50. idyllic: pleasing and simple; pastoral (characteristic of rural life, idealized as peaceful, simple and natural) or picturesque.

50

CHAPTER FOUR

The Four Dynamics

In the original equations of Dianetics, when the research was young, it was believed that survival could be envisioned in personal terms alone and still answer all conditions. A theory is only as good as it works. And it works as well as it explains observed data and predicts new material which will be found, in fact, to exist.

Survival in personal terms was computed until the whole activity of man could be theoretically explained in terms of self alone. The logic looked fairly valid. But then it was applied to the world. Something was wrong: it did not solve problems. In fact, the theory of survival in personal terms alone was so unworkable that it left a majority of behavior phenomena unexplained. But it could be computed and it still looked good.

Then it was that a nearly intuitive idea occurred. Man's understanding developed in ratio to his recognition of his brotherhood with the universe. That was high-flown but it yielded results.

Was man himself a brotherhood of man? He had evolved and become strong as a gregarious' being, an animal that hunted in packs. It seemed possible that all his activities could be computed in terms of the survival of the group. That computation was made. It looked good. Man survived, it was postulated, solely in terms of the survival of his group. It looked good but it left a majority of observed phenomena unexplained.

1. gregarious: living in herds or flocks.

51

L. RON HUBBARD

It was attempted, then, to explain man's behavior in terms of mankind alone; which is to say, it was assumed that mankind survived for mankind in a highly altruistic² way. This was straight down the sylvan³ path of Jean Jacques Rousseau.⁴ It could be computed that man lived alone for the survival of all mankind. But when addressed to the laboratory—the world—it did not work.

Finally, it was recalled that some had thought that man's entire activity and all his behavior could be explained by assuming that he lived for sex alone. This was not an original assumption. But some original computations were made upon it and it is true that, by a few quick twists of the equation, his survival activity can be made to resolve on only the sexual basis. But when this was applied to observed data, again it failed to explain every phenomenon.

An examination was made of what had been attempted. It had been assumed that man survived only for himself as an individual; it had been computed that he survived only for the group, the pack, for society; it had been postulated that he survived only for mankind; and finally, it had been theorized that he lived only for sex. None worked alone.

A new computation was made on the survival dynamic. Exactly for what was man surviving? All four of these factors—self, sex, group and mankind—were entered into a new equation. And now it was found, a theory was in hand which worked. It explained all observed phenomena and it predicted new phenomena

2. altruistic: having unselfish concern for the welfare of others.

3. sylvan: of or characteristic of the woods or forests. Used figuratively, as Rousseau's philosophy of the "natural man."

4. Jean Jacques Rousseau: (1712-1778) Swiss-born French philosopher, author, political theorist and composer, who argued that nature is good and civilization bad.

52

THE FOUR DYNAMICS

which were discovered to exist. It was a scientific equation, therefore!

From the survival dynamic, in this fashion, were evolved the four dynamics. By survival dynamic was meant the basic command Survive! which underlay all activity. By dynamic was meant one of the four purpose divisions of the entire dynamic principle. The four dynamics were not new forces; they were subdivisions of the primary force.

Dynamic one is the urge toward ultimate survival on the part of the individual and for himself. It includes his immediate symbiotes,* the extension of culture for his own benefit and name immortality.

Dynamic two is the urge of the individual toward ultimate survival via the sex act, the creation of and the rearing of children. It includes their symbiotes, the extension of culture for them and their future provision.

Dynamic three is the urge of the individual toward ultimate survival for the group. It includes the symbiotes of the group and the extension of its culture.

Dynamic four includes the urge of the individual toward ultimate survival for all mankind. It includes the symbiotes of mankind and the extension of its culture.

Life, the atom and the universe and energy itself are included under the symbiotic classification.

It will be seen immediately that these four dynamics are actually a spectrum without sharp division lines. The survival dynamic can be seen to sweep out from the individual to embrace the entire species and its symbiotes.

None of these dynamics is necessarily stronger than any of the others. Each is strong. They are the four

* The Dianetic meaning of symbiote is extended beyond the dictionary definition to mean "any or all life or energy forms which are mutually dependent for survival." The atom depends on the universe, the universe on the atom. —LRH

53

L. RON HUBBARD

roads a man takes to survival. And the four roads are actually one road. And the one road is actually a spectrum of thousands of roads contained within the four. They are all in terms of past, present and future in that the present may be a sum of the past and the future may be the product of the past and present.

All the purposes of man can be considered to lie within this spectrum and all behavior becomes explained.

That man is selfish is a valid statement when one means an aberrated man. That man is antisocial is an equally valid statement if one adds the modifier, aberration. And other such statements resolve equally.

Now, it happens that these four dynamics can be seen to compete, one with another, in their operation within an individual or a society. There is a rational reason for this. The phrase "social competition" is a compound of aberrated behavior and sentient difficulties.

Any man, group or race may be in contest with any race, group or man and even in contest with sex on an entirely rational level.

The equation of the optimum solution would be that a problem has been well resolved which portends* the maximum good for the maximum number of dynamics. That is to say that any solution, modified by the time available to put the solution into effect, should be creative or constructive for the greatest possible number of dynamics. The optimum solution for any problem would be a solution which achieved the maximum benefit in all the dynamics. This means that a man, determining upon some project, would fare best if he benefited everything concerned in the four dynamics as his project touched them. He would then have to benefit himself as well for the solution to be optimum. In other words, the

5. portends: is an indication of; signifies.

54

THE FOUR DYNAMICS

benefiting of the group and mankind dynamics but the blocking of the sex dynamic and the self dynamic would be much poorer than the best solution. The survival conduct pattern is built upon this equation of the optimum solution. It is the basic equation of all rational behavior and is the equation on which a Clear functions. It is inherent in man.

In other words, the best solution to any problem is that which will bring the greatest good to the greatest number of beings, including self, progeny,⁶ family associates, political and racial groups, and at length to all mankind. The greatest good may require, as well, some destruction, but the solution deteriorates in a ratio to the destructiveness employed. Self-sacrifice and selfishness are alike reductive of the optimum action equation and alike have been suspected and should be.

This is entirely a matter of does it work? Even on an unaberrated basis there are times when one or another of these dynamics have to be dropped from the computation of some activity or other and indeed, few problems are so entirely intense that they must take into account all the dynamics. But when a problem achieves such intensity, and time is not an important factor, serious errors can follow the omission of one or another of the dynamics from the factors considered.

In the case of a Napoleon⁷ "saving France" at the expense of the remainder of mankind in Europe, the equation of the optimum solution was so far neglected that all the revolutionary gains of the French people

6. progeny: children, descendants or offspring collectively.

7. Napoleon: Napoleon Bonaparte (1769-1821), French military leader and emperor of France (1804-1815). He led a brilliant campaign of French domination in Europe but ended in ruin, spending the last years of his life as a prisoner on a lonely British island.

55

L. RON HUBBARD

were lost. In the case of Caesar⁸ "saving Rome," the equation was so poorly done that the survival of Rome was impeded.

But there are special cases when the equation of the optimum solution becomes so involved with time that certain dynamics must be neglected to permit other dynamics to persist. The case of a sailor giving his own life to save his ship answers the group dynamic. Such an action is a valid solution to a problem. But it violates the optimum solution because it did not answer for dynamic one: self.

Many examples of various kinds could be cited where one or another of the dynamics must, of necessity, receive priority, all on an entirely rational basis.

On an aberrated basis, the equation is still valid but complicated by irrationalities which have no part of the situation. Many solutions are bad merely because of false educational data or no data at all. But these are still solutions. In the case of aberrated solutions, the dynamics are actually and actively impeded, as will later be outlined in full.

8. Caesar: Julius Caesar (1007-44 B.C.), Roman general and statesman. As part of his military conquests, he invaded Britain in 55 and 54 B.C. Became Roman dictator in 49 B.C.

56

CHAPTER FIVE

Summary

The dynamic principle of existence is survival.

This survival can be graduated into four zones, each one progressively portending a better opportunity of reaching the potential of immortality. Zone 0 borders from death and includes apathy; zone 1 borders from apathy and includes violent effort; zone 2 borders from violence into mediocre, but not entirely satisfactory, success; zone 3 borders from the mediocre to the excellent chance. These zones are each occasioned by the ratio of the suppressor to the survival dynamic. In apathy, zone 0, the suppressor appears too great to be overcome. In the area of violence, zone 1, the suppressor more or less overbalances the survival dynamic, requiring enormous effort which, when expended without result, drops the organism into the zero zone. In the area of mediocrity, zone 2, the suppressor and the survival dynamic are more or less evenly balanced. In the area of zone 3, the survival dynamic has overcome the suppressor and, the chances of survival being excellent, is the area of high response to problems. These four zones might be classed as the zone of no hope, the zone of violent action, the area of balance and the area of high hope. Clinical experiment is the basis of these zones since they follow a progress of mental or physical being as it rises from the death area into high existence.

The four dynamics are subdivisions of the survival dynamic and are, in mankind, the thrust toward potential survival in terms of entities. They embrace all the purposes, activities and behavior of mankind. They

57

L. RON HUBBARD

could be said to be a survival conduct pattern. The first of these, but not necessarily the most important nor yet the one which will receive priority in various efforts, is the individual dynamic, Dynamic one,

which includes the personal survival of the individual as a living person and the survival of his personal symbiotes. Dynamic two is the thrust toward potential immortality through children and includes all sexual activity as well as the symbiotes of the children. Dynamic three is survival in terms of the group, which term may include such things as a club, a military company, a city, a state, a nation; this would include the symbiotes of the group. Dynamic four is the thrust toward potential immortality of mankind as a species and the symbiotes of mankind. Embraced within these classifications are any part of existence, any form of matter and, indeed, the universe.

Any problem or situation discoverable within the activities or purposes of mankind is embraced within these dynamics.

The equation of the optimum solution is inherent within the organism and, modified by education or viewpoint and modified further by time, is the operating method of unaberrated individuals, groups or mankind. The equation of the optimum solution is always present even in severely aberrated individuals and is used as modified by their education, viewpoint and available time. The aberration does not remove activity from the dynamics of survival. Aberrated conduct is irrational survival conduct and is fully intended to lead to survival. That the intent is not the act does not eradicate the intent.

These Are the Fundamental Axioms of Dianetics:

The dynamic principle of existence—Survive!

58

SUMMARY

Survival, considered as the single and sole purpose, subdivides into four dynamics.

Dynamic one is the urge of the individual toward survival for the individual and his symbiotes. (By symbiote is meant all entities and energies which aid survival.)

Dynamic two is the urge of the individual toward survival through procreation; it includes both the sex act and the raising of progeny, the care of children and their symbiotes.

Dynamic three is the urge of the individual toward survival for the group or the group for the group and includes the symbiotes of that group.

Dynamic four is the urge of the individual toward survival for mankind or the urge toward survival of mankind for mankind as well as the group for mankind, etc., and includes the symbiotes of mankind.

The absolute goal of survival is immortality or infinite survival. This is sought by the individual in terms of himself as an organism, as a spirit or as a name or as his children, as a group of which he is a member or as mankind and the progeny and symbiotes of others as well as his own.

The reward of survival activity is pleasure.

The ultimate penalty of destructive activity is death or complete nonsurvival, and is pain.

Successes raise the survival potential toward infinite survival.

Failures lower the survival potential toward death.

The human mind is engaged upon perceiving and retaining data, composing or computing conclusions

59

L. RON HUBBARD

and posing and resolving problems related to organisms along all four dynamics; and the purpose of perception, retention, concluding and resolving problems is to direct its own organism and symbiotes and other organisms and symbiotes along the four dynamics toward survival.

Intelligence is the ability to perceive, pose and resolve problems.

The dynamic is the tenacity to life and vigor and persistence in survival.

Both the dynamic and intelligence are necessary to persist and accomplish and neither is a constant quantity from individual to individual, group to group.

The dynamics are inhibited by engrams, which lie across them and disperse life force.

Intelligence is inhibited by engrams which feed false or improperly graded data into the analyzer.¹

Happiness is the overcoming of not unknown obstacles toward a known goal and, transiently, the contemplation of or indulgence in pleasure.

The analytical mind is that portion of the mind which perceives and retains experience data to compose and resolve problems and direct the organism along the four dynamics. It thinks in differences and similarities.

The reactive mind is that portion of the mind which files and retains physical pain and painful emotion and seeks to direct the organism solely on a stimulus-response basis. It thinks only in identities.

The somatic mind is that mind which, directed by the analytical or reactive mind, places solutions into effect on the physical level.

1. analyzer: see analytical mind in the glossary.

SUMMARY

A training pattern is that stimulus-response mechanism resolved by the analytical mind to care for routine activity or emergency activity. It is held in the somatic mind and can be changed at will by the analytical mind.

Habit is that stimulus-response reaction dictated by the reactive mind from the content of engrams and put into effect by the somatic mind. It can be changed only by those things which change engrams.

Aberrations, under which is included all deranged or irrational behavior, are caused by engrams. They are stimulus-response, pro- and contrasurvival.

Psychosomatic ills are caused by engrams.

The engram is the single source of aberrations and psychosomatic ills.

Moments of "unconsciousness," when the analytical mind is attenuated² in greater or lesser degree, are the only moments when engrams can be received.

The engram is a moment of "unconsciousness" containing physical pain or painful emotion and all perceptions, and is not available to the analytical mind as experience.

Emotion is three things: engramic response to situations, endocrine metering of the body to meet situations on an analytical level, and the inhibition or the furtherance of life force.

The potential value of an individual or a group may be expressed by the equation

$PV = ID$ where I is Intelligence and D is Dynamic.

2. attenuated: weakened or reduced in force, intensity, effect, quantity or value.

61

L. RON HUBBARD

The worth of an individual is computed in terms of the alignment, on any dynamic, of his potential value with optimum survival along that dynamic. A high PV may, by reversed vector,³ result in a negative worth as in some severely aberrated persons, A high PV on any dynamic assures a high worth only in the unaberrated person.

3. vector: a physical quantity with both magnitude and direction, such as a force or velocity.

62

Book Two

The Single Source of All Inorganic Mental

and Organic Psychosomatic Ills

CHAPTER ONE

The Analytical Mind and the Standard Memory Banks

This chapter begins the search for human error and tells where it is not.

The human mind can be considered to have three major divisions. First, there is the analytical mind; second, there is the reactive mind; and third, there is the somatic mind.

Consider the analytical mind as a computing machine. This is analogy because the analytical mind, while it behaves like a computing machine, is yet more fantastically capable than any computing machine ever constructed and infinitely more elaborate. It could be called the "computational mind" or the "egsusheyftf." But for our purposes, the analytical mind, as a descriptive name, will do. This mind may live in the prefrontal lobes'—there is some hint of that—but this is a problem of structure, and nobody really knows about structure. So we shall call this computational part of the mind the "analytical mind" because it analyzes data.

The monitor can be considered part of the analytical mind. The monitor could be called the center of awareness of the person. It, inexactly speaking, is the person. It has been approximated by various names for thousands of years, each one reducing down to "I." The monitor is in control of the analytical mind. It is not in control because it has been told to be but only because it is, inherently. It is not a demon who lives in the skull nor a little man who vocalizes one's thoughts. It is "I."

1. prefrontal lobes: portion of the brain directly behind the forehead.

65

L. RON HUBBARD

No matter how many aberrations a person may have, "I" is always "I." No matter how "clear" a person becomes, "I" is still "I." "I" may be submerged now and then in an aberree, but it is always present.

The analytical mind shows various evidences of being an organ, but as we know in this age so little of structure, the full structural knowledge of the analytical mind must come after we know what it does. And in Dianetics we know precisely that for the first time. It is known and can be proven with ease that the analytical mind, be it one organ of the body or several, behaves as you would expect any good computing machine to behave.

What would you want in a computing machine? The action of the analytical mind—or analyzer—is everything anyone could want from the best computer available. It can and does do all the tricks of a

computer. And over and above that, it directs the building of computers. And it is as thoroughly right as any computer ever was. The analytical mind is not just a good computer, it is a perfect computer. It never makes a mistake. It cannot err in any way so long as a human being is reasonably intact (unless something has carried away a piece of his mental equipment).

The analytical mind is incapable of error, and it is so certain that it is incapable of error that it works out everything on the basis that it cannot make an error. If a person says, "I cannot add," he either means that he has never been taught to add or that he has an aberration about adding. It does not mean that there is anything wrong with the analytical mind.

While the whole being is, in an aberrated state, grossly capable of error, still the analytical mind is not. For a computer is just as good as the data on which it operates and no better. Aberration, then, arises from the nature of the data offered to the analytical mind as a problem to be computed.

66

THE ANALYTICAL MIND AND THE STANDARD MEMORY BANKS

The analytical mind has its standard memory banks. Just where these are located structurally is again no concern of ours at this time. To operate, the analytical mind has to have percepts² (data), memory (data) and imagination (data).

There are another data storage bank and another part of the human mind which contain aberrations and are the source of insanities. These will be fully covered later and should not be confused with either the analytical mind or the standard memory banks.

Whether the data contained in the standard memory banks is evaluated correctly or not, it is all there. The various senses receive information and this information files straight into the standard memory banks. It does not go through the analyzer first. It is filed and the analyzer then has it from the standard banks.

There are several of these standard banks and they may be duplicated in themselves so that there are several of each kind of bank. Nature seems generous in such things. There is a bank, or set of banks, for each perception. These can be considered racks of data filed in a cross-index system which would make an intelligence officer³ purple with envy. Any single percept is filed as a concept. The sight of a moving car, for instance, is filed in the visio-bank in color and motion, at the time seen; cross-indexed to the area

in which seen; cross-indexed to all data about cars; cross-indexed to thoughts about cars; and so forth and so forth, with the additional filing of conclusions (thought stream) of the moment and thought streams of the past with all their conclusions. The sound of that car is similarly filed from the ears straight into the audio-bank, and

2. percepts: recognizable sensations or impressions received by the mind through the senses.

3. intelligence officer: a military officer responsible for collecting and processing data on hostile forces, weather and terrain.

67

L. RON HUBBARD

cross-indexed multitudinously as before. The other sensations of that moment are also filed in their own banks.

Now, it may be that the whole filing is done in one bank. It would be simpler that way. But this is not a matter of structure but mental performance. Eventually somebody will discover just how they are filed. Right now the function of filing is all that interests us.

Every percept—sight, sound, smell, feeling, taste, organic sensation, pain, rhythm, kinesthesia (weight and muscular motion) and emotion—is each properly and neatly filed in the standard banks in full. It does not matter how many aberrations a physically intact person has or whether he thinks he can or cannot contain this data or recall it; the file is there and is complete.

This file begins at a very early period, of which more later. It then runs consecutively, whether the individual is asleep or awake, except in moments of "unconsciousness,"* for an entire lifetime. It apparently has an infinite capacity.

The numbers of these concepts (concept means "that which is retained after something has been perceived") would stagger an astronomer's computer. The existence and profusion of memories retained were discovered and studied in a large number of cases, and they can be examined in anyone by certain

processes.

Everything in this bank is correct insofar as the single action of perception is concerned. There may be organic errors in the organs of perception, such as blindness or deafness (when physical, not aberrational), which would leave blanks in the banks; and there may

* Unconsciousness throughout this work means a greater or lesser reduction of awareness on the part of "I"—an attenuation of working power of the analytical mind.

-LRH

68

THE ANALYTICAL MIND AND THE STANDARD MEMORY BANKS

be organic impairment, such as partial organic deafness, which would leave partial blanks. But these things are not errors in the standard memory banks; they are simply absence of data. Like the computer, the standard memory banks are perfect, recording faithfully and reliably.

Now, part of the standard banks is audio-semantic,⁴ which is to say, the recordings of words heard. And part of the banks is visio-semantic, which is to say, the recordings of words read. These are special parts of the sound and sight files. A blind man who has to read with his fingers develops a tactile-semantic file. The content of the speech files is exactly as heard without alteration.

Another interesting part of the standard memory banks is that they apparently file the original and hand forward exact copies to the analyzer. They will hand out as many exact copies as are demanded without diminishing the actual file original. And they hand out these copies each in kind with color-motion sight, tone-audio, etc.

The amount of material which is retained in the average standard memory banks would fill several libraries. But the method of retention is invariable. And the potentiality of recall is perfect.

The primary source of error in "rational" computation comes under the headings of insufficient data and erroneous data. The individual, daily facing new situations, is not always in possession of all the material he requires to make a decision. And he may have been told something on "good authority" which was not true and yet which did not find counterevidence in the banks.

Between the standard banks, which are perfect and reliable, and the computer—the analytical mind—which

4. semantic: of, pertaining to or arising from the different meanings of words or other symbols.

69

L. RON HUBBARD

is perfect and reliable, there is no irrational concurrence.⁵ The answer is always as right as it can be made to be in the light of data at hand, and that is all anyone can ask of a computing device or a recording device.

The analytical mind goes even further in its efforts to be right than one would suppose. It constantly checks and weighs new experience in the light of old experience, forms new conclusions in the light of old conclusions, changes old conclusions, and generally is very busy being right.

The analytical mind might be considered to have been given a sacred post of trust by the cells to safeguard the colony, and it does everything within its power to carry out that mission. It has correct data, as correct as possible; and it does correct computations on them, as correct as they can be made. When one considers the enormous number of factors which one handles, for instance, in the action of driving a car ten blocks, he can appreciate how very, very busy on how very many levels that analytical mind can be.

Now, before we introduce the villain of this piece, the reactive mind, it is necessary to understand something about the relation of the analytical mind to the organism itself.

The analytical mind, charged with full responsibility, is far from without authority to carry out its actions and desires. Through the mechanisms of the life function regulator (which handles all the mechanical functions of living), the analytical mind can affect any function of the body it desires to affect.

In excellent working order—which is to say, when the organism is not aberrated—the analytical mind can influence the heartbeat, the endocrines (such things as

5. *concourse*: concurrence in action or causation, cooperation; combined action.

70

THE ANALYTICAL MIND AND THE STANDARD MEMORY BANKS

calcium and sugar in the blood, adrenaline," etc.), selective blood flow (stopping it in the limbs or starting it at will), urine, excreta,⁷ etc. All glandular, rhythm and fluid functions of the body can be at the command of the analytical mind. This is not to say that in a cleared person they always are. That would be very uncomfortable and bothersome. But it does say that the analytical mind can effect changes at desire when it skills itself to do so. This is a matter of laboratory proof, very easy to do.

People have long been intuitive about the "full power of the mind." Well, the full power of the mind would be the analytical mind working with the standard memory banks, the life function regulator and one other thing.

The last and most important thing is, of course, the organism. It is in the charge of the analytical mind. And the analytical mind controls it in other ways than life function. All muscles and the remainder of the organism can be under the full command of the analytical mind.

In order to keep it and its circuits free of bric-a-brac and minor activities, the analytical mind is provided with a learned training pattern regulator. Into this, by education, it can place the stimulus-response patterns necessary for the performance of tasks like talking, walking, piano playing, etc. These learned patterns are not unchangeable. Because they are selected by the analytical mind after thought and effort, there is seldom any need to change them; if new situations arise, a new pattern is trained into the muscles. None of these are "conditionings"; they are simply training patterns

6. adrenaline: a hormone secreted by the adrenal gland, that stimulates the heart, increases muscular strength, etc.

7. excreta: waste matter excreted from the body, as sweat or urine.

71

L. RON HUBBARD

which the organism can use without attention of any magnitude from the analyzer. An uncountable number of such patterns can be laid into the organism by this method. And they are not the source of any trouble since they file by time and situation, and a very little thought will serve to annul old ones in favor of new ones.

All muscles, voluntary and "involuntary," can be at the command of the analytical mind.

Here, then, is the composite of a sentient being. There is no chance for error beyond the errors incident to insufficient data and erroneous but accepted data (and the last will be used by the analyzer just once if that once proves the data to be wrong). Here is the realm of pleasure, emotion, creation and construction and even destruction, if the computation on the optimum solution says something has to be destroyed.

The dynamics underlie the activities of the analytical mind. The urge toward survival explains all its actions. That we can understand the fundamental simplicity of the functional mechanism does not, however, mean that a man operating this way alone is cold or calculating or intent on "tooth and claw." The nearer man approaches this optimum, in an individual or in a whole society, the quicker and warmer is that society, the more honest may be its moods and actions.

Sanity depends upon rationality. Here is optimum rationality and therefore optimum sanity. And here also are all the things man likes to think man should be like or, for that matter, what he has represented his better gods to be like. This is the Clear.

This is sanity. This is happiness. This is survival.

Where is the error?

72

CHAPTER Two

The Reactive Mind

It is fairly well accepted in these times that life in all forms evolved from the basic building blocks: the virus¹ and the cell. Its only relevance to Dianetics is that such a proposition works—and actually that is all we ask of Dianetics. There is no point to writing here a vast tome on biology and evolution. We can add some chapters to those things, but Charles Darwin did his job well and the fundamental principles of evolution can be found in his and other works.

The proposition on which Dianetics was originally entered was evolution. It was postulated that the cells themselves had the urge to survive and that that urge was common to life. It was further postulated that organisms—individuals—were constructed of cells and were in fact aggregations² of colonies of cells.

As went the building block, so went the organism. In the finite realms and for any of our purposes, man could be considered to be a colonial aggregation of cells and it could be assumed that his purpose was identical with the purpose of his building blocks.

The cell is a unit of life which is seeking to survive and only to survive.

Man is a structure of cells which are seeking to survive and only to survive.

Man's mind is the command post of operation and is

1. virus: a microscopic agent that can reproduce only within the cells of living hosts—mainly bacteria, plants and animals.

2. aggregations: groups or masses of distinct things or individuals.

73

L. RON HUBBARD

constructed to resolve problems and pose problems related to survival and only to survival.

The action of survival, if optimum, would lead to survival.

The optimum survival conduct pattern was formulated and then studied for exceptions, and there were no exceptions found.

The survival conduct pattern was discovered to be far from sterile and barren but was full of rich and most pleasant activity.

None of these postulates outlawed any concept concerning the human soul or divine or creative imagination. It was understood perfectly that this was a study in the finite universe only and that spheres and realms of thought and action might very well exist above this finite sphere. But it was also discovered that none of these factors were needed to resolve the entire problem of aberration and irrational conduct.

The human mind was discovered to have been most grossly maligned,³ for it was found to be possessed of capabilities far in excess of any heretofore imagined, much less tested.

Basic human character was found to have been pilloried⁴ because man had not been able to distinguish between irrational conduct derived from poor data and irrational conduct derived from another far more vicious source.

If there ever was a devil, he designed the reactive mind.

This functional mechanism managed to bury itself from view so thoroughly that only inductive philosophy,

3. maligned: spoken evil of; defamed; slandered.

4. pilloried: held up to public ridicule or scorn.

5. inductive: of or using induction, logical reasoning that a general law exists because particular cases that seem to be examples of it exist.

74

THE REACTIVE MIND

traveling from effect back to cause, served to uncover it. The detective work which was invested in the location of this archcriminal of the human psyche occupied many years. Its identity can now be certified by any technician in any clinic or in any group of men. Two hundred and seventy-three individuals have been examined and treated, representing all the various types of inorganic mental illness and the many varieties of psychosomatic ills. In each one this reactive mind was found operating, its principles unvaried. This is a long series of cases and will soon become longer.

The reactive mind is possessed by everyone. No human being examined anywhere was discovered to be without one or without aberrative content in his engram bank, the reservoir of data which serves the reactive mind.

What does this mind do? It shuts off hearing recall. It places vocal circuits in the mind. It makes people tone-deaf. It makes people stutter. It does anything and everything that can be found in any list of mental ills: psychoses, neuroses, compulsions, repressions . . .

What can it do? It can give a man arthritis,⁶ bursi-tis,⁷ asthma,⁸ allergies, sinusitis,⁹ coronary¹⁰ trouble, high blood pressure and so on, down the whole catalog of psychosomatic ills, adding a few more which were never specifically classified as psychosomatic, such as the common cold.

And it is the only thing in the human being which

6. arthritis: a condition causing inflammation, pain and stiffness in the joints.

1. bursitis: inflammation of a bursa, a pouch between joints or between muscles or skin, etc., and bones, for lessening friction.

8. asthma: a generally chronic disorder characterized by wheezing, coughing, difficulty in breathing and a suffocating feeling.

9. sinusitis: inflammation of one or more sinus cavities in the skull.

10. coronary: of or pertaining to the human heart, with respect to health.

75

L. RON HUBBARD

can produce these effects. It is the thing which uniformly brings them about.

This is the mind which made Socrates" think he had a "demon" that gave him answers. This is the mind that made Caligula² appoint his horse to a government post. This is the mind which made Caesar cut the right hands from thousands of Gauls,¹³ which made Napoleon reduce the height of Frenchmen one inch.

This is the mind which keeps war a thing of alarm, which makes politics irrational, which makes superior officers snarl, which makes children cry in fear of the dark. This is the mind which makes a man suppress his hopes, which holds his apathies, which gives him irresolution when he should act and kills him before he has begun to live.

If there ever was a devil, he invented it.

Discharge the content of this mind's bank and the arthritis vanishes, myopia¹⁴ gets better, heart illness decreases, asthma disappears, stomachs function properly and the whole catalog of ills goes away and stays away.

Discharge the reactive engram bank and the schizophrenic¹⁵ faces reality at last, the manic-depressive¹⁶

11. Socrates: (ca. 469-399 B.C.) Greek philosopher and teacher who believed in a "demon" whose voice warned him whenever he was about to make a wrong decision.

12. Caligula: (A.D. 12-41) Roman emperor (A.D. 37-41). His reign was marked by extreme cruelty and tyranny.

13. Gauls: any of the Celtic-speaking people of Gaul, ancient region in western Europe consisting of what is now mainly France and Belgium.

14. myopia: inability to see clearly what is far away—nearsighted-ness.

15. schizophrenic: (psychiatry) person suffering from schizophrenia, a mental illness in which an individual is being two people madly inside of himself. It is a psychiatry classification derived from the Latin schizo, meaning "split," and the Greek phren, meaning "mind."

16. manic-depressive: (psychiatry) having a mental disorder marked by alternating extremes of excitement and depression.

THE REACTIVE MIND

sets forth to accomplish things, the neurotic stops clinging to books which tell him how much he needs his neuroses and begins to live, the woman stops snapping at her children, and the dipsomaniac¹⁷ can drink when he likes and stop.

These are scientific facts. They compare invariably with observed experience.

The reactive mind is the entire source of aberration. It can be proved and has been repeatedly proved that there is no other, for when that engram bank is discharged, all undesirable symptoms vanish and a man begins to operate on his optimum pattern.

If one were looking for something like demons in a human mind—such as those one observes in some inmates of madhouses—he could find them easily enough. Only they are not demons. They are bypass circuits from the engram bank. What prayers and exhortations have been used against these bypass circuits!

If one did not believe in demons, if one supposed that man were good after all (as a postulate, of course), how would the evil get into him? What would be the source of these insane rages? What would be the source of his slips of the tongue?⁸ How would he come to know irrational fear?

Why is it that one does not like his boss although his boss has always been pleasant? Why is it that suicides smash their bodies to bits?

Why does man behave destructively, irrationally, fighting wars, killing, ruining whole sections of mankind?

What is the source of all neuroses, psychoses, insanities?

17. dipsomaniac: a person suffering from an uncontrollable craving for alcohol.

18. slips of the tongue: mistakes in speaking, as inadvertent remarks.

77

L. RON HUBBARD

Let us return to a brief examination of the analytical mind. Let us examine its memory banks. Here we find all the sense concepts on file. Or so it appears at first glance. Let us take another look, a look at the time factor. There is a time sense about these analytical mind banks. It is very accurate, as though the organism were equipped with a fine watch. But there is something wrong here about time—it has gaps in it! There are moments when nothing seems to be filed in these standard banks. These are gaps which take place during moments of "unconsciousness"—that state of being caused by anesthesia, drugs, injury or shock.

This is the only data missing from a standard bank. If in hypnotic trance you examine a patient's memory of an operation, these incidents are the only periods in the banks you will not find. You can find these if you care to look and don't care what happens to your patient—of which more later. But the point is that there is something missing which has always been considered by one and all in any age never to have been recorded.

One and all in every age have never been able to put a finger on insanity either. Are these two data in agreement and do they have relationship? They definitely do.

There are two things which appear to be—but are not—recorded in the standard banks: painful emotion and physical pain.

How would you go about the building of a sensitive machine upon which the life and death affairs of an organism depended, which was to be the chief tool of an individual? Would you leave its delicate circuits prey to every overload, or would you install a fuse¹⁹ system?

19. fuse: a wire or strip of easily melted metal, usually set in a plug, placed in a circuit as a safeguard: if the current becomes too strong, the metal melts, thus breaking the circuit.

78

THE REACTIVE MIND

If a delicate instrument is in circuit with a power line, it is protected by several sets of fuses. Any computer would be so safeguarded.

It happens that there is some small evidence to support the electrical theory of the nervous system. In pain there are very heavy overcharges in the nerves. It may well have been—and elsewhere some Dianetic computations have been made about this—that the brain is the absorber for overcharges of power resulting from injury, the power itself being generated by the injured cells in the area of injury. That is theory and has no place here save to serve as an example. We are dealing now only with scientific fact.

The action of the analytical mind during a moment of intense pain is suspended. In fact, the analytical mind behaves just as though it were an organ to which vital supply is shut off whenever shock is present.

As an example, a man struck in the side by a car is knocked "unconscious" and, on regaining "consciousness," has no record of the period when he was "knocked out." This would be a nonsurvival circumstance. It means that there would be no volition on the part of anyone who was injured, and this is the time when the organism most requires volition. So this is nonsurvival if the whole mind cuts out whenever pain appears. Would an organism with more than a billion years of biological engineering behind it leave a problem like this unsolved?

Indeed, the organism solved the problem. Maybe the problem is very difficult, biologically, and maybe the solution is not very good, but large provision has been made for those moments when the organism is "unconscious."

The answer to the problem of making the organism react in moments of "unconsciousness" or near "unconsciousness" is also the answer to insanity and psychosomatic illnesses and all the strange mental quirks to

L. RON HUBBARD

which people are liable and which gave rise to that fable "it is human to err."

Clinical tests prove these statements to be scientific facts:

1. The mind records on some level continuously during the entire life of the organism.
2. All recordings of the lifetime are available.
3. "Unconsciousness," in which the mind is oblivious of its surroundings, is possible only in death and does not exist as total amnesia in life.
4. All mental and physical derangements of a psychic nature come about from moments of "unconsciousness."
5. Such moments can be reached and drained of charge²⁰ with the result of returning the mind to optimum operating condition.

"Unconsciousness" is the single source of aberration. There is no such action as "mental conditioning" except on a conscious training level (where it exists only with the consent of the person).

If you care to make the experiment you can take a man, render him "unconscious," hurt him and give him information. By Dianetic technique, no matter what information you gave him, it can be recovered. This experiment should not be carelessly conducted because you might also render him insane.

A pale shade of this operation can be obtained by hypnosis, either by its usual techniques or drugs. By installing "positive suggestions" in a subject, he can be made to act like an insane person. This test is not a new one. It has been well known that compulsions or repressions can be so introduced into the psyche. The ancient

20. charge: harmful energy or force accumulated and stored in the reactive mind, resulting from the conflicts and unpleasant experiences that a person has had.

80

THE REACTIVE MIND

Greek was quite familiar with it and used it to produce various delusions.

There is what is known as a "posthypnotic suggestion." An understanding of this can assist an understanding of the basic mechanism of insanity. The actions under both circumstances are not identical, but they are similar enough in their essence.

A man is placed in a hypnotic trance by standard hypnotic technique or some hypnotic drug. The operator then may say to him, "When you awaken there is something you must do. Whenever I touch my tie you will remove your coat. When I let go my tie, you will put on your coat. Now you will forget that I have told you to do this."

The subject is then awakened. He is not consciously aware of the command. If told he had been given an order while "asleep," he would resist the idea or shrug, but he would not know. The operator then touches his tie. The subject may make some remark about its being too warm and so take his coat off. The operator then releases his tie. The subject may remark that he is now cold and will put his coat back on. The operator then touches his tie. The subject may say that his coat has been to the tailor's and with much conversation finally explain why he is taking it off, perhaps to see if the back seam had been sewn properly. The operator then releases his tie and the subject says he is satisfied with the tailor and so replaces his coat. The operator may touch his tie many times and each time receive action on the part of the subject.

At last, the subject may become aware, from the expressions on people's faces, that something is

wrong. He will not know what is wrong. He will not even know that the touching of the tie is the signal which makes him take off his coat. He will begin to grow uncomfortable. He may find fault with the operator's appearance

81

L. RON HUBBARD

and begin to criticize his clothing. He still does not know the tie is a signal. He will still react and remain in ignorance that there is some strange reason he must take off his coat—all he knows is that he is uncomfortable with his coat on whenever the tie is touched, uncomfortable with his coat off every time the tie is released.

These various actions are very important to an understanding of the reactive mind. Hypnotism is a laboratory tool. It is not used to any extent in Dianetic therapy, but it has served as a means of examining minds and getting their reactions. Hypnotism is a wild variable. A few people can be hypnotized, many cannot be. Hypnotic suggestions will sometimes "take" and sometimes they won't. Sometimes they make persons well and sometimes they make them ill—the same suggestion reacting differently in different people. An engineer knows how to make use of a wild variable. There is something which makes it unpredictable. Finding out the basic reason hypnotism was a variable helped to discover the source of insanity. And understanding the mechanism of the posthypnotic suggestion can aid an understanding of aberration.

No matter how foolish a suggestion is given to a subject under hypnosis, he will carry it out one way or another. He can be told to remove his shoes or call someone at ten the following day or to eat peas for breakfast and he will. These are direct orders and he will comply with them. He can be told that his hats do not fit him and he will believe that they do not. Any suggestion will operate within his mind unbeknownst to his higher levels of awareness.

Very complex suggestions can be given. One such would be to the effect that he was unable to utter the word /. He would omit it from his conversation, using remarkable makeshifts without being "aware" that he was having to avoid the word. Or he could be told that

82

REACTIVE MIND

he must never look at his hands and he will not. These are repressions. Given to the subject when drugged or in a hypnotic sleep, these suggestions operate when he is awake. And they will continue to operate until released by the hypnotic operator.

He can be told that he has an urge to sneeze every time he hears the word rug and that he will sneeze when it is spoken. He can be told that he must jump two feet in the air every time he sees a cat and he will jump. And he will do these things after he has been awakened. These are compulsions.

He can be told that he will think very sexual thoughts about a certain girl but that when he thinks them he will feel his nose itch. He can be told that he has a continual urge to lie down and sleep and that every time he lies down he will feel that he cannot sleep. He will experience these things. These are neuroses.

In further experiments he can be told, when he is in his hypnotic "sleep," that he is the president of the country and that the secret service agents are trying to murder him. Or he can be told that he is being fed poison in every restaurant in which he attempts to eat. These are psychoses.

He can be informed that he is really another person and that he owns a yacht and answers to the name of "Sir Reginald." Or he can be told that he is a thief, that he has a prison record and that the police are looking for him. These would be schizophrenic and paranoid-schizophrenic™ insanities, respectively.

21. paranoid-schizophrenic: (psychiatry) of or concerning a mental condition resembling paranoia (form of psychosis in which a person imagines that he is being persecuted or that he is very great or important) but also characterized by autistic (concerning a state of mind characterized by daydreaming, hallucinations and disregard of external reality) behavior and gradual deterioration of the personality.

83

L. RON HUBBARD

The operator can inform the subject that the subject is the most wonderful person on Earth and that everybody thinks so. Or that the subject is the object of adoration of all women. This would be a

manz'c-type insanity.

He can be convinced, while hypnotized, that when he wakes he will feel so terrible that he will hope for nothing but death. This would be the depressive-type insanity.

He can be told that all he can think about is how sick he is and that every malady of which he reads becomes his. This would make him react like a hypochondriac.

Thus we could go down the catalog of mental ills and by concocting positive suggestions to create the state of mind, we could bring about, in the awakened subject, a semblance to every insanity.

Understood that these are semblances. They are similar to insanity in that the subject would act like an insane person. He would not be an insane person. The moment the suggestion is relieved—the subject being informed that it was a suggestion—the aberration (and all these insanities, etc., are grouped under the heading of aberration) theoretically vanishes.*

* An injunction here. These are tests. They have been made on people who could be hypnotized and people who could not be but who were drugged. They brought forth valuable data for Dianetics. They can be duplicated only when you know Dianetics, unless you want to actually drive somebody insane by accident. For these suggestions do not always vanish. Hypnotism is a wild variable. It is dangerous and belongs in the parlor in the same way you would want an atom bomb there. -LRH

22. hypochondriac: a person who continually shows unnecessary anxiety about his health.

84

THE REACTIVE MIND

The duplication of aberrations of all classes and kinds in subjects who have been hypnotized or drugged has demonstrated that there is some portion of the mind which is not in contact with the consciousness but which contains data.

It was the search for this portion of the mind which led to the resolution of the problem of insanity, psychosomatic ills and other aberrations. It was not approached through hypnotism, and hypnotism is just another tool, a tool which is of only occasional use in the practice of Dianetics and is, indeed, not needed at all.

Here we have an individual who is acting sanely, who is given a positive suggestion and who then temporarily acts insanely. His sanity is restored by the release of the suggestion into his consciousness, at which moment it loses its force upon him. But this is only a semblance of the mechanism involved. The actual insanity, one not laid now by some hypnotist, does not need to emerge into the consciousness to be released. There is this difference and others between hypnotism and the actual source of aberration; but hypnotism is a demonstration of its working parts.

Review the first example of the positive suggestion. The subject was "unconscious," which is to say, he was not in possession of complete awareness or self-determinism. He was given something he must do and the something was hidden from his consciousness. The operator gave him a signal. When the signal occurred, the subject performed an act. The subject gave reasons for the act which were not the real reasons for it. The subject found fault with the operator and the operator's clothing but did not see that it was the tie which signaled the action. The suggestion was released and the subject no longer felt a compulsion to perform the act.

These are the parts of aberration. Once one knows exactly what parts of what are aberrations, the whole

85

L. RON HUBBARD

problem is very simple. It seems incredible at first glance that the source could have remained so thoroughly hidden for so many thousands of years of research. But at second glance, it becomes a wonder that the source was ever discovered. For it is hidden cunningly and well.

"Unconsciousness" of the nonhypnotic variety is a little more rugged. It takes more than a few passes of the hand to cause "unconsciousness" of the insanity-producing variety.

The shock of accidents, the anesthetics used for operations, the pain of injuries and the deliriums of illness are the principal sources of what we call "unconsciousness."

The mechanism, in our analogue²³ of the mind, is very simple. In comes a destructive wave of physical pain or a pervading poison such as ether²⁴ and out go some or all of the fuses of the analytical mind. When it goes out, so go what we know as the standard memory banks.

The periods of "unconsciousness" are blanks in the standard memory banks. These missing periods make up what Dianetics calls the reactive mind bank.

The times when the analytical mind is in full operation plus the times when the reactive mind is in operation are a continuous line of consecutive recording for the entire period of life.

During the periods when the analytical mind is cut out of circuit in full or in part, the reactive mind cuts in, in full or in part. In other words, if the analytical mind is unfused so that it is half out of circuit, the reactive mind is half in circuit. No such sharp percentages

23. analogue: thing or part that is similar or comparable in certain respects.

24. ether: a drug used to produce anesthesia, as before surgery.

86

THE REACTIVE MIND

are actually possible, but this is to give an approximation.

When the individual is "unconscious" in full or in part, the reactive mind is cut in, in full or in part. When he is fully conscious, his analytical mind is fully in command of the organism. When his consciousness is reduced, the reactive mind is cut into the circuit just that much.

The moments which contain "unconsciousness" in the individual are contrasurvival moments, by and large. Therefore it is vital that something take over so that the individual can go through motions to save the whole organism. The fighter who fights half out on his feet, the burned man who drags himself out of the fire—these are cases when the reactive mind is valuable.

The reactive mind is very rugged. It would have to be in order to stand up to the pain waves which knock out other sentience in the body. It is not very refined. But it is most awesomely accurate. It possesses a low order of computing ability, an order which is submoron, but one would expect a low order of ability from a mind which stays in circuit when the body is being crushed or fried.

The reactive bank does not store memories as we think of them. It stores engrams.* These engrams are a complete recording, down to the last accurate detail, of every perception present in a moment of partial or full "unconsciousness." They are just as accurate as any other recording in the body. But they have their own force. They are like phonograph records or motion pictures, if these contained all perceptions of sight, sound, smell, taste, organic sensation, etc.

* The word engram, in Dianetics is used in its severely accurate sense as a "definite and permanent trace left by a stimulus on the protoplasm of a tissue." It is considered as a unit group of stimuli impinged solely on the cellular being. — LRH

87

L. RON HUBBARD

The difference between an engram and a memory, however, is quite distinct. An engram can be permanently fused into any and all body circuits and behaves like an entity.

In all laboratory tests on these engrams they were found to possess "inexhaustible" sources of power to command the body. No matter how many times one was reactivated in an individual, it was still powerful. Indeed, it became even more able to exert its power in proportion to its reactivation.

The only thing which could even begin to shake these engrams was the technique which developed into Dianetic therapy, which will be covered in full in the third section of this volume.

This is an example of an engram: A woman is knocked down by a blow. She is rendered "unconscious." She is kicked and told she is a faker, that she is no good, that she is always changing her mind. A chair is overturned in the process. A faucet is running in the kitchen. A car is passing in the street outside. The engram contains a running record of all these perceptions: sight, sound, tactile, taste, smell, organic sensation, kinetic sense, joint position, thirst record, etc. The engram would consist of the whole statement made to her when she was "unconscious": the voice tones and emotion in the voice, the sound and feel of the original and later blows, the tactile of the floor, the feel and sound of the chair overturning, the organic sensation of the blow, perhaps the taste of blood in her mouth or any other taste present there, the smell of the person attacking her and the smells in the room, the sound of the passing car's motor and tires, etc.

These would all be considered something on the order of a "positive suggestion." But there is something else here which is new, something which is not in the standard banks except by context: pain and painful emotion.

THE REACTIVE MIND

These things are what make the difference between the standard banks and the reactive engram banks: physical pain and painful emotion. Physical pain and painful emotion are the difference between an engram, which is the cause of aberration—all aberration—and a memory.*

We all have heard that bad experience is helpful to living and that without bad experience, man never learns. This may be very, very true. But it doesn't embrace the engram. That isn't experience. That is commanded action.

Perhaps before man had a large vocabulary, these engrams were of some use to him. They were survival in ways which will be developed later. But when man acquired a fine, homonymic (words that sound the same but mean different things) language, and indeed, when he acquired any language, these engrams were much more a liability than a help. And now, with man well evolved, these engrams do not protect him at all but make him mad, inefficient and ill.

The proof of any assertion lies in its applicability. When these engrams are deleted from the reactive mind bank, rationality and efficiency are enormously heightened, health is greatly increased and the individual computes rationally on the survival conduct pattern, which is to say, he enjoys himself and the society of those around him and is constructive and creative. He is destructive only when something actually threatens the sphere of his dynamics.

These engrams, then, are entirely negative in value

* In Dianetics, a memory is considered to be any concept of perceptions stored in the standard memory banks which is potentially recallable by the "I." A scene beheld by the eyes and perceived by the other senses becomes a record in the standard memory banks and later may be recalled by "I" for reference.
—LRH

89

L. RON HUBBARD

in this stage of man's development. When he was nearer the level of his animal cousins (who have, all of them, reactive minds of this same kind), he might have had use for the data. But language and his changed existence make any engram a distinct liability, and no engram has any constructive value.

The reactive mind was provided to secure survival. It still pretends to act in that fashion. But its wild errors now lead only in the other direction.

There are actually three kinds of engrams, all of them aberrative: First is the contrasurvival engram. This contains physical pain, painful emotion, all other perceptions and menace to the organism. A child knocked out by a rapist and abused receives this type of engram. The contrasurvival engram contains apparent or actual antagonism to the organism.

The second engram type is the prosurvival engram. A child who has been abused is ill. He is told, while he is partially or wholly "unconscious," that he will be taken care of, that he is dearly loved, etc. This engram is not taken as contrasurvival but prosurvival. It seems to be in favor of survival. Of the two this last is the most aberrative since it is reinforced by the law of affinity which is always more powerful than fear. Hypnotism preys on this characteristic of the reactive mind, being a sympathetic address to an artificially unconscious subject. Hypnotism is as limited as it is because it does not contain, as a factor, physical pain and painful emotion: things which keep an engram out of sight and moored²⁵ below the level of "consciousness."

The third is the painful emotion engram which is similar to the other engrams. It is caused by the shock of sudden loss, such as the death of a loved one.

The reactive mind bank is composed exclusively of

25. moored: fixed firmly; secured.

90

THE. REACTIVE MIND

these engrams. The reactive mind thinks exclusively with these engrams. And it "thinks" with them in a way which would make Korzybski²⁶ swear, for it thinks in terms of full identification, which is to say identities, one thing identical to another.

If the analytical mind did a computation on apples and worms, it could be stated, probably, as follows: some apples have worms in them, others don't; when biting an apple one occasionally finds a worm unless the apple has been sprayed properly; worms in apples leave holes.

The reactive mind, however, doing a computation on apples and worms as contained in its engram bank, would calculate as follows: apples are worms are bites are holes in apples are holes in anything are apples and always are worms are apples are bites, etc.

The analytical mind's computations might embrace the most staggering summations of calculus,²⁷ the shifty turns of symbolic logic,²⁸ the computations requisite to bridge-building or dressmaking. Any mathematical equation ever seen came from the analytical mind and might be used by the analytical mind in resolving the most routine problems.

But not the reactive mind! That's so beautifully,

26. Korzybski: Alfred Korzybski (1879-1950), American scientist and writer; developed the subject of

general semantics, a methodology that attempts to improve human behavior through a critical use of words and symbols.

27. calculus: (mathematics) a method of calculation in higher mathematics; a way of making calculations about quantities which are continually changing, such as the speed of a falling stone or the slope of a curved line. Calculus measures little bits of things in order to find out what the whole thing will do. That is the whole theory of calculus.

28. symbolic logic: a modern type of formal logic using special mathematical symbols to stand for propositions and for the relationships among propositions.

91

L. RON HUBBARD

wonderfully simple that it can be stated, in operation, to have just one equation: $A = A = A = A = A$.

Start any computation with the reactive mind. Start it with the data it contains, of course. Any datum is just the same to it as any other datum in the same experience.

An analytical computation done on the woman being kicked, as mentioned, would be that women get themselves into situations sometimes when they get kicked and hurt and men have been known to kick and hurt women.

A reactive mind computation about this engram, as an engram, would be: the pain of the kick equals the pain of the blow equals the overturning chair equals the passing car equals the faucet equals the fact that she is a faker equals the fact that she is no good equals the fact that she changes her mind equals the voice tones of the man equals the emotion equals a faker equals a faucet running equals the pain of the kick equals organic sensation in the area of the kick equals the overturning chair equals changing one's mind equals . . . But why continue? Every single perception in this engram equals every other perception in this engram. What? That's crazy? Precisely!

Let us further examine our posthypnotic positive suggestion of the touched tie and the removed coat. In

this we have the visible factors of how the reactive mind operates.

This posthypnotic suggestion needs only an emotional charge and physical pain to make it a dangerous engram. Actually it is an engram of a sort. It is laid in by sympathy between the operator and subject, which would make it a sympathy engram—prosurvival.

Now, we know that the operator had only to touch his tie to make the awakened subject remove his coat. The subject did not know what it was which caused him

92

THE REACTIVE MIND

to remove his coat and found all manner of explanation for the action, none of which was the right one. The engram, the posthypnotic suggestion in this case, was actually placed in the reactive mind bank. It was below the level of consciousness, it was compulsion springing from below the level of consciousness. And it worked upon the muscles to make the subject remove his coat. It was data fused into the circuits of the body below the command level of the analytical mind and operated not only upon the body but also upon the analytical mind itself.

If this subject took off his coat every time he saw somebody touch a necktie, society would account him slightly mad. And yet there was no power of consent about this. If he had attempted to thwart the operator by refusing to remove the coat, the subject would have experienced great discomfort of one sort or another.

Let us now take an example of the reactive mind's processes in a lower echelon of life: A fish swims into the shallows where the water is brackish,²⁹ yellow and tastes of iron. He has just taken a mouthful of shrimp when a bigger fish rushes at him and knocks against his tail.

The small fish manages to get away but he has been physically hurt. Having negligible analytical powers, the small fish depends upon reaction for much of his choice of activity.

Now he heals his tail and goes on about his affairs. But one day he is attacked by a larger fish and gets

his tail bumped. This time he is not seriously hurt, merely bumped. But something has happened. Something within him considers that in his choice of action he is now being careless. Here is a second injury in the same area.

29. brackish: somewhat salty, as the water of some marshes near the sea.

93

L. RON HUBBARD

The computation on the fish reactive level was: shallows equals brackish equals yellow equals iron taste equals pain in tail equals shrimp in mouth, and any one of these equals any other.

The bump in the tail on the second occasion keyed in¹⁰ the engram. It demonstrated to the organism that something like the first accident (identity thought) could happen again. Therefore beware!

The small fish, after this, swims into brackish water. This makes him slightly "nervous." But he goes on swimming and finds himself in yellow and brackish water. And still he does not turn back. He begins to get a small pain in his tail. But he keeps on swimming. Suddenly he gets a taste of iron and the pain in his tail turns on heavily. And away he goes like a flash. No fish was after him.

There were shrimp to be had there. But away he went anyway.

Dangerous place! And if he had not turned away, he would have really gotten himself a pain in the tail.

The mechanism is survival activity of a sort. In a fish it may serve a purpose. But in a man, who takes off a coat every time somebody touches a tie, the survival mechanism has long outlived its time. But it is there!

Let us further investigate our young man and the coat. The signal for the coat removal was very precise. The operator touched his tie. This is equivalent to any or all of the perceptions the fish received and

which made the fish turn back. The touch of the tie could have been a dozen things. Any one of the dozen might have signaled the removal of the coat.

30. key in: make active. A key-in is a moment when the environment around the awake but fatigued or distressed individual is itself similar to the dormant (inactive) engram. At that moment the engram becomes active.

94

THE REACTIVE MIND

In the case of the woman who was knocked out and kicked, any perception in the engram she received has some quality of restimulation.[^] Running water from a faucet might not have affected her greatly. But water running from a faucet plus a passing car might have begun some slight reactivation of the engram, a vague discomfort in the areas where she was struck and kicked, not enough yet to cause her real pain, but there all the same. To the running water and the passing car we add the sharp falling of a chair and she experiences a shock of mild proportion. Add now the smell and voice of the man who kicked her and the pain begins to grow. The mechanism is telling her that she is in dangerous quarters, that she should leave. But she is not a fish, she is a highly sentient being, to our knowledge the most complex mental structure so far evolved on Earth—organism of the species, man. There are many other factors in the problem than this one engram. She stays. The pains in the areas where she was abused become a predisposition³² to illness or are chronic illness in themselves, minor, it is true, in the case of this one incident, but illness just the same. Her affinity with the man who beat her may be so high that the analytical level, being assisted by a normally high general tone, may counter against these pains. But if that level is low, without much to assist it, then the pains can become major.

The fish that was so struck and received an engram did not disavow³³ shrimp. Shrimp might have made him

31. restimulation: the reactivation of a past memory due to similar circumstances in the present approximating circumstances of the past.

32. predisposition: a state of mind or body that renders a person liable to act or behave in a certain way or to be subject to certain diseases.

33. disavow: deny any knowledge or approval of, or responsibility for; disclaim; disown.

95

L. RON HUBBARD

a little less enthusiastic afterwards, but the survival potential of shrimp eating made shrimp equal far more pleasure than it did pain.

A pleasant and hopeful life in general—and never think we intimate that the woman stays for food alone, whatever the wits³⁴ say about women—has a high survival potential, and that can overcome a very great deal of pain. As the survival potential diminishes, however, the level of pain (zone 0 and zone 1) is more closely approached and such an engram could begin to be reactivated severely.

There is another factor here, however, besides pain—in fact, several more factors. If the young man with the detachable coat had been given one of the neurotic positive suggestions as listed a few pages back, he would have reacted to it on signal.

The engram this woman has received contains a neurotic positive suggestion quite in addition to the general restimulators,³⁵ such as the faucet and the car and the overturning chair. She has been told that she is a faker, that she is no good and that she is always changing her mind. When the engram is restimulated in one of the great many ways possible, she has a "feeling" that she is no good, a faker and she will change her mind.

There are several cases to hand which peculiarly illustrate the sadness of this. One case in particular which was cleared had been beaten severely many times and told a similar thing each time, all derogatory. The content inferred that she was very loose morally and

34. wits: persons characterized by the ability to make lively, clever remarks in a sharp, amusing way.

35. restimulators: approximations of the reactive mind's content or some part thereof continually perceived in the environment of the organism.

THE REACTIVE MIND

would cohabit³⁶ with anyone. She was brought in as a case by her father—she had since been divorced—who complained that she was very loose morally and had cohabited with several men in as many weeks. She herself admitted that she was, she could not see how it could be and it worried her, but she just "could not seem to help it." Examination of the engrams in her reactive mind bank brought forth a long series of beatings with this content. Because this was a matter of research, not treatment—although that was given—her former husband was contacted. An examination, independent of her knowledge, demonstrated his rage dramatization³⁷ to contain these very words. He had beaten his wife into being a morally loose woman because he was afraid of morally loose women.

All cases examined in all this research were checked, the patient's engrams against the engrams in the donor. The contents of the incidents were verified wherever possible and were found uniformly to agree. Every safeguard was made to prevent any other method of communication between donor and patient. Everything found in the "unconscious" periods of every patient, when checked against other sources, was found to be exact.

The analogy between hypnotism and aberration bears out well. Hypnotism plants by positive suggestion one or another form of insanity. It is usually a temporary planting, but sometimes the hypnotic suggestion will not

36. cohabit: live together in a sexual relationship when not legally married.

37. dramatization: the duplication of an engramic content, entire or in part, by an aberrant in his present time environment. Aberrated conduct is entirely dramatization. The degree of dramatization is in direct ratio to the degree of restimulation of the engrams causing it. When dramatizing, the individual is like an actor playing his dictated part and going through a whole series of irrational actions.

"lift" or remove in a way desirable to the hypnotist. The danger of running experiments with hypnosis on uncleared patients is found in another mechanism of the reactive mind.

When an engram such as our example above exists, the woman obviously was "unconscious" at the time she received the engram. She had no standard bank memory (record) of the incident beyond the knowledge that she had been knocked out by the man. The engram was not, then, an experience as we understand the word. It could work from below to aberrate her thinking processes, it could give her strange pains—which she attributed to something else—in the areas injured. But it was not known to her.

The key-in was necessary to activate the engram. But what, precisely, could key it in? At some later time when she was tired the man threatened to strike her again and called her names. This was conscious level experience. It was found to be "mentally painful" by her. And it was "mentally painful" only because there was real, live, physical pain unseen under it which had been "keyed in" by the conscious experience. The second experience was a lock.TM It was a memory but it had a new kind of action in the standard banks. It had too much power and it gained that power from a past physical blow. The reactive mind is not too careful about its time clock. It can't tell one year old from ninety, in fact, when a key-in begins. The actual en-gram moved up under the standard bank.

She thinks she is worried about what he said in the lock experience. She is actually worried about the

38. lock: an analytical moment in which the perceptics of the engram are approximated, thus restimulating the engram or bringing it into action, the present time perceptics being erroneously interpreted by the reactive mind to mean that the same condition which produced physical pain once before is now again at hand.

98

THE REACTIVE MIND

engram. In this way memories become "painful." But pain doesn't store in the standard banks. There is no place in that bank for pain. None. There is a place for the concept of pain and these concepts of what is painful are good enough to keep the sentient organism called man away from all the pain he believes is actually dangerous. In a Clear there are no pain-inducing memories because there is no physical pain record left to ruin the machinery from the reactive mind bank.

The young man with the detachable coat did not know what was worrying him or what made him do what he did. The person with an engram does not know what is worrying him. He thinks it is the lock, and the lock may be a very long way removed from anything resembling the engram. The lock may have similar perceptic content. But it may be on another subject entirely.

It is not very complicated to understand what these engrams do. They are simply moments of physical pain strong enough to throw part or all the analytical machinery out of circuit; they are antagonism to the survival of the organism or pretended sympathy to the organism's survival. That is the entire definition. Great or little "unconsciousness," physical pain, perceptic content and contrasurvival or prosurvival data. They are handled by the reactive mind, which thinks exclusively in identities of everything equals everything. And they enforce their commands upon the organism by wielding the whip of physical pain. If the organism does not do exactly as they say (and believe any Clear, that's impossible!), the physical pain turns on. They steer a person like a keeper steers a tiger—and they can make a tiger out of a man in the process without much trouble, and give him mange³⁹ into the bargain.

39. mange: a skin disease affecting hairy animals, caused by a parasite and characterized by intense itching, scabs and loss of hair.

99

L. RON HUBBARD

If man had not invented language, or, as will be demonstrated, if his languages were a little less homo-nymic and more specific with their personal pronouns, engrams would still be survival data and the mechanism would work. But man has outgrown their use. He chose between language and potential madness and for the vast benefits of the former he received the curse of the latter.

The engram is the single and sole source of aberration and psychosomatic illness.

An enormous quantity of data has been sifted. Not one single exception has been found. In "normal people," in the neurotic and insane, the removal of these engrams wholly or in part, without other therapy, has uniformly brought about a state greatly superior to the current norm. No need was found for any theory or therapy other than those given in this book for the treatment of all psychic or psychosomatic ills.

100

CHAPTER THREE

The Cell and the Organism

The reason the engram so long remained hidden as the single source of aberration and psychosomatic ills is the wide and almost infinitely complex manifestations which can derive from simple engrams.

Several theories could be postulated as to why the human mind evolved exactly as it did, but these are theories, and Dianetics is not concerned with structure. A comment or two as a stimulation to future workers in that field might be made, however, wholly as a postulate, that there is a definite connection between any electriclike energy in the body and the energy effusion¹ of cells undergoing injury. A theory could be constructed along the lines that injured cells, further injuring their neighbors by a discharge of electriclike energy, forced the development of a special cell which would act as a conduit to "bleed off" this painful charge. The conduits of cells might have become neurons² and the charge might have been better distributed so through the body with less likelihood of local incapacitation at the point of the injury impact. These conduits-neurons—might have been started in formation by impacts at the extremity of the body toward the direction of locomotion. This would make the skull the greatest mass of neurons. Man, walking upright, might have had another new point of impact, the forehead, and so gained his prefrontal lobes. And maybe not. That is

1. effusion: a pouring forth.

2. neurons: the main units that make up the nerves. They consist of cell bodies with threadlike parts that carry signals to and from the cells.

101

L. RON HUBBARD

just theory, with only a few data to support it which have a scientific value. And it has not been subjected to experiment of any kind whatever.

This much, however, has to be advanced as theory on structure. The cell is one of the basic building blocks of the body. Cells, the better to survive, seem to have become colonies which, in turn, had the primary interest, survival. And the colonies developed or recruited into aggregations which in turn were organisms, also with the sole purpose of survival. And the organisms developed minds to coordinate the muscles and resolve the problems of survival. Again, this is still theory, and even if it was the track of reasoning which led toward Dianetics, it can be completely wrong. It works. It can be pulled away from Dianetics and Dianetics will remain a science and go on working. The concept of the electronic brain was not vital but only useful to Dianetics and it could be swept away as well—Dianetics would still stand. A science is a changing affair as far as its internal theory goes. In Dianetics we have our wedge into an enormous scope of research. As Dianetics stands, it works and it works every time and without exception. The reasons why it works will undoubtedly be mulled over and changed here and there to its betterment—if they aren't, an abiding faith in this generation of scientists and the future generations will not have been justified.

Why we talk about cells will become apparent as we progress. The reason we know that past concepts of structure are not correct is because they don't work as function. All our facts are functional and these facts are scientific facts, supported wholly and completely by laboratory evidence. Function precedes structure. James Clerk Maxwell's³ mathematics were postulated

3. James Clerk Maxwell: (1831-1879) Scottish physicist, responsible for the theory that electricity and light are the same in their fundamental nature.

102

THE CELL AND THE ORGANISM

and electricity was widely and beneficially used long before anyone had any real idea about the structure of the atom. Function always comes before structure. The astounding lack of progress in the field of the human mind during the past thousands of years is partly attributable to its "organ of thought" lying within a field, medicine, which was and long may be an art, not a science. Basic philosophy to explain life will have to come before that art makes much further progress.

What the capabilities of the cell are, for instance, have been but poorly studied. Some work has been carried on in recent years to find out more, but basic philosophy was absent. The cell was being

observed, not predicted.

The studies of cells in man have been largely done from dead tissue. An unknown quality is missing from dead tissue, the important quality—life.

In Dianetics, on the level of laboratory observation, we discover much to our astonishment that cells are evidently sentient in some currently inexplicable way. Unless we postulate a human soul entering the sperm and ovum at conception, there are things which no other postulate will embrace than that these cells are in some way sentient. Entering a new field with postulates which work in all directions—and the basic philosophy of survival is a pilot which leads us on and on into further and further realms, explaining and predicting phenomena on every hand—it is inevitable that data will turn up which does not agree with past theory. When that data is as scientific as the observation that when an apple is dropped under usual conditions on Earth it falls, one cannot help but accept it. Abandoning past theories may do damage to treasured beliefs and one's nostalgic love of the old school tie,⁴ but a fact is a fact.

4. school tie: a necktie striped in the colors of a specific English public school, especially as worn by a graduate to indicate his educational background.

103

L. RON HUBBARD

The cells as thought units evidently have an influence, as cells, upon the body as a thought unit and an organism. We do not have to untangle this structural problem to resolve our functional postulates. The cells evidently retain engrams of painful events. After all, they are the things which get injured. And they evidently retain a whip hand⁵ of punishment for every time the analyzer fails them. The story of the engram seems to be a story of a battle between the troops and the general, every time the general gets some of the troops killed off. The less fortunate this general is in protecting these troops, the more power the troops assume. The cells evidently pushed the brain on an upward evolution toward higher sentience. Pain reverses the process as though the cells were sorry they had put so much power in the hands of a central commander.

The reactive mind may very well be the combined cellular intelligence. One need not assume that it is, but it is a handy structural theory in the lack of any real work done in this field of structure. The reactive en-gram bank may be material stored in the cells themselves. It does not matter whether this is credible or incredible just now. Something has to be said about it to give one a mental hold on what happens during moments of "unconsciousness."

The scientific fact, observed and tested, is that the organism, in the presence of physical pain, lets the analyzer get knocked out of circuit so that there is a limited quantity or no quantity at all of personal awareness as a unit organism. It does this either to protect the analyzer or to withdraw its power in the belief that an engram is best in an emergency—with which the analyzer, by the way, on observed experience, does not agree.

5. whip hand: the position of advantage or control.

104

THE CELL AND THE ORGANISM

Every percept present, including physical pain, is recorded during these nonanalytical moments. Whenever pain is present—physical pain, that is—the analyzer gets shut down to a small or large extent. If the duration of the pain is only an instant, there is still an instant there of analytical reduction. This can be proven very easily—just try to recall the last time you were seriously hurt and see if there isn't at least a momentary blank period. Going to sleep under anesthetic and waking up some time later is a more complicated sort of shutdown in that it includes physical pain but is initially caused by a poison (and all anesthetics are poisons, technically). Then there is the condition of suffocating, as in drowning, and this is a shut-down period to greater or lesser extent. And there is the condition caused by blood, for one cause or another, leaving the area or areas which contain analytical power—wherever they are—and this again causes a greater or lesser degree of analytical shutdown: such incidents include shock (in which the blood tends to lake in the center of the body), the loss of blood by surgery or injury or anemia,⁶ and the closing of the arteries leading through the throat. Natural sleep causes a reduction of analytical activity but is actually not very deep or serious; by Dianetic therapy any experience occurring during sleep can be recovered with ease.

It can now be seen that there are many ways in which analytical power can be shut down. And it can be seen that there is greater or lesser reduction. When one burns one's finger with a cigarette, there is a small instant of pain and a small amount of reduction. When one undergoes an operation, the duration may be in terms of hours and the amount of shutdown may be

6. anemia: a deficiency in the oxygen-carrying material of the blood resulting in a paleness, generalized weakness, etc. _>-

105

L. RON HUBBARD

extreme. The duration and the amount of reduction are two different things, related but quite dissimilar. This is not so very important but it is mentioned.

We have seen, reading in Dianetics this far, that the principle of the spectrum has been quite useful to us. And it can be seen that the amount of reduction in analytical power can be described in the same way that survival potential can be described. There can be a very little bit and there can be a very great deal. Going back and taking a look at the survival potential range, one can see that there would be death at the bottom and immortality at the top. There is "infinite" survival. Whether or not there can be infinite analytical power is a matter of mysticism. But that there is a definite relationship between individual tone and the amount of analytical shutdown is a scientific fact. Put it this way: with the individual well and happy and enthusiastic, analytical power can be considered to be high (zones 3 and 4). With the individual under the wheels of a truck, "unconscious" and in agony, the analytical power may be considered to be ranging in zone 0. There is a ratio between potential survival and analytical power. As one goes down, so does the other. There is more data to be concluded from this than one would think at first glance. It is a very important ratio.

All the percepts are included in an engram. Two of these percepts are physical pain and painful emotion. A third is organic sensation, which is to say, the condition of the organism during the moment of the engram. And how was the organism when the engram was received? Greater or lesser "unconsciousness" was present. This meant that there was an organic sensation of reduced analytical power, since analytical power derives, evidently, from an organ or organs in the body. If an engram is reactivated by a restimulator or restimulators—that is to say, if the individual with an engram receives something

106

THE CELL AND THE ORGANISM

in his environment similar to the perceptions in the engram—the engram puts everything it contains, its percepts such as faucets and words, into greater or lesser operation.

There can be greater or lesser restimulation. An engram can be put into force just a little bit by restimulators in the environment of the individual or, with many restimulators present and the body in an already reduced state, the engram can go into a full-force display (which is covered later). But whether the engram is slightly restimulated or greatly restimulated, everything in it goes into effect one way or another.

There is just one common denominator of all engrams, just one thing which every engram has and which is possessed by every other engram. Each contains the datum that the analyzer is more or less shut down. There is a shut-down datum in every engram. Therefore, every time an engram is restimulated, even though physical pain has not been received by the body, some analytical power turns off; the organ or organs which are the analyzer are fused out of circuit in some degree.

This is highly important to an understanding of the mechanics of aberration. It is a scientific fact, susceptible of proof, and it never varies. This always happens: when an engram is received, the analyzer is shut down by the physical pain and emotion; when the engram is restimulated, the analyzer shuts down as part of the commands of the engram. Actually, this is a very mechanical thing. Engram is restimulated, part of the analytical power is shut down. This is as inevitable as turning on and off an electric light. Pull the cord and the light goes off. The reduction of the analyzer is not that sharp—there are grades of light—but it is just as mechanical.

Put a man under ether, hurt him in the chest. He has

107

L. RON HUBBARD

received an engram because his analytical power was turned off first by ether and then by a chest pain. While he was there on the operating table, the reactive mind recorded the click of instruments, everything said, all sounds and smells. Let us suppose that a nurse was holding one of his feet because he was kicking. This is a complete engram.

The engram will be keyed in by something in the future, a similar incident. After this, in greater or lesser degree, whenever he hears clicks like instrument clicks he gets nervous. If he pays attention to what is happening in his body at that minute, he may find that his foot feels slightly as if it were being held. But he is not likely to give any attention to his foot because if he had any attention to give, the chest pain would be found present in some degree. But his analytical ability has been turned off slightly. As the foot felt it

was being held, so does the analyzer have the conception of being shut down by ether and pain. The restimulator (the clicking) tended to bring the whole engram slightly into being and part of the engram command is a reduced analytical power.

This is "push button" in its precision. If one knew another's main restimulators (words, voice tones, music, whatever they are—things which are filed in the reactive mind bank as parts of engrams), one could turn another's analytical power almost completely off, actually render him unconscious.

We all know people who make us feel stupid. There can be two causes for that but both of them are from engrams and one of them is the fact that, no matter what engram is brought into restimulation, part of the analytical power is turned off.

Engrams can, if environment is uniform, be held in chronic restimulation! This means a chronic, partial shutdown of analytical power. The recovery of intelligence by

108

THE CELL AND THE ORGANISM

a Clear and the rise of that intelligence to such fantastic heights results in part from the relief of word commands in engrams that he is stupid and in a larger part from the relief of this chronic shut-down condition.

This is not theory. This is scientific fact. It is strictly test tube. The engram contains the percept of a shut-down analyzer; when it is restimulated the engram puts that datum back into force in some degree.

Engrams, then, being received in "unconsciousness" cause a partial "unconsciousness" to exist every time they are restimulated. The person who has an engram (any aberree) need not receive new physical pain to have a new moment of partial "unconsciousness" take place. Feeling "dopey" or "sleepy" or "dull" results in part from a partially shut-down analyzer. Being "nervous" or in a rage or frightened also carries with it partially shut-off analytical power.

The hypnotist has "success" where he does because he is able, by talking to people about "sleep," to put

into restimulation some engram which contains the word sleep and shut-down analytical power. This is one of the reasons hypnotism "works."

The whole society, however, is liable to analytical shutdown in greater or lesser degree by the restimulation of engrams.

The number of engrams a person's reactive bank contains may not, however, establish the amount of analytical reduction to which he is subjected. A person may have engrams and they may not have been keyed in. And if they have been keyed in, he might not be in an environment which contains any great number of res-timulators. Under these conditions his survival zone position may be high even though he is possessed of a great many engrams. And again, he might have educated

7. *dopey*: tired, sleepy, foggy (as though doped).

109

L. RON HUBBARD

himself over and above these engrams to some slight degree.

But a person who has keyed-in engrams and does exist in the area of many restimulators is liable to an enormous amount of restimulation and analytical shutdown. This is a normal condition. If a person has a large number of engrams, and they are keyed in, and he lives around many restimulators, his condition can vary from normal to insane. And in a single day—as in the case of a man who experiences moments of rage or a woman who drops into apathies—the condition of a person may vary from normal to insane and back to normal. We take here the word insane to mean utter irrationality. So there is temporary or chronic insanity.

The court of law which goes through the lugubrious⁸ process of having a man pronounced sane or insane after that man has murdered somebody is itself being irrational. Of course the man was insane when he committed the murder. What the court is asking now is whether or not the man is chronically insane. This has little bearing on the matter. If a man has gone insane enough to murder once, he will go insane enough in the future to murder again. Chronic, then, means either a chronic cycle or a continuous condition. The law says sanity is the "ability to tell right from wrong." When man is subject to a mechanism (and all men are) which lets him be rational one minute and restimulated the next, none in the

society, if uncleared, can be considered able to always tell right from wrong. This is completely aside from what the law means by right and what it means by wrong.

This is an example of the roller-coaster sanity curve of the aberree. All aberrees possess engrams (the

8. lugubrious: very sad or mournful, especially in a way that seems exaggerated or ridiculous.

110

THE CELL AND THE ORGANISM

normal number is probably in the hundreds per individual). Analytically, people have a wide latitude⁹ of choice and they can deal even with philosophic rights and wrongs. But in aberrated persons the engram bank is always susceptible of restimulation. The "sanest" aber-ree of Tuesday may be a murderer on Wednesday if the exactly right situation occurs to trip the exact engram. A Clear is not entirely predictable in any given situation—he has such a wide power of choice. But an aberrated person transcends¹⁰ all predictability for the following reasons: (1) what engrams an aberree has in his reactive engram bank none know including himself; (2) what situation will contain what restimulators is a matter of chance; and (3) what his power of choice will be with the factors in the engrams on a reactive level cannot be established.

The variety of conduct which one can evolve out of these basic mechanics is so wide that it is no wonder that man was considered to be a rather hopeless case by some philosophies.

The cells, if the engram bank is retained on a cellular level, might be theoretically supposed to have made sure that the analyzer did not get too adventurous in this life-and-death matter of living. They therefore could be considered to have copied down all data contained in every moment of physical pain and emotion' resulting in or contained in "unconsciousness." Then when any data similar to this appeared in the environment they could be wary and, with a large number of restimulators in sight, they could be considered to shut down the analyzer and proceed on reaction. This has a crude safety factor. Obviously, if the organism survived

9. latitude: freedom from narrow restrictions; freedom of opinion, conduct or action.

10. transcends: goes beyond the limits of; oversteps; exceeds.

L. RON HUBBARD

through one period of "unconsciousness," it could be theorized by the cells that the placing of the data and action in effect under circumstances which threatened to be similar would result once more in survival. What's good enough for Grandpa is good enough for me. What was good enough in the bus accident is good enough in a bus.

This moronic "thinking" is typical of the reactive mind. It is just the sort of thinking it does. It is the ultimate in conservatism. It misses the point and important data at every turn, it overloads the body with pain, it is a whirlpool of confusion. If there were just one engram per situation, maybe it would get by. But there may be ten engrams with similar data in them (an engram lock chain") and yet the data may be so contradictory that when a new emergency arises which contains the restimulators of the chain, no proper past conduct can be put forth to meet it.

Obviously the x factor is language. The cells, if this is a problem in cells (for recall, this part is theory based on data in an effort to explain what happens, and a theory can be altered without altering the scientific usefulness of the facts), probably do not understand languages very well. If they did they wouldn't evolve such "solutions."

Take two engrams about baseball bats. In the first, the individual is hit on the head and knocked out and somebody yells, "Run! Run! Run!" In the second, the individual is knocked out by the bat in the same environment and somebody yells, "Stay there! You're safe!" Now, what does he do when he hears a baseball bat or smells one or sees one or hears these words? Run or stay there? He has a similar pain for each action.

11. chain: a series of incidents of similar nature or similar subject matter.

112

THE CELL AND THE ORGANISM

What actually happens? He gets a headache. This is that thing called conflict. This is anxiety. And anxiety can become very acute indeed on a purely mechanical level when one has ninety engrams pulling him south and eighty-nine pulling him north. Does he go north or south? Or does he have a "nervous breakdown"?

The level of brilliance of the reactive mind is about the same as a phonograph. The needle gets put on the record and the record plays. The reactive mind merely puts on the needle. When it tries to select several records out and play them all at once, things happen.

By intentional construction or accident in design or bypass in evolution—where the old, useless organ is still built—the cells managed to hide this engram bank fairly well. Man is conscious in his analytical mind. When he is "unconscious," his analytical mind is unable to monitor the incoming data and the data is not to be found in the thing we call, by analogue, the standard banks. Therefore, whatever came in passed by consciousness. And having passed by, consciousness cannot (without Dianetic process) recall it, since there is no channel for recall.

The engram enters when consciousness is absent. It thereafter operates directly into the organism. Only by Dianetic therapy can the analyzer come into possession of this data (and the removal of it does not depend upon the analyzer contacting it at all, despite an old belief that the "realization" of something cures it: "realize" an engram and one is in quick trouble, without Dianetic technique). The engram is received by the cellular body. The reactive mind could be the very lowest level of analytical power, of course, but this does not alter the scientific fact that the engram acts as if it were a soldered-in connection to the life function regulator and the organic coordination and the basic level of the analytical mind itself. By soldered-in is meant "permanent

113

L. RON HUBBARD

connection." This keying-in is the hookup of the en-gram as part of the operating machinery of the body. An analytical thought process is not permanently hooked in but can be thrown in and out of circuit at the will of the analyzer. This is not true of the engram. Thus the term, soldered-in.

The analytical mind lays down a training pattern; on a stimulus-response basis, this training pattern will work smoothly and well whenever it will do the organism the most good. An engram is a training pattern, all complete in a package, "permanently" hooked into the circuits (without Dianetic therapy) and it goes

into operation like a training pattern without any consent whatever from the analyzer.

Influenced itself by the engram in the several ways of reduced analytical power and positive suggestion in the engram, the analytical mind is unable to discover any truly valid reason for the conduct of the organism. It therefore makes up a reason, for its job is to make sure the organism is always right. Just as the young man with the detachable coat gave forth a number of silly explanations as to why he was detaching his coat, so does the analytical mind—observing the body engaged in irrational actions, including speech, for which there seems to be no accounting—justify the actions. The engram can dictate all the various processes incident to living; it can dictate beliefs, opinions, thought processes or lack of them and actions of all kinds, and can establish conditions remarkable for their complexity as well as their stupidity. An engram can dictate anything it contains and engrams can contain all the combinations of words in the entire language. And the analytical mind is forced, in the light of irrational behavior or conviction, to justify the acts and conditions of the organism, as well as its own strange blunders. This is justified thought.

114

THE CELL AND THE ORGANISM

There are three kinds of thought, then, of which the organism is capable: (a) analytical thought, which is rational as modified by education and viewpoint; (b) justified thought, analytical thought attempting to explain reactions; and (c) reactive thought, which is wholly in terms of everything in an engram equals everything in an engram equals all the restimulators in the environment and all things associated with those restimulators.

We have all seen somebody make a blunder and then give forth an explanation of just why that blunder had been made. This is justified thought. The blunder was made, unless out of education or viewpoint, by an engram. The analytical mind then had to justify the blunder to make sure that the body was right and that its computations were right.

Now, there are two other conditions which can be caused by engrams. One is dramatization and the other is valence.n

You have seen some child come forth with a tirade, a tantrum. You have seen some man go through a whole rage action. You have seen people go through a whole irrational set of actions. These are dramatizations. They come about when an engram is thoroughly restimulated, so thoroughly that its soldered-in aspect takes over the organism. It may come into circuit slightly or wholly, which is to say

that there are degrees of dramatization. When it is in full parade, the engram is running off verbatim and the individual is like an actor, puppetlike, playing his dictated part. A person can be given new engrams which will make these old ones take secondary importance. (Society's punishment complex is aimed squarely at giving anti-engram education.)

12. valence: personality. The term is used to denote the borrowing of the personality of another. A valence is a substitute for self taken on after the fact of lost confidence in self. A preclear "in his father's valence" is acting as though he were his father.

115

L. RON HUBBARD

Dramatization is survival conduct—in the silly, reactive mind way of thinking—based on the premise that the organism, in a "similar" situation, lived through it because these actions were present.

The woman who was knocked down and kicked would dramatize her engram, possibly, by doing and saying exactly the same things done and said to her. Her victim may be her child or another woman. It could or would be the person who gave her the engram if she were strong enough to overcome him. Just because she has this engram does not mean she will use it. She may have a hundred other engrams she can use. But when she dramatizes one it is as if the engram, soldered-in, were taking over a puppet. As much analytical power as she has left may be devoted to altering the pattern. Therefore she can make a similar or an identical dramatization .

This aspect of dramatization is strictly "tooth and claw" survival. This is the sort of thing which made observers think that "tooth and claw" was a primary rule.

In went the engram, bypassing rationality and the standard memory banks. Now it is in the organism but the organism does not know it in the level of consciousness. It is keyed in by a conscious level experience. Then it can be dramatized. And far from becoming milder the more it is used, the more an engram is dramatized the more solid is its hold in the circuits. Muscles, nerves, all must comply.

"Tooth and claw" survival. The cells were making sure. And here we come to valence. Valens means "powerful" in Latin. It is a good term because it is the second half of ambivalent (power in two directions) and exists in any good dictionary. It is a good term because it describes (although the dictionary did not

mean it to) the intent of the organism when dramatizing an engram.

116

THE CELL AND THE ORGANISM

Multivalence would mean "many powerfuls." It would embrace the phenomena of split personality, the strange differences of personality in people in one and then another situation. Valence, in Dianetics, means the personality of one of the dramatic personnel in an engram.

In the case of the woman being knocked out and kicked, there were two valences present: herself and her husband. If another person had been present the en-gram would have contained three valences, providing he took any part: herself, her husband and the third person. In an engram, let us say, of a bus accident where ten people speak or act, there would be, in the "unconscious" person, an engram containing eleven valences: the "unconscious" person and the ten who spoke or acted.

Now, in the case of the woman beaten by her husband, the engram contains just two valences. Who won? Here is the law of "tooth and claw," the aspect of survival in engrams. Who won? The husband. Therefore it is the husband who will be dramatized. She didn't win. She got hurt. Aha! When these restimulators are present, the thing to do is to be the winner, the husband, to talk like him, to say what he did, to do what he did. He survived. "Be like him!" say the cells.

Hence, when the woman is restimulated into this engram by some action, let us say, on the part of her child, she dramatizes the winning valence. She knocks the child down and kicks him, tells him he is a faker, that he is HO good, that he is always changing his mind.

What would happen if she dramatized herself? She would have to fall down, knocking over a chair, pass out and believe she was a faker, no good and was always changing her mind, and she would have to feel the pain of all blows!

"Be yourself" is advice which falls on deaf reactive mind ears. Here is the scheme. Every time the organism

117

L. RON HUBBARD

gets punished by life, the analytical mind, according to the reactive mind, has erred. The reactive mind then cuts the analytical mind out of circuit in ratio to the amount of restimulation present (danger) and makes the body react as if it were the person who won in the earlier, but similar, situation where the organism was hurt.

Now what happens if "society" or the husband or some exterior force told this woman, who is dramatizing this engram, that she must face reality? That's impossible. Reality equals being herself, and herself gets hurt. What if some exterior force breaks the dramatization? That is to say, if society objects to the dramatization and refuses to let her kick and yell and shout? The engram is still soldered-in. The reactive mind is forcing her to be the winning valence. Now she can't be. As punishment, the reactive mind, the closer she slides into being herself, approximates the conditions of the other valence in the engram. After all, that valence didn't die. And the pain of the blows turns on and she thinks she is a faker, that she is no good and that she always changes her mind. In other words, she is in the losing valence. Consistent breaking of dramatization will make a person ill just as certainly as there are gloomy days.

A person accumulates, with the engrams, half a hundred valences before he is ten. Which were the winning valences? You will find him using them every time an engram is kicked into restimulation. Multiple personality? Two persons? Make it fifty to a hundred. In Dianetics, you can see valences turn on and off in people and change with a rapidity which would be awesome to a quick-change artist.

Observe these complexities of conduct, of behavior. If one set out to resolve the problem of aberration by a system of cataloging everything he observed, and were

118

THE CELL AND THE ORGANISM

unaware of the basic source, he would end up with as many separate insanities, neuroses, psychoses, compulsions, repressions, obsessions and disabilities as there are combinations of words in the English language. Discovery of fundamentals by classification is never good research. And the unlimited complexities possible from the engrams (and the severest, most thoroughly controlled experiments

discovered these engrams to be capable of just such behavior as is listed here) are the whole catalog of aberrated human conduct.

There are a few other basic, fundamental things that engrams do. These will be covered under their own headings: parasite circuits, emotional impaction¹³ and psychosomatic ills. With the few fundamentals listed here, the problem of aberration can be resolved. These fundamentals are simple, they have given rise to as much trouble as individuals and societies have experienced. The institutions for the insane, the prisons for the criminals, the armaments accumulated by nations, yes, and even the dust which was a civilization of yesterday exist because these fundamentals were not understood.

The cells evolved into an organism and in the evolution created what was once a necessary condition of mind. Man has grown up to a point where he creates now the means of overcoming that evolutionary blunder. Examination of the Clear proves he no longer needs it. He is now in a position where he can take an artificial evolutionary step on his own. The bridge has been built across the canyon.

13. impaction: the action of becoming, or condition of being, impacted (pressed closely into or in something) or firmly fixed in.

119

CHAPTER FOUR

The "Demons"

For a moment let us leave such scientific things as cells and consider some further aspects of the problem of understanding the human mind.

People <have been working on problems related to man's behavior for a good many millennia. Hindu,¹ Egyptian, Greek, Roman and our own philosophers and researchers of the past few hundred years have been struggling against a superabundance of complexity.

Dianetics could be evolved only by the philosophic compartmentation of the problem into its elements and the invention of several dozen yardsticks,² such as "the introduction of an arbitrary," "the law of

affinity," "the dynamic," "the equation of the optimum solution," "the laws of the selection of importances," "the science of organizing sciences," "nullification by comparison of authority to authority," and so forth and so forth. All this is fine matter for a tome on philosophy, but here is Dianetics, which is a science. It should be mentioned, however, that one of the first steps taken was not invented but borrowed and modified: that was the "knowable" and "unknowable" of Herbert Spencer.

Absolutism is a fine road to stagnation and I do not think Spencer meant to be so entirely absolute about his "knowable" and "unknowable." Survive! is the demarcation point between those things which can be experienced

1. Hindu: of Hinduism, a religious and social system which developed in India about 1400 B.C., with belief in reincarnation, worship of several gods, and the caste system (rigid, hereditary social classes) as a basis of society.

2. yardsticks: standards of measurement or judgment.

120

THE "DEMONS"

by the senses (our old friends Hume³ and Locke⁴) and those things which cannot necessarily be known through the senses, but which possibly may be known but which one does not necessarily need to solve the problem.

Amongst those things which one did not necessarily need to know (the Dianetic version of the "unknowable") were the realms of mysticism and metaphysics. Many things, in the evolution of Dianetics, were bypassed solely because they had not yielded solution to anyone else. Therefore mysticism got short shrift⁵ despite the fact that the author studied it, not in the little-understood, secondhand sources commonly used as authority by some Western mental cults, but in Asia where a mystic who can't make his "astral self"⁶ get out and run errands for him is strictly a second-rate character indeed. Well aware that there were pieces in this jigsaw puzzle which were orange with yellow spots

3. Hume: David Hume (1711-1776), Scottish philosopher and historian. Hume was known for his skepticism. He maintained that all knowledge was based on either the impressions of the senses or the logical relations of ideas.

4. Locke: John Locke (1632-1704), English philosopher who argued against the belief that human beings are born with certain ideas already in their minds. He claimed that, on the contrary, the mind is a tabula rasa (blank slate) until experience begins to "write" on it.

5. short shrift: little attention or consideration in dealing with a person or matter.

6. astral self: also called astral body: a second body, per some forms of philosophical or religious thought, said to belong to each individual, formed of a substance which is above or beyond perception by the senses and which pervades all space. Per these beliefs, the astral body accompanies the individual through life, is able to leave the human body at will, and survives the individual after death. Astral bodies are actually just somebody's delusion. They are usually mock-ups which the mystic then tries to believe real. He sees the astral body as something else and then seeks to inhabit it in the most common practices of "astral walking."

121

L. RON HUBBARD

and purple with carmine⁷ stripes, one found it necessary to pick up only those pieces which were germane.⁸ Someday a large number of pieces—about structure with the rest—will come in and there will be answers to telepathy,⁹ prescience¹⁰ and so on and on. Understand that there are a lot of pieces in the construction of a philosophic universe. But none of the mystic pieces were found necessary to the creation of a uniformly applicable and aberration-resolving science of mind. No opinion will be delivered at this stage of Dianetics about ghosts or the Indian rope trick" beyond the fact they are seen to be multicolored pieces and the only ones we want are white. We have most of the white pieces and it makes a good, solid whiteness where there was blackness before.

Imagine, then, the consternation¹² one must have felt when "demons" were discovered. Socrates had a demon, you'll remember. It told him not what to do but whether or not he had made the right decision. Here we had been pursuing a course in the finite universe which would have pleased Hume himself for its tenacity to those things which could be sensed. And up popped "demons."

A thorough examination of a number of subjects (fourteen) revealed that every one apparently had a "demon" of some sort. They were randomly selected subjects in various conditions in society. Therefore

the

7. carmine: red or purplish red; crimson.

8. germane: closely or significantly related; relevant; pertinent.

9. telepathy: communication from one mind to another without the use of speech or writing or gestures, etc.

10. prescience: knowledge of events or actions before they happen.

11. Indian rope trick: a magic trick in which the magician makes a rope seem to suspend in midair and either goes up the rope and disappears or sends other things up which disappear.

12. consternation: a sudden, alarming amazement or dread that results in utter confusion; dismay.

122

THE "DEMONS"

"demon" aspect was most alarming. However, unlike some of the cults (or schools, as they call themselves), the temptation to sail off into romantic, inexplicable and confounding labels was resisted. A bridge had to be built across a canyon and demons are darned bad girders.

Out in the Pacific islands—Borneo, the Philippines—I had seen quite a bit of demonology at work. Demonology is fascinating stuff. A demon gets into a person and makes him sick. Or it gets in and talks in lieu of him. Or he goes crazy because he has a demon in him and runs around with the demon shouting. This is demonology in a narrow sense. The shaman, the medicine man, these people deal pretty heavily in demonology (it pays well). But, while not skeptical particularly, it had always seemed to me that demons could be explained a little more easily than in terms of ectoplasm¹³ or some such unsensible material.

To find "demons" living in one's civilized fellow countrymen was disturbing. But there they were. At least there were the manifestations which the shaman and medicine man had said were caused by demons. It was found that these "demons" could be cataloged. There were "commanding demons," "critical demons," ordinary "tell-you-what-to-say demons" and "demons" which stood around and yelled or "demons" which simply occluded things and kept them out of sight. These are not all the classes, but they cover the general field of "demonology."

A few experiments with drugged subjects showed that it was possible to set these "demons" up at will. It was even possible to set up the whole analytical mind as a "demon." So there was something wrong with demonology. Without proper ritual, simply by word of

13. ectoplasm: the luminous substance believed to emanate from a spiritualistic medium.

123

L. RON HUBBARD

mouth, one could make new demons appear in people. So there are no real demons in Dianetics (that's underscored in case some mystic runs around telling people that a new science of mind believes in demons).

A Dianetic demon is a parasitic circuit. It has an action in the mind which approximates another entity than self. And it is derived entirely from words contained in engrams.

How this demon gets there is not very hard to understand once you've inspected one, close up. Papa, while baby is unconscious, yells at Mama that she's got to listen to him and nobody else, by God. The baby gets an engram. It is keyed in some time between babyhood and death. And then there's the demon circuit at work.

An electronics engineer can set up demons in a radio circuit to his heart's content. In human terms, it is as if one ran a line from the standard banks toward the analyzer but before it got there he put in a speaker and a microphone and then continued the line to the plane of consciousness. Between the speaker and the microphone would be a section of the analyzer which was an ordinary, working section

but compartmented off from the remainder of the analyzer. "I" on a conscious plane wants data. It should come straight from the standard bank, compute on a sublevel and arrive just as data. Not spoken data. Just data.

With the portion of the analyzer compartmented off and the speaker-microphone installation and the en-gram containing the above words "got to listen to me, by God" in chronic restimulation, another thing happens. The "I" in the upper-level attention units¹⁴ wants data. He starts to scan the standard banks with a

14. attention units: quantity of awareness. Any organism is aware to some degree. A rational or relatively rational organism is aware of being aware. Attention units could be said to exist in the mind in varying quantity from person to person.

124

THE "DEMONS"

sublevel. The data comes to him spoken. Like a voice inside his head.

A Clear does not have any "mental voices"! He does not think vocally. He thinks without articulation of his thoughts and his thoughts are not in voice terms. This will come as a surprise to many people. The "listen to me" demon is common in the society, which is to say this engram circulates widely. "Stay right there and listen to me" fixes the engram in present time (and fixes the individual in the time of the engram, to some extent). After it is keyed in and from there on, the individual thinks "out loud," which is to say, he puts his thoughts into language. This is very slow. The mind thinks out solutions (in a Clear) at such speed that the word stream of consciousness would be left at the post."

Proving this was very easy. In clearing every case, without exception, one or another of these demons was discovered. Some cases had three or four. Some had ten. Some had one. It is a safe assumption that almost every aberree contains a demon circuit.

The type of engram which makes a critical demon is, "You are always criticizing me." There are dozens of such statements contained in engrams, any one of which will make a critical demon, just as any combination of words resulting in a demand to listen and obey orders will make a commanding demon.

All these demons are parasitic. That is to say, they take a part of the analyzer and compartment it off. A demon can think only as well as the person's mind can think. There is no extra power. No benefit. All loss.

It is possible to set up the whole computer (analyzer) as a demon circuit and leave "I" on a tiny and forlorn shelf. This, on the surface, is a pretty good stunt. It

15. post: the starting gate at a racetrack.

125

L. RON HUBBARD

makes it possible for the whole analytical mind to work out computations undisturbed and relay the answer to the "I." But in practice it is very bad, for "I" is the will, the determining force of the organism, the awareness. And very soon "I" becomes so dependent upon this circuit that the circuit begins to absorb him. Any such circuit, to last, would have to have pain and be chronic. It would have to be, in short, an engram. Therefore, it would have to be reductive of the intellect and would victimize the owner by eventually making him ill one way or another.

Of all the engram demon circuits found and removed, those which contained a seemingly all-powerful exterior entity which would solve all problems and answer every want were the most dangerous. As the engram keyed in further and further and was constantly restimulated, it eventually made a spineless puppet out of "I"; because other engrams existed, the sum of the reduction tended toward insanity of a serious sort. If you want a sample, just imagine what you would have to say to a hypnotized person to make him think that he was in the hands of a powerful being who gave him orders and then imagine this as the phrase spoken when an individual had been knocked unconscious one way or another.

There is another full class of demons, the occlusion demons, the demons who shut things off. These are not properly demons because they don't talk. A bona fide¹⁶ demon is one who gives thoughts voice or echoes the spoken word interiorly or who gives all sorts of complicated advice like a real, live voice exteriorly. (People who hear voices have exterior vocal demons—circuits which have tied up their imagination circuits.) The occlusion demon doesn't have anything to say. It is what

16. bona fide: authentic; true.

126

THE "DEMONS"

he doesn't permit to be said or done that makes the mental derangement.

An occlusion demon can exist for a single word. For instance, a child receives an engram by falling off her bicycle and losing consciousness; a policeman tries to assist her; she is still unconscious but moving and mutters that she can't move (an old engram at work); the officer says, cheerfully, "Never say can't!" Some time later she has a conscious-level experience such as another fall but without injury. (We keep mentioning this second necessary step, the lock, because it is the thing old-time mystics thought was causing all the trouble—it is "mental anguish.") Now she has difficulty saying "can't." Dangerous in any event. What if she had that common engram expression, "Never say no!"?

Occlusion demons hide things from "I." It is as easy for one to mask many words. The individual having one will then omit these words or alter them or misspell them and make mistakes with them. The demon is not the only reason words get altered but he is a specific case. An occlusion demon can be of a much higher strength and breadth. He can be created with the phrase, "Don't talk!" or "Never talk back to your elders," or "You can't talk here. Who said you could talk?" Any of these phrases might produce a stammerer.

Other things besides speech can be occluded. Any ability of the mind can be inhibited by a demon specifically designed to obstruct that ability. "You can't see!" will occlude visual recall. "You can't hear!" will occlude audio recall. "You can't feel!" occludes pain and tactile recall (homonymic stuff, English).

Any perception can be occluded in recall. And whenever it is occluded in recall, it affects actual perception and the organ of perception as well. "You

127

L. RON HUBBARD

can't see!" may reduce not only recall but the actual organic ability of the eyes, as in astigmatism" or myopia.

One can imagine, with the entire English language (or in other lands with other tongues, any language) susceptible to inclusion within engrams, just how many abilities of the mind's operation can be occluded. An extremely common one is "You can't think!"

So far now, you has been used in illustrations and examples in order to keep the similarity to hypnotic or drug tests. Actually sentences which contain / are more destructive. "I can't feel anything," "I can't think," "I can't remember." These and their thousands and thousands of variations, when spoken within the hearing of an "unconscious" person, are applicable to himself when he gets the engram keyed into circuit.

You has several effects. The statement, "You are no good," to an awake person makes that person feel very angry perhaps when he has an engram to that effect. Within him he feels, possibly, that people think he is no good. He may have a demon that tells him he is no good. And he will dramatize by telling other people that they are no good. It can be sprayed off by being dramatized. A person who has an engram to the effect that he is sexually sterile, for instance, will tell people that they are sexually sterile. ("Don't do as I do, do as I say.") If he has an engram that says, "You are no good, you have to eat with your knife," he may eat with his knife but he gets excited about people eating with their knives, and he would grow very angry if somebody said he ate with his knife.

Thus, there are "compulsion demons" and "confusion demons" and so forth and so on.

The engram has a command value. There is a power

17. astigmatism: a defect in an eye or lens preventing proper focusing.

128

THE "DEMONS"

of choice exercised in the reactive mind about which and what engrams will be used. But any engram, strongly enough restimulated, will come to the surface to be dramatized. And if dramatization is blocked, it will turn on the individual either temporarily or chronically.

The literalness of this reactive mind, in its interpretation of commands and the literalness of their action within the poor, harassed analytical mind, is a strange thing in itself. "It is too horrible to be borne" might be interpreted to the effect that a baby was in such bad condition that it had better not be born. There are thousands of cliches in any language which, when literally taken, mean quite the opposite from what the speaker intends.

The reactive engram bank takes them, stores them with pain and emotion and "unconsciousness" and with moronic literalness, hands them forth to be law and command to the analytical mind. And when the happy little moron who runs the engram bank sees it possible to use up some analytical mind circuits with some of these confounded¹⁸ demons, it is done.

The analytical mind, then, can be seen to be subject to yet another form of attrition." Its circuits, ordinarily intended for smooth, rapid computation, become tied up and overloaded with demon lash-ups. The demons are parasites. They are pieces of analytical mind com-partmented off and denied to larger computation.

Is it any wonder that, when these demons are deleted, IQ soars, as it can be observed to do in a Clear? Add the demon circuits to the shut-down aspect of restimulation, and truth can be seen in the observation that people run on about one-twentieth of their mental

18. confounded: damned; a mild oath.

19. attrition: a wearing down or weakening of resistance, especially as a result of continuous pressure or harassment.

power. Research and scientific tabulation indicate that with the "unconsciousness" aspect and the demon circuits deleted from the engram bank, and the data restored into the standard bank as experience where it should be, about forty-nine fiftieths of the mind have been placed at the service of "I" which he never could use as an aberree.

130

CHAPTER FIVE

Psychosomatic Illness

Psychosomatic illnesses are those which have a mental origin but which are nevertheless organic. Despite the fact that there existed no precise scientific proof of this before Dianetics, an opinion as to their existence has been strong since the days of Greece, and in recent times various drug preparations have been concocted and sold which were supposed to overcome these sicknesses. Some success was experienced, sufficient to warrant a great deal of work on the part of researchers. Peptic ulcers,¹ for instance, have yielded to persuasion and environmental change. A drug called ACTH² has had astonishing but wildly unpredictable results. Allergies have been found to yield more or less to things which depressed histamine³ in the body.

The problem of psychosomatic illness is entirely embraced by Dianetics, and by Dianetic technique such illness has been eradicated entirely in every case.

About 70 percent of the physician's current roster of diseases fall into the category of psychosomatic illness. How many more can be so classified after Dianetics has been in practice for a few years is difficult to predict, but it is certain that more illnesses are psychosomatic than have been so classified to date. That all illnesses

1. peptic ulcers: open sores in the stomach.

2. ACTH: a hormone that was sometimes used to combat symptoms of rheumatoid arthritis; it stimulates the production of other hormones in the body.

3. histamine: a substance released by the tissues in allergic reactions: it dilates blood vessels, stimulates gastric secretion, etc.

131

L. RON HUBBARD

are psychosomatic is, of course, absurd, for there exist, after all, life forms called germs which have survival as their goals.

The work of Louis Pasteur formulated the germ theory of disease. With Dianetics is gained the non-germ theory of disease. These two, with biochemistry, complement each other to form the whole field of pathology⁴ so far as can be determined at this time, providing of course that the virus is included under the germ theory.

Dianetics adds an additional leaf to the germ theory in that it includes predisposition. There are three stages of pathology: predisposition, by which is meant the factors which prepared the body for sickness; precipitation, by which is meant the factors which cause the sickness to manifest itself; and perpetuation, by which is meant the factors which cause the sickness to continue.

There are two kinds of illness: the first could be called autogenetic, which means that it originated within the organism and was self-generated; and exo-genetic, which means that the origin of the illness was exterior. Actually, although this is good medicine, it is not quite as precise as Dianetics could desire. Mental illness itself is actually exterior in origin. But medically, we consider that the body can generate its own sicknesses (autogenetic) or that the sickness can come from an exterior source such as bacteria (exogenetic). The Pasteur germ theory would be the theory of exogenetic—exteriorly generated—illness. Psychosomatic illness would be autogenetic, generated by the body itself.

Treatment for accidental injury, surgery for various things such as malformation inherent in the body on a

4. pathology: the science or the study of the origin, nature and course of diseases.

PSYCHOSOMATIC ILLNESS

genetic⁵ basis, and orthopedics,⁶ which actually can be classed under both, remain properly outside the field of Dianetics, although it can be remarked in passing that almost all accidents are to be traced to dramatization of engrams and that Clears rarely have accidents.

Psycho, of course, refers to mind and somatic refers to body; the term psychosomatic means the mind making the body ill or illnesses which have been created physically within the body by derangement of the mind. Naturally such diseases, when one has resolved the problem of human aberration, become uniformly susceptible to cure.

Arthritis, dermatitis,⁷ allergies, asthma, some coronary difficulties, eye trouble, bursitis, ulcers, sinusitis, etc., form a very small section of the psychosomatic catalog. Bizarre aches and pains in various portions of the body are generally psychosomatic. Migraine⁸ headaches are psychosomatic and, with the others, are uniformly cured by Dianetic therapy. (And the word cured is used in its fullest sense.)

Just how many physical errors are psychosomatic depends upon how many conditions the body can generate out of the factors in the engrams. For example, the common cold has been found to be psychosomatic. Clears do not get colds. Just what, if any, part the virus plays in the common cold is not known, but it is known that when engrams about colds are lifted, no further

5. genetic: of or having to do with genetics, the branch of biology that deals with heredity and the way that animals and plants pass on to their offspring such characteristics as size, color, etc.

6. orthopedics: the branch of surgery dealing with the treatment of deformities, diseases and injuries of the bones, joints, muscles, etc.

7. dermatitis: inflammation of the skin.

8. migraine: a type of intense, periodically returning headache, usually limited to one side of the head and

often accompanied by nausea, visual disorders, etc.

133

L. RON HUBBARD

colds appear—which is a laboratory fact not so far contradicted by 270 cases. The common cold comes about, usually, from an engram which suggests it and which is confirmed by actual mucus present in another engram. A number of germ diseases are predisposed and perpetuated by engrams. Tuberculosis⁹ is one.

The engram itself, as has been covered, follows a cycle of action. The body is predisposed to the conduct and conditions contained in the engram when that en-gram is first received. Then a conscious level experience keys in the engram, and other experience or the content of the engram itself may make it chronic. This is predisposition, precipitation and perpetuation in the mental plane.

Engrams and inherited disabilities and accidents and germs are the four ways an organism can be reduced physically from the optimum. Many conditions which have been called "inherited disabilities" are actually engramic. Engrams predispose people to accidents. Engrams can predispose and perpetuate bacterial infections. Therefore the catalog of ills affected by Dianetics is very long. This is not a book listing effects but a book stating causes, and so the reader is asked to call upon his own knowledge or consult a medical text to understand just how many thousands and thousands of conditions result from engrams to disturb or derange the body.

At the present time, Dianetic research is scheduled to include cancer and diabetes.¹⁰ There are a number of reasons to suppose that these may be engramic in cause, particularly malignant" cancer. This is remarked so that

9. tuberculosis: an infectious wasting disease affecting various parts of the body.

10. diabetes: a disease in which sugar and starch are not properly absorbed by the body.

11. malignant: causing or likely to cause death, especially by spreading unchecked through the body.

134

PSYCHOSOMATIC ILLNESS

attention may be given to the possibility; no tests of any kind have been made on cancer or diabetic patients, and the thought is purely theory and is not to be taken as any kind of an avowal about a cancer cure. Those diseases which were cataloged above, however, have been thoroughly tested and have uniformly yielded to Dianetic therapy.

The mechanism by which the mind is able to cause a physical disability or predispose the body to an illness and perpetuate sickness is, in its basic cause, a very simple thing. The complexity arrives when one begins to combine all the factors possible; then a staggering list of potential illnesses can be written.

A series of simple tests can be made on drugged or hypnotic patients which will prove clinically in other laboratories this basic mechanism. A series of these tests were run in the formulation of Dianetics with uniform success.

Let us take first something which is only mildly psychosomatic and scarcely an illness at all. A patient is hypnotized. He is given the positive suggestion that he will be able to hear much more acutely. This is "extended hearing." Controlling out other means of his gaining data (including safeguards against telepathy between operator and subject) the hearing can be found to be amplifiable many times over. In fact, there exist all around aberrees who have "extended hearing." By suggestion, the power of the hearing can be tuned down or up so that a person is nearly deaf or can hear pins fall at a great distance. When the suggestion is removed, the subject's hearing returns to its previous normal state.

Similarly, experiments can be performed on the eyes, using light sensitivity. The patient's sight is tuned up or down so that his eyes are much more or much less sensitive to light than is normal for him. This is done

135

L. RON HUBBARD

entirely on the word-suggestion basis such as "The light will appear very, very bright to you," or "The light will appear so dim it will be hard for you to see." With the former suggestion the patient can be made to see almost as well as a cat, although other people around might think it impossible to see objects the patient can unerringly point out. In the latter suggestion the patient can be placed under light almost blinding and yet can read through a glare with apparent comfort.

The tactile sense can likewise be tuned up or down by verbal suggestion until touch becomes painfully acute or so dull it scarcely registers.

So with the various senses. Here we have simply the spoken word going into the mind and causing physical function to change.

Let us now address the heart. By deep hypnosis or drugs we take a patient into amnesia trance, a state of being wherein the "I" is not in control but the operator is the "I" (and that's all there is, really, to the function of hypnosis: the transfer of analytical power through the law of affinity from subject to operator, a thing which had a racial development and survival value in animals which ran in packs).

A caution should be observed that a patient who has a very sound heart and no heart trouble history be chosen for this experiment, which, even above any other hypnotic experiment, can make a patient very ill if he has a heart history. And none of these hypnotic tests should be performed until one has finished this book and knows how to get rid of the suggestions; for hypnosis, as practiced, is strictly live-fuse stuff and the hypnotist who is unacquainted with Dianetics has no more idea how to get rid of a suggestion he has made than he has of how to peel an atom. He has thought he had the answer, but Dianetics has treated many, many former hypnotic subjects who were thoroughly, as the

136

PSYCHOSOMATIC ILLNESS

engineers interested in Dianetics say, "loused up."¹² This is no criticism of hypnosis or hypnotists, who are often very able people, but it is a comment that there is more to be known about it.

The heart, by positive suggestion alone, can be speeded up, slowed down or otherwise excited. Here are words spoken into the deep strata of the mind which cause physical action. Further, blood flow can be inhibited in some area of the body by suggestion alone. (This experiment, it is warned, particularly overloads the heart.) Blood can be denied to a hand, for instance, so that if you were to cut a vein in that hand it would bleed slightly if at all. A fine swami¹³ trick, which most amazed the author in India, was the inhibition of blood flow by the awake individual in himself. On command a cut would bleed or not bleed. It looked fantastic and made very good press-agentry¹⁴ that here was a swami who had so associated himself with nirvana¹⁵ that he was in control of all material matters. Awe faded when the author learned that, via hypnosis, he could make his own body do the same thing and no nirvana involved. The mechanism fades out rapidly and in a few days would have to be renewed: the body has its own optimum operation, and although such a function can be "analytically" handled, it is not an upper-echelon analytical job to keep the blood going in the hand. The point here is that blood flow can be interrupted by verbal suggestion. Words connect up with the physical being.

12. loused up: botched; spoiled; ruined.

13. swami: lord; master: a Hindu title of respect, especially for a Hindu religious teacher.

14. press-agentry: publicity produced by a press agent's work or skill, especially in making a person or thing seem more desirable, admirable or successful.

15. nirvana: in Buddhism, the highest state of consciousness, in which the soul is freed from all desires and attachments.

137

L. RON HUBBARD

How this can come about can be shown by an analogic explanation, such as a schematic¹⁶ diagram, but we are not so much interested in structure as in function at this stage of the science of mind—because by knowing function alone we can cure aberrations and psychosomatic ills every time, predict new ills and conditions, and generally "work miracles," as such actions were once called before man knew anything about the mind.

Excreta are among the easiest things to regulate by suggestion. Constipation can be caused or cured by

positive suggestion with remarkable speed and facility. The urine can also be so controlled. And so can the endocrine system.

It is harder to make tests on some of the more poorly understood functions of the endocrines. Glandular research has not progressed very far at this time. But, by removing engrams and watching the endocrine system rebalance, it has been made obvious that the endocrine system is a part of the control mechanism with which the mind handles the body. The glands are easily influenced. These fluids and secretions—testosterone," estrogen,¹⁸ adrenaline, thyroid," parathyroid,²⁰ pituitrin,²¹ etc.—are the substances the mind uses as one means of controlling the body. They form relay circuits, so to speak. Each one has its own action within the body.

This experiment tends to prove the fallacy of an

16. schematic: of, or having the nature of, a scheme, schema, plan, diagram, etc.

17. testosterone: a male sex hormone.

18. estrogen: a sex hormone or other substance capable of developing and maintaining female characteristics of the body.

19. thyroid: a hormone that regulates the body's growth and development.

20. parathyroid: a hormone important in controlling of the calcium-phosphate balance of the body.

21. pituitrin: the various substances secreted by the pituitary gland, located at the base of the brain, which have important influences on growth and bodily functions.

ancient assumption that the mind was controlled by the glands. An aberree is given a shot of 25 mg of testosterone in oil twice a week. There may be some improvement in his physical status—for a short time his voice may deepen and he may grow more hair on his chest. Now, without suggestion, we simply delete the engrams from his reactive bank so that they can re-form as experience in the standard bank. Before we have completed this task his body begins to use more of the testosterone. The dose can be markedly reduced and still give more benefit than formerly. Finally, the dose can be eliminated. This experiment has also been performed on people who had not been able to receive benefit from glandular substances such as testosterone and estrogen. And upon people who were made ill by the administration of these hormones. The deletion of the engrams from the reactive bank uniformly brought about a condition where they could receive benefit from the hormones but where such artificial administration was not necessary, save in cases of extreme age. What this means to gerontology (the study of longevity in life) cannot at this time be estimated, but it can be predicted with confidence that the deletion of engrams from the reactive bank has a marked effect upon the extension of life. A hundred years or so from now this data will be available, but no Clears have lived that long as yet.

Just now, to our purpose, it is easy to demonstrate the effect of positive suggestion upon the endocrine system and the lack of effect of artificial hormones upon aberrees.

This sort of an engram has a terribly reductive effect upon testosterone manufacture: "Sex is horrible; it is nasty; I hate it."

The autonomic nervous system,²² which has been

22. autonomic nervous system: a system of nerves in the body which regulates involuntary action, as of the intestines, heart and glands. Autonomic means "self-ruling" or "independent."

139

L. RON HUBBARD

supposed to run without much connection to the mind, can be shown to be influenced in its parts by the mind. There is a dwindling spiral effect (note the lines on the survival potential chart) whereby the engram starts malfunction in the life function regulator; this produces malfunction in the mind, which in turn has further effect on the life function regulator; this again reduces physical activity, and the mind, being part of the organ and, so far as we can tell, organic itself, is further reduced in tone. Mental tone makes body

tone go down. Body tone, then being down, makes mental tone go down. This is a matter of inverse geometric progression. A man starts to get sick and, having engrams, he gets sicker. Clears are not subject to this dwindling spiral. Indeed, so entirely superficial is this horrible stuff called psychosomatic illness that it is the first thing which surrenders and can be alleviated without clearing.

Now, the reason why various drug preparations which seek to change psychosomatic illness meet with such uncertain success lies in the fact that the mind, containing these engrams which are "survival" (like a fellow needs a hole in his head), handles the life function regulator to actively produce illnesses. Something comes to take them away (they're "survival," you see, and these confounded cells moronically insist upon it) and the mind has to rapidly reverse the activity and put an illness back in place again. Try to influence the reactive mind by reason or needles and it is not any easier to convince than a drug-crazed man bent on murdering everybody in a bar. He's "surviving," too.

A concoction like ACTH has a slightly different effect. It is too exclusive to have any research done with it, but on reports about it, it seems to affect engrams in the time sense. That is to say, as will be covered under therapy, the individual's reactive location in time is

140

PSYCHOSOMATIC ILLNESS

shifted by it. ACTH and perhaps many others in its category move the individual from one chronic engram into another. This is about as reliable as changing dictators in Europe. The next one may be twice as bad. It may even be a manic and that's horrible, despite its apparent "euphoria."

Electric shock treatment, the beatings of Bedlam and other things of their ilk,²³ including surgical treatment of things psychosomatic in origin, have another effect, but one not dissimilar to drugs like ACTH, in that they give another shock which transfers the engram pattern to another part of the body (and switches around the aberrations; when these things work it is because the new aberration is less violent than the old one). Shocks, blows, surgery and maybe even things like cobra venom change the effect of the engram bank on the body, not necessarily for the worse, not necessarily for the better; they just change them. Like shooting dice: sometimes one gets a seven.²⁴

Then there is the deletion-of-tissue treatment of psychosomatic ills. This simply removes the area which is busy dramatizing in the physical line. This can be the removal of a toe or the removal of a brain. These things are quite commonly used, as this is being written. The removal of the toe is addressed to one part of the engram content, the somatic, and the removal of parts of the brain (as in the transorbital

leukotomy²⁵ and the prefrontal lobotomy²⁶ or anything else more recent) is

23. ilk: class; kind; sort.

24. gets a seven: reference to the game of craps (the throwing, or shooting, of dice), in which a first throw of seven wins.

25. transorbital leukotomy: (psychiatry) an operation which, while the patient is being electrically shocked, thrusts an ordinary dime-store ice pick into each eye and reaches up to rip the analyzer apart.

26. prefrontal lobotomy: (psychiatry) an operation in which the white fibers joining the prefrontal and frontal lobes to the interior region of the brain are severed.

141

L. RON HUBBARD

addressed mistakenly to "the removal of" the psycho-aberration. There is a surrender system at work in this as well: the surgeon or the patient has an aberration about "getting rid of it," and so bits of the body are cut up or removed. Some patients surrender anatomy on advice or at their own insistence like old-timers shed blood in a phlebotomy.²⁷ There is a straight parallel between bleeding the patient to make him well and cutting away parts of him to make him well. Both are based on a surrender (get rid of) engram and neither are effective in any way. Barber basin medicine,²⁸ it is hoped, will eventually die out, as did its patients.

These are the five classes of psychosomatic ills: (1) those ills resulting from mentally caused derangement in physical fluid flow, which class subdivides into (a) inhibition of fluid flow and (b) magnification of fluid flow; (2) those ills resulting from mentally caused derangement of physical growth, which class subdivides into (a) inhibition of growth and (b) magnification of growth; (3) those ills resulting from predisposition to disease resulting from a chronic psychosomatic pain in an area; (4) those ills resulting from perpetuation of a disease on account of chronic pain in an area; and (5) those ills caused by the verbal command content of the engrams.

In Class 1 (a) fall such ordinary things as constipation and such extraordinary things as arthritis. Arthritis is a complex mechanism with a simple cause and a relatively simple cure. Remember that there are two things present in an engram: physical pain and verbal

27. phlebotomy: the act or practice of bloodletting as a therapeutic measure.

28. barber basin medicine: reference to the practice of surgery by barbers in earlier centuries. Generally untrained in medical procedures, their "treatments" were very painful with severe infections and often death resulting from unsanitary conditions.

142

PSYCHOSOMATIC ILLNESS

command. In arthritis both must be present (as in the bulk of psychosomatic ills). There must have been an accident to the joint or area affected, and there must have been a command during the "unconsciousness" which attended the injury which would make the en-gram susceptible to chronic restimulation. (Such commands as "It is always like this" or "It just goes right on hurting" or "I'm stuck" will produce similar results.) Given this engram and given this engram keyed in, there is a chronic pain in the area of the injury. It may be minor, but it is a pain just the same. (It can be a pain but not be felt if the engram contains a command which is anesthetic, such as "He'll never feel this," which produces a similar condition but makes one "unconscious" of the pain there.) This pain in the body probably tells the cells and the blood that this area is dangerous. It is therefore avoided. The command permits the mind to influence, let us say, the parathyroid, which contains the secret of the calcium content in the bloodstream. A mineral deposit then begins to be laid down in the area. The mineral deposit is not necessarily the cause of the pain, but it is an organic restimulator so that the more mineral, the more pain, the more the engram keys in. This is the dwindling spiral. And this is arthritis in action. Understand that the parathyroid and the blood avoidance are theoretical cause; the scientific fact is that when an engram is picked up and deleted about an area containing arthritis, that arthritis vanishes and does not return and this is x-ray plate evidence; it happens every time and does not happen because of any suggestion or medicine; it happens because an engram is picked up and refiled. As the engram goes away, so goes the pain, so vanishes the arthritis. This forms a whole class of ills, of which arthritis is only one. The mechanisms involved vary slightly. All can be headed under "physical derangement caused by reduced body fluid flow."

143

L. RON HUBBARD

Class 1 (b) of psychosomatic ills, magnification of fluid flow, contains such things as high blood pressure, diarrhea, sinusitis, priapism (overactivity of the male sex glands) or any other physical condition resulting from a superabundance of fluid.

Class 2 (a) can cause such things as a withered arm, a foreshortened nose, underdeveloped genital organs or any other underdevelopment of a gland having to do with size (which cross-classes this with 1 [a]), hairless-ness (which also like the rest can be part of the gene pattern and therefore inherent), and, in short, reduction in size of any part of the body.

Class 2 (b) causes such things as oversized hands, a lengthened nose, oversized ears, enlarged organs and other common physical malformations. (Cancer might possibly come under this heading as overheating.)

Class 3 would include tuberculosis (some cases), liver trouble, kidney trouble, rashes, common colds, etc. (cross-classing with others, as do all of these in one way or another).

Class 4 would include those diseases which, arising without psychosomatic influence, yet fix upon, by accident, a previously injured area and, by restimulation, keep an engram keyed in in that area so that a condition becomes chronic. Tuberculosis could be included here. Conjunctivitis,²⁹ all running sores and any condition which refuses to heal, etc.

This fourth class would also include all bizarre pains and sicknesses which cannot be found to have actual pathology.

Class 5 includes an enormously wide catalog of conditions, any one of which may cross-index to other classes or which arise solely out of engrams which

29. conjunctivitis: inflammation of the conjunctiva, the mucous membrane lining the inner eyelid and part of the eye.

PSYCHOSOMATIC ILLNESS

dictate the presence or necessity of an illness. "You always have colds," "I have sore feet," etc., announce a psychosomatic illness and the mechanisms of the body can furnish one.

Any disease whatever can be precipitated by en-grams. The disease may be of germ origin: the individual possesses an engram to the effect that he may become sick and, on this generalization, becomes sick with whatever is to hand. Further and even more general, the engram reduces the physical resistance of the body to disease, and when an engram goes into restimulation (perhaps because of a domestic quarrel, an accident or some such thing) the ability of the individual to resist sickness is automatically decreased.

Children, as will be explained, have many more engrams than has been supposed. Almost all childhood illnesses are preceded by psychic disturbance and if psychic disturbance is present—keeping an engram restimulated—such illnesses can be far more violent than they should be. Measles, for instance, can be just measles or it can be measles in company with engramic restimulation, in which case it can be nearly or entirely fatal. A check of many subjects on this matter of childhood illness being predisposed by, precipitated by and perpetuated by engrams causes one to wonder just how violent the diseases themselves really are: they have never been observed in a cleared child and there is reason to investigate the possibility that childhood illnesses are in themselves extremely mild and are complicated only by psychic disturbance—which is to say, the restimulation of engrams.

In fact, one could ask this question of the entire field of pathology: What is the actual effect of disease minus the mental equation? How serious are bacteria?

The field of bacteriology has been without dynamic principles until now: the dynamic, survival, is applicable

145

L. RON HUBBARD

to all life forms, and "life forms" include germs. The purpose of the germ is to survive. Its problems are

those of food, protection (offense and defense) and procreation. To accomplish these things the germ survives at its optimum efficiency. It mutates, alters with natural selection and changes dynamically from survival necessity (the missing step of the evolution theory, that last) in order to accomplish the maximum survival possible. It makes errors by killing the hosts, but to have a purpose to survive does not mean that a form necessarily survives.

In pathology, the germ, bent on its purpose, acts as a suppressor to the survival dynamic of the human species. How serious this suppressor is in the absence of engram suppression in the human has not been determined; enough data exists to indicate that a human individual with his potential in the fourth zone is not, apparently, very subject to disease: the common cold, for instance, if it is a virus or not, passes him by; chronic infections are absent. What antibodies have to do with this or what this factor is, is yet another question. But it remains that a Clear is not easily made ill. In the aberrant illness closely pursues mental depression (depression of the dynamic level).

The aberration of mind and body by engrams leads, then, not only to psychosomatic ills but also to actual pathology, which has hitherto been considered more or less independent of the mental state. As has been proven by clinical research, clearing of engrams does more than remove psychosomatic illness, potential, acute or chronic. The clearing also tends to proof the individual against the receipt of pathology: to what extent, it is not yet known, for such a wide and long-term view is required to establish the actual statistics that the project will require thousands of cases and the observations of medical doctors over a long term.

The amount of aberration which a person manifests,

146

PSYCHOSOMATIC ILLNESS

which is to say, the position he would occupy on a sanity scale, has little to do with psychosomatic illness. Such illnesses require only one or two engrams of a specific nature to become manifest. These engrams may not be aberrative in any other way than to predispose the individual to illness. Having a psychosomatic illness is not the same as being "crazy" or having hypochondriacal tendencies. The hypochondriac thinks he has illnesses, a special case of Class 5 above.

Derangement falls sharply into two categories: the first is the mental derangement—any irrational condition—which, in Dianetics, we call aberration in order to avoid constant cataloging of the thousands, the millions of manifestations irrationality can have. The other derangement of the individual is somatic:

this applies entirely to his physical being and physical ability and health. Both these things are present in every engram: the aberration and the somatic. But the engram can manifest itself chronically as either a somatic (a noun has been made out of an adjective here and it is commonly employed in Dianetics to avoid the use of the word pain, which is not embracing and which is restimulative) or as an aberration or as both together.

An engram must contain physical pain. When an engram is restimulated in everyday life, that physical pain may appear or it may not. If it does not appear as pain but as aberration, then the individual is in another valence than his own (the "necessity to manifest his hostilities"). If he is sane enough to be in his own valence, the physical pain will be present. In Dianetics, we say the somatic has appeared. When any somatic appears, unless the individual is a preclear³⁰ in therapy,

30. preclear: from pre-Clear, a person not yet Clear; generally a person being audited, who is thus on the road to Clear; a person who, through Dianetics auditing, is finding out more about himself and life.

147

L. RON HUBBARD

some of the aberration is also appearing. In short, the aberration can appear by itself or the somatic plus some of the aberration can appear. When a person dramatizes another valence than his own, the aberration is present; when the dramatization, running off the engram phonograph-record-wise in one or another valence, is suppressed by some other factor, such as the police or a stronger person or even the individual himself (this has been called repression—the term is not used here because it is loaded with other meanings), the somatic most certainly will come into view.

The individual is, then, apparently "better off" (as the cells meant him to be) to occupy the survival role in the engram (the winning valence), for he is, at least, not ill. But how many people have been killed, how many banks have been robbed and how many marital partners have been driven mad by these dramatizations? So the health of the individual would be considered by society, in its effort to protect its members, to be a secondary affair. In fact, "society" has not known about this mechanical aspect. The individual who dramatizes the survival valence in his engrams may do violent things to other people. The individual who will not permit himself such a dramatization or who is forced by society away from such dramatization will most certainly become psychosomatically ill. "Heads I win, tails you lose."³¹ The answer is in the alleviation or deletion of the engram. For there are many additional aspects to the problem: the man who dramatizes his engrams, society or no society, is not apt to survive; and if he

31. "Heads I win, tails you lose": descriptive of a one-sided arrangement. The phrase comes from a game of flipping a coin into the air and betting on which side will land uppermost. Heads refers to the side of a coin bearing the date and the main design (often a representation of a head); tails refers to the reverse side of a coin.

148

PSYCHOSOMATIC ILLNESS

dramatizes them, he is subject to whatever slurs were leveled at the valence he is in by another valence in that same engram.

The combinations of the classes and aspects of psychosomatic illness listed and described here lead to some highly complex situations. It is a scientific fact that no psychosomatic ill exists without an aberration. And it is true that no aberration exists without a potential or actual psychosomatic ill. One of the psychosomatic illnesses one would least expect to find as a psychosomatic affair is the illness of sexual perversion.

The sexual pervert (and by this term Dianetics, to be brief, includes any and all forms of deviation in dynamic two such as homosexuality, lesbianism,³² sexual sadism,³³ etc., and all down the catalog of Ellis³⁴ and Krafft-Ebing³⁵) is actually quite ill physically. Perversion, as an illness, has so many manifestations that it must be spread through the entire gamut³⁶ of classes from 1 to 5 above. Overdevelopment of sexual organs, underdevelopment, seminal³⁷ inhibition or magnification, etc., are found some in one pervert, some in another. And the sum of it is that the pervert is always a very ill person in one way or another, whether he is conscious of it or not. He is very far from culpable³⁸ for his condition, but he is also so far from normal and so

32. lesbianism: homosexual relations between women.

33. sadism: the getting of sexual pleasure from dominating, mistreating or hurting one's partner.

34. Ellis: Henry Havelock Ellis (1859-1939), English criminologist and psychologist who conducted studies in psychology and sociology of sex.

35. Krafft-Ebing: Baron Richard von Krafft-Ebing (1840-1902), German neurologist and author of works on sexual pathology-

36. gamut: the entire range or extent, as of emotions.

37. seminal: pertaining to, containing or consisting of semen.

38. culpable: deserving blame; blameworthy.

149

L. RON HUBBARD

extremely dangerous to society that the tolerance of perversion is as thoroughly bad for society as punishment for it. Lacking proper means prior to this time, society has been caught between tolerance and punishment, and the problem of perversion has, of course, not been resolved. A bit off the subject here, but it can be remarked about perversion that the best previous explanation for it was something about girls becoming envious of Papa's penis or boys becoming upset about that terrible thing, the vulva, which Mama was incautious enough to show one day. It takes a great deal more than this utter tripe³⁹ to make a pervert. It is, rather, something on the order of kicking a baby's head in, running over him with a steamroller, cutting him in half with a rusty knife, boiling him in Lysol,⁴⁰ and all the while with crazy people screaming the most horrifying and unprintable things at him. The human being is a very tough character. He is so confoundedly tough that he has whipped the whole animal kingdom and he can shake the stars. And when it comes to throwing his second dynamic out of balance, what that takes is straight out of Dante⁴¹ and Sax Rohmer⁴² combined. Hence the pervert, containing hundreds and hundreds of vicious engrams, has had little choice between being dead and being a pervert. But with an effective science to handle the problem, a society which would continue to endure perversion and all its sad and sordid effects doesn't deserve to survive.

39. tripe: (slang) anything worthless, offensive, etc.; nonsense.

40. Lysol: (trademark) a brand of clear, brown, oily solution used as a disinfectant and antiseptic.

41. Dante: originally Durante, Alighieri (1265-1321), Italian poet. Wrote *Divina Commedia*, recounting an imaginary journey by the author through hell, purgatory and paradise.

42. Sax Rohmer: pseudonym of Arthur Sarsfield Ward (1883-1959), English author of mystery thrillers, especially a series centering about fictional character Dr. Fu Manchu.

150

PSYCHOSOMATIC ILLNESS

Perversion can have other aspects. In one society examined, these aberrations had multiplied so far that a principal mystic cult had sprung up which contended that all mental illness came from sex; this, of course, gave further impetus to aberrations on the second dynamic (sex), as such a cultic belief must have been originated by an individual who had severe aberrations across the second dynamic. This belief that sex was the only source of human aberration and travail⁴³ naturally attracted as its practitioners individuals who had similar aberrative patterns. And so the cult further enforced existing aberrative factors in the society, since all their activity was leveled at making sex something ogreish⁴⁴ and dreadful by labeling it the society's primary source of mental illness. The prophet of this god was Man-ichaeus, a Persian of the third century, who taught that all things about the body, especially sex, were evil; the cult of Manichaeus carried on well into the Dark Ages and then vanished, to trouble man no more.

Any dynamic can be blocked: the personal dynamic, the sex dynamic, the group dynamic or the mankind dynamic. Each one has been the target at some time of one cult or another seeking to cure all man's ills and save him. Dianetics is not interested in saving man, but it can do much to prevent him from being "saved." As an organized body of scientific knowledge, Dianetics can draw only the conclusion which it observes in the laboratory.

It can be observed that the Church is entirely correct in doing all in its power to prevent blasphemy.⁴⁵
Blasphemy

43. travail: (figurative) trouble, hardship or suffering.

44. ogreish: like or having the characteristics of an ogre: (in folklore and fairy tales) a man-eating monster, usually represented as a hideous giant; hence, anything likened to such a monster in appearance

or character.

45. blasphemy: abuse of or contempt for God or sacred things.

151

L. RON HUBBARD

can very often be uttered during the "unconsciousness" of a person who has been struck. This would enter sacred names and curses into engrams which, reacting within the individual, give him an unnatural terror and compulsion or repulsion toward God. It is not the religion which is at fault, it is the blaspheming of the religion. Such blasphemy makes the insane zealot⁴⁶ and the murderous atheist,⁴⁷ both of whom the Church would very gladly do without.

In the realm of psychosomatic illness, any combination of the language is as damaging a factor in an engram as any other factor. The moronic reasoning of the reactive mind, which considers everything in an engram equal to everything in an engram, also considers that everything similar to the engram in the exterior world (the restimulators) is sufficient cause to place an engram in effect. Hence aberration and illness can come about.

There is, however, a peculiarity in psychosomatic illnesses which is chronic: the aberree's reactive mind exercises a power of choice to the extent that only pro-survival engrams become chronic. It could be said, on a reactive level, that the aberree will not permit himself to suffer illness from his engrams unless that illness has a "survival" value. This is very important in therapy. The chronic psychosomatic illnesses which a patient displays are those which have a sympathy (pro-survival) background.

It is not possible to "spoil" a child with love and affection. Whoever postulated that it was possible was postulating out of bad data and no observation. A child needs all the love and affection it can possibly get. A

46. zealot: an excessively zealous person; fanatic.

47. atheist: a person who denies or disbelieves the existence of a supreme being or beings.

152

PSYCHOSOMATIC ILLNESS

test was run in one hospital which tended to show that babies, when left without attention, ran fevers. When given attention, the fevers immediately abated. The test, while not observed personally by the author, seems to have been conducted with proper controls according to report. If this is true, it postulates a mechanism in the human being which uses illness for affection on a genetic basis. There is no reason why not; there have been enough years of engineering—almost two billion—to build anything into the blueprint. These babies, in several groups, were left in the hospital by their parents for the test; they uniformly became ill when not given affection. Here is the law of affinity at work, if these tests were accurately conducted. Their purpose was not to help Dianetics, but to show that the leaving of a baby in the hospital after his birth because he has a slight illness invariably increases that illness.

A series of severely controlled Dianetic experiments over a much longer period demonstrated that the law of affinity, as applicable to psychosomatic illness, was more powerful than fear and antagonism by a very wide margin. So great is this margin that it could be compared as the strength of a steel girder to a straw. It was found, as above, that chronic psychosomatic ills existed only when they had a sympathy engram behind them. The law of affinity might be interpreted as the law of cohesion; affinity might be defined as "love" in both its meanings. Deprivation of or absence of affection could be considered as a violation of the law of affinity. Man must be in affinity with man to survive. The suicide ordinarily commits the act on the computation that the removal of self will some way benefit other selves—this, on the reactive mind level, is a very ordinary computation, deriving exclusively from engrams. The violent industrial chieftain with his merciless mien,⁴⁸

48. mien: a person's manner or bearing.

153

L. RON HUBBARD

when he suffers from a psychosomatic ill, ordinarily derives it out of a sympathy engram.

The sympathy engram pretends to be pro-survival. As one pre-clear said, a man is not victimized by his enemies but by his friends. An engram comes about always from a greater or lesser moment of "unconsciousness." There is no engram without "unconsciousness." It is only when the analyzer is out of circuit that the exterior world can come interior, unrationalized, and work from within. The second the analyzer identifies one of those engrams as such, that engram loses about 20 percent of its value to aberrate and usually 100 percent of its value to cause a psychosomatic illness. Pain is extremely perishable. Pleasure is recorded in bronze. (Not poetry here, science. Physical pain will delete with brief attention; a pleasant or even a media-media⁴⁹ experience is so solidly fixed in the mind that no treatment known to Dianetics will shake it and a great deal of effort has been leveled at pleasure recordings just to test them for permanence. They are permanent; physical pain is perishable. Too bad, Schopenhauer,⁵⁰ but you were a most mistaken man.)

Exposing a lock to the analyzer—a moment of "mental anguish"—once the engram which gave it power is gone causes that lock to blow away like chaff. The analyzer works on the "doctrine of the true datum": it has no truck⁵¹ with anything which it once

49. media-media: average.

50. Schopenhauer: Arthur Schopenhauer (1788-1860), German philosopher. He maintained that the desires and drives of men, as well as the forces of nature, are manifestations of a single will, specifically the will to live, which is the essence of the world. Schopenhauer asserted that since operation of the will means constant striving without satisfaction, life consists of suffering and that only by controlling the will through the intellect, by suppressing the desire to reproduce, can suffering be diminished.

51. truck: dealings; business.

154

PSYCHOSOMATIC ILLNESS

discovers to be false. Just exposing an engram without relieving it has some therapeutic value—20 percent—and this gave rise to a belief that all one had to do was know about his ills and they would vanish. Nice if it were so.

The most aberrative engram, then, is one which is held down by the reactive mind's—that moron's—concept that it is needed in the survival of the individual. This sympathy engram is the one which comes forward and stays chronic as a psychosomatic illness. There are two reasons for this: one is usually in one's own valence when a sympathy engram is received; and one's reactive mind, knowing well the value of affinity, puts forward the psychosomatic illness to attract affinity. There is no volition here on the part of the individual's "I," analytical self. But there is every "volition" on the part of the reactive mind.

A sympathy engram would go something like this: a small boy, much victimized by his parents, is extremely ill. His grandmother attends him and, while he is delirious, soothes him and tells him she will take care of him, that she will stay right there until he is well. This puts a high "survival" value on being sick. He does not feel safe around his parents; he wants his grandmother present (she is a winning valence because she orders the parents around), and he now has an engram. Minus the engram there would be no psychosomatic illness. Sickness, "unconsciousness" and physical pain are essential to the receipt of this engram. But it is not a contrasurvival engram. It is a prosurvival engram. It can be dramatized in one's own valence.

The psychosomatic illness, in such a case as this, would be a "precious possession." "I" doesn't even know the computation. The analyzer was out when the engram went in. The analyzer cannot recall that engram with anything short of Dianetic therapy. And the engram will not clear away.

155

L. RON HUBBARD

Now, with this engram we have a patient with sinusitis and a predisposition to lung infections. It may be that he was luckless enough to marry a counterpart of his mother or his grandmother. The reactive mind cannot tell the difference between Grandmother or Mother and wife if they are even vaguely similar in speech, voice tone or mannerisms. The wife is not sympathetic. In goes the engram to demand that sympathy. And even if the wife thinks that sinusitis and lung infection are repulsive enough to lead to divorce, the reactive mind keeps that engram keyed in. The more hatred from the wife, the more that engram keys in. You can kill a man that way.

The above is a standard sympathy engram. When a therapist tries to get that engram away from the patient, the reactive mind balks. The "I" doesn't balk. The analyzer doesn't balk. These are hopeful that this engram will spring. But the reactive mind keeps it nailed down until the Dianeticist puts a crowbar under it. Then it is gone. (Enough locks may be lifted, by the way, to alleviate this condition. But the patient will dig up another engram!)

Resistance to past therapies has resulted from these sympathy engrams. Yet they lie right there on the surface, fully exposed as chronic psychosomatic illness.

Feeding a patient with a psychosomatic ill any number of drugs can result in only temporary relief. "I" doesn't want the illness. The analyzer doesn't want it. But the body has it, and if anybody succeeds in curing it short of removing that engram, the body, at the command of the reactive mind, will find something else to substitute for that ill or develop an "allergy" to the drug or annul the effect of the drug entirely.

Of course, one can always rip living tissue out of the skull with knives, ice picks or shock in wholesale quantities. This will cure a psychosomatic ill. It also,

156

PSYCHOSOMATIC ILLNESS

unhappily, cures the personality, the intellect and all too often, life itself.

In Dianetics, the application of technique to relieve the engrams causing these ills has brought the uniform relief of all patients treated, without relapse. In short and in brief, psychosomatic ills can now be cured. All of them.

157

CHAPTER Six

Emotion and the Dynamics

Emotion is a 0' quantity, which is to say that it is so involved with life forces that Dianetics, at this stage, handles it with invariable success but does not attempt to give forth more than a descriptive theory. Much

research must be done on emotion; but so long as the therapy embraces it and releases it with success, further data can be dispensed with up to a point.

Emotion would have to be divided sharply into minus emotions and plus emotions. The minus emotion would be nonsurvival in character, the plus emotion would be pro-survival. The pleasant and pleasurable emotions are not of any great concern to us here. It is believed that all emotion is the same thing but in its aspects above zone 1 it can be bypassed as unnecessary to explain at this time for the purpose of this book.

In zones 1 and 0, emotion becomes very important to therapy. As has been covered earlier, zones 1 and 0 are the anger and apathy zones respectively. From death up to the border between anger and fear is zone 0. From this borderline to the beginning of boredom is anger, zone 1.

It is as if the survival dynamic, in becoming contracted into zone 1, first began to display hostility, then, on further suppression toward death, anger. On further suppression, rage began to be displayed. Then fear as the next lower level, then terror and finally, just above death, apathy.

1. 0: theta, the eighth letter in the Greek alphabet. Greek for thought or life or the spirit.

158

EMOTION AND THE DYNAMICS

And as the dynamic is suppressed, the cells react forcefully to the menace, it could be said, by resisting the menace. The analyzer resists down to the top border of zone 1, but in ever-decreasing control. From here on down the cells, the actual organism, do the resisting in a last-ditch effort. The reactive mind is thoroughly in command from the top border of zone 1 straight tin down to death, and it is in ever-increasing command of the organism as the dynamic is suppressed.

Emotion seems to be inextricably² connected up with the actual force of life. That there is a life force no engineer could doubt. Man and medicine usually look at the pitcher and forget that the pitcher is only there to hold milk and that the milk is the important quantity. Life force is the helium³ which fills the free balloon. Out goes the helium, down comes the balloon. When this type of energy is located and isolated as itself—if it is just an energy type—then medicine can start moving forward in strides which will make all former steps look like those of a man in a sack race.⁴ Medicine doesn't have any spare helium, for

one thing.

How high this life force can go on the survival scale is not known. Above zone 3 is the area of question marks. A Clear goes up into a level of persistence, vigor, tenacity, rationality and happiness. Perhaps someday a Clear will attain the nebulosity the author used to hear about in India which marked the man who was all soul.

How far down it can go is definitely known. A man dies. He doesn't move or think. He dies as an organism,

2. inextricably: in a way incapable of being disentangled, undone, loosed or solved.

3. helium: one of the chemical elements, a very light, inert, colorless gas: it is used for inflating balloons, etc.

4. sack race: a race in which each contestant jumps ahead while his or her legs are confined in a sack.

159

L. RON HUBBARD

then he dies as cells. There are different periods of "life after death" for the cells, and biologists remark that the hair and nail cells do not die for months. So here is a spectrum of death, first the organism and then, colony by colony, the cells.

That is from the bottom of zone 0 downward. But what we are interested in is the area from zone 1 down to the bottom of zone 0. It could be postulated that the analytical mind has its greatest bounce against the suppressor, its highest ability to care for the organism, when it is in the third zone. As the suppressor thrusts downward against it, the analyzer, within lower zone 3, thrusts heavily back. This is necessity at work. The necessity level can rise, in this action, to a point which keys out* all engrams!

It must be realized that the analyzer considers future suppressors and is continually engaged upon computations which pose problems of the future which the analyzer resolves—this is one of the functions of the imagination. It must further be realized that the analyzer is engaged upon a multitude of computations about the present, for the analytical mind is dealing continually with an enormous number of factors which comprise the suppressor of the present and the suppressor of the future. It computes, for instance, on the alliances with friends and symbiotes and its greatest victories are achieved by taking some of the suppressor and turning it into an alliance factor.

The individual can be visualized, on the survival spectrum, as being at the tip of the survival dynamic. The suppressor thrusts down, or future suppressors threaten a thrust, and the analytical mind thrusts up with solutions. The level of the individual is determined

5. key out: cause an engram (or engrams) to drop away without being erased.

160

F

! EMOTION AND THE DYNAMICS

| by how well these suppressors are apparently met.

We speak now of the Clear, and until further mention we will continue to use the Clear. The Clear is an unaberrated person. He is rational in that he forms the best possible solutions he can on the data he has and from his viewpoint. He obtains the maximum pleasure for the organism, present and future, as well as for the subjects along the other dynamics. The Clear has no engrains which can be restimulated to throw out the correctness of computation by entering hidden and false data into it. No aberration. Hence the reason we use him here as an example.

The survival dynamic is high, more than balancing

the suppressor. Take this as a first condition. This would

place the dynamic in zone 3, tone 3.9. Now increase the

suppressor. The dynamic is pushed back to tone 3.2.

Necessity surges up. The suppressor is thrust back. The

I dynamic is once more at tone 3.9. This action could be

termed an enthusiastic resurgence. The individual has

actually gotten "angry"—that is to say, he has called

upon his being to furnish power for thought and action.

Mentally, he calls upon whatever constitutes mental en-

- ergy. Physically, if the suppression was physical, he would

call upon his adrenaline. This is proper use of the endo-

crines, to use them for regaining position in relation to the

suppressor. Any and all body function is under analytical

(but not necessarily monitored) command.

! Now let us suppose that the suppressor surges down

against the dynamic and drives the dynamic to 3.0.

Necessity level comes up. Action is taken. The full

i force of the being is thrown against the suppressor. Now

[let us suppose that a new factor comes into the suppres-

; sor and makes it much, much stronger. The individual

; still attempts to resurge against it. But the suppressor

weighs heavier and heavier against him. He is beginning

to exhaust his supplies of mental or physical energy (and

161

L. RON HUBBARD

this suppressor can be on either a mental or physical level). Wearying, the individual drops down to a 2.5. The suppressor again increases. Resurgence is attempted once more. The last supply of available energy or data is thrown out. And another factor comes into the suppressor, increasing its weight. The individual sags down to 2.0.

At exactly this point the analyzer, having failed, finally cuts out. Here is entered the top of zone 1. Hostility sets in. The suppressor is down, pressing down against actual cellular survival. And it drops lower. The individual goes into anger, recruiting cellularly, but not sentiently, the last forces. Again the suppressor gets new weight. The individual goes into rage. Once more the suppressor drops. The individual goes into fear, tone 0.9. Again the suppressor lowers, recruiting new factors. The individual is thrust down to 0.6 and, here, is in terror. Once more the suppressor drops with new force. The individual slides into fear paralysis, 0.2.

Suppose we parallel this in a very simple, dramatic example so that we do not have to consider a thousand subtle factors. A Clear, inexperienced in hunting, determines to shoot a grizzly.⁶ He has a fine rifle. The grizzly appears to be easy game. The man is at 3.9 or above. He feels good. He is going to get that grizzly, as the grizzly has been threatening the man's stock.¹ High enthusiasm carries him to the lair. He waits, he finally sees the grizzly. There is a cliff above the man which he could not ordinarily climb. But to get a good shot before the grizzly vanishes, the man has to climb the cliff. Seeing he was in danger of losing the game brought

6. grizzly: short for grizzly bear: a large, ferocious, brownish, grayish or yellowish bear of western North America, having a shoulder hump and long front claws.

7. stock: cattle or other farm or range animals; livestock.

162

EMOTION AND THE DYNAMICS

the man down to 3.2. Necessity sends him up the cliff. He fires but in firing falls back down the cliff. The grizzly is wounded. He starts toward the man. Necessity surges up. The man recovers the gun and shoots again. He is at 3.0 the moment he shoots. He misses. He fires again but the miss, with the grizzly charging, brought him down to 2.5. He shoots once more. The grizzly takes the ball and keeps on coming. The man shoots again but he has suddenly realized that his rifle is not going to stop this grizzly. His tone drops to 2.0. He begins to snarl and feverishly work his gun. His bullets go wild. He experiences rage at the gun, the grizzly, the world, and throws the gun away, ready to meet the grizzly, almost upon him, with bare hands. Suddenly the man knows fear. His tone is 1.2. It drops to 0.9 with a smell in his nostrils of the bear. He knows the bear will kill him. He turns and tries to claw up the cliff and get away but his efforts are frenzied. He is at tone 0.6, stark terror. The bear strikes him and knocks him from the cliffside. The man lies still, breathing almost halted, heartbeat slowed to nearly nothing. The bear hits him

again and the man lies still. Then the bear decides he is dead and walks away. Shaken, the man eventually comes around, his tone gradually rising up to 2.0, the point where his analyzer shut off. He stirs more and gets up. His tone is back to 2.5: he is analytically afraid and cautious. He recovers his gun. He begins to leave the scene. He feels a great necessity to recoup his own self-esteem and his tone comes to 3.2. He walks away and reaches a safe area. Suddenly it occurs to him that he can borrow a friend's Mauser.⁸ He begins to make plans to get that bear. His enthusiasm mounts. But, completely aside from the engram received when the bear knocked him out, he acts on his experience. Three days later he kills the bear and his tone rises to 4.0 for the

8. Mauser: a brand of military or hunting rifles.

163

L. RON HUBBARD

space of contemplation and telling the tale, and then his mind occupies itself with new matters.

Life is much more complicated than the business of killing grizzlies, usually a lot less dramatic but always full of situations which cause a fluctuation of the suppressor. The gaining of all pleasurable goals—a bear killed, a woman kissed, a seat in the front row at the opera, a friend won, an apple stolen—are sweeps through various levels of tone. And the individual is generally carrying on three or three thousand computations at once and there are thirty or thirty thousand variables in his computations. Too many unknowns, too many entrances of "didn't know the gun was loaded" factors: all these can throw the analyzer from a direct alignment into the scattered dispersal of nonfunction. The analyzer can be considered to cut out when tone 2.0 is reached. From 2.5 down, the computations it makes are not very rational—too many unknowns, too many unexpected factors, too many discoveries of miscalculations.

This is living on a "Clear" basis. When our hunter was hit by the bear he received an engram. That engram, when it keyed in, would give him a fear, an apathy attitude, in the presence of certain factors: every per-ceptic present—the smell of that ground, twigs, bear breath, etc. But he killed the bear. The chances of that engram keying in are remote. Not because he killed the bear but because he was, after all, a grown man. And, if a Clear, he could have thought back and cleared the whole thing himself.

This is a complete cycle of emotion. Enthusiasm and high pleasure are at the extreme top. Fear and paralysis are at the bottom. Feigned⁹ death, in man, is very close to the actual thing on the Tone Scale. It is a valid mechanism. But it is complete apathy.

9. feigned: pretended, simulated; sham.

164

EMOTION AND THE DYNAMICS

So long as the analyzer is operating, the receipt of an engram is impossible. Everything files in the standard banks. As soon as the border 2.0 is passed on the way down, "unconsciousness" can be judged to have set in and anything registered, in company with pain or painful emotion, is an engram. This is not a shift of definition. The analyzer cuts out, with surgical anesthetic, at 2.0. The anesthetic may depress the level of awareness further. Pain may depress it even more. But depressing the level of awareness is not necessarily depressing emotion. How much conceived danger or sympathy is present in the environment? This is what depresses the Tone Scale. There can be a reactive engram which contains a tone 4.0, or one that contains a 1.0 or another that contains a 0.1. This is not, then, quite two-dimensional, this emotion.

The level of depth of consciousness can be affected by painful emotion, poisons or other things which depress awareness. After that it is all engram, and the engrams have their own Tone Scale which runs from 4.0 down to 0.1.

It can be seen now that two things are at work. First is the state of physical being. It is this which tunes down the analyzer. Then there is the mental state of being. This is what tunes down the emotional Tone Scale.

But remember that in engrams there is another factor present: valence. Once its own analyzer is out, the body will assume the evaluation or emotional condition of any other analyzer present. Here we have affinity at work in earnest. "Unconscious" in the presence of other beings, an individual picks up a valence for every other being present. Some of these valences are incidental. He will pick first that valence which is most sympathetic as a desirable future friend (or some similar person). And he will pick that valence which is the

165

L. RON HUBBARD

top valence (highest survival, the boss, the winner) for his dramatization. He will also take the valence of the winning entity (winning over himself or others) for emotional tone. If the winning valence is also the sympathetic valence, he has an engram which can be utilized to its fullest extent.

Let us make this an example: a man is under nitrous oxide (the most vicious anesthetic ever invented, as it is actually not anesthetic but a hypnotic) undergoing exodontistry.¹⁰ As usual, everybody present around the "unconscious" patient chatters and yaps about the patient, the weather, the most popular movie star or baseball. The exodontist is a tough character, bossy to the nurse, apt to be angry about trifles; he is also very sympathetic toward the patient. The nurse is a blue-eyed blonde who is sexually aberrated. The patient—actually in agony, receiving an engram amongst engrams which may ruin his life (terrible stuff, nitrous oxide; really hands out a fancy engram as any Dianeticist can attest)—is unanalytical. Everything said to him or around him is taken literally. He takes the valence of the exodontist as both the top valence present and the sympathetic valence. But every phrase uttered is aberrative and will be interpreted by that happy little moron, the reactive mind, on the order of Simple Simon" who was told he had to be careful how he stepped in the pies, so he stepped in them carefully. These people may be talking about somebody else but every "I" or "he" or "you" uttered is engramic and will be applied to others and himself by the patient in the most literal sense. "He can't remember anything," says the exodontist. All right, when the engram keys in,

10. exodontistry: the extraction of teeth.

11. Simple Simon: a foolish character in the well-known anonymous nursery rhyme: "Simple Simon met a pieman, going to the fair; Says Simple Simon to the pieman, 'Let me taste your ware. . . .'"

166

EMOTION AND THE DYNAMICS

this patient will have an occlusion on memory in greater or lesser degree. "He can't see or feel it": this means an occlusion on sight, pain and tactile. If the patient has his eyes watering in agony at the moment (though completely "under"), he may get actual bad vision as well as poor visual recall from this experience. Now they put him in the hands of this blonde nurse to let him sleep off the drug and recover. She is an aberree amongst aberrees. She knows patients do weird things when they are still "out" so she pumps him for information about his life. And she knows they are hypnotic (yes, she sure does) so she gives him some positive suggestions. Amusing herself. She says he'll like her. That she'll be good to him. And stay there now for the present.

So the poor patient, who has had two wisdom teeth, impacted, taken out, has a full anger-sympathy dramatization. The general tone he takes is the tone the exodontist showed to the others in the room. The exodontist was angry at the nurse. With his recalls all messed up, the patient a few years later meets a woman similar to this nurse. The nurse has given him compulsions toward her. The silly little moron, the reactive mind, sees in this entirely different person enough similarity to create an identity between the nurse and this new woman. So the patient divorces his wife and marries the pseudonurse.¹² Only now that he has married the pseudonurse, the dental engram begins to key in in earnest. Physically he gets ill: the two molars adjacent to where the wisdom teeth came out develop large cavities and begin to rot (circulation shutdown, pain in the area but can't be felt because there's a pain recall shut-off). His memory goes to pieces. His recalls become worse. He begins to

12. pseudo-: combining form meaning "closely or deceptively similar to (a specified thing)," as in pseudonurse, pseudomother, pseudofather, etc.

167

L. RON HUBBARD

develop eye trouble and a strange conjunctivitis. Further (because the dentist leaned on his chest and stomach with a sharp elbow from time to time), he has chest and stomach pains. The nitrous oxide hurt his lungs and this pain is also in chronic restimulation. But most horrible: he believes that this pseudonurse will take care of him and he stops to some degree taking care of himself in any way; his energy dissipates; and analytically he knows it is all wrong and that he is not himself. For he is now fixed in the valence of the exodontist who is angry with this nurse and so he beats the pseudonurse because he senses that from her all evil flows. The girl he married is not and was not the nurse: she sounds something like her and is a blonde. She has her own engrams and reacts. She attempts suicide.

Then, one day, since this is one engram among many, the mental hospital gets our patient and the doctors there decide that all he needs is a good solid series of electric shocks to tear his brain up, and if that doesn't work, a nice ice pick into each eyeball after and during electric shock, the ice pick sweeping a wide arc to tear the analytical mind to pieces. His wife agrees. Our patient can't defend himself: he's insane and the insane have no rights, you know.

Only the cavalry, in this one case, arrived in the form of Dianetics and cleared the patient and the wife and they are happy today. This is an actual engram and an actual case history. It is a sympathy engram, prosur-vival on the moronic reactive mind level.

This is to show the ebb and flow of emotion within this one engram. The physical being is out and in agony. The mental being is given a variety of emotional tones on a contagion principle. The actual emotional tone of the patient, his own, is beaten apathy; hence, he can no longer "be himself."

In passing, it should be mentioned that only absolute

168

EMOTION AND THE DYNAMICS

silence, utter silence and tomblike silence should attend an operation or injury of any kind. There is nothing which can be said or given as a perceptic in any moment of "unconsciousness" which is beneficial to a patient. Nothing! In the light of these researches and scientific findings (which can be proven in any other laboratory or group of people in very short order), speech or sound in the vicinity of an "unconscious" person should be punished criminally as, to anyone who knows these facts, such an act would be a willful effort to destroy the intellect or mental balance of an individual. If the patient is complimented, as in hypnosis or during an injury or operation, a manic is formed which will give him temporary euphoria and eventually plunge him into the depressive stage of the cycle.*

The golden rule could be altered to read: If you love your brother, keep your mouth shut when he is unconscious.

* The author is well aware that many physicians, in using narcosynthesis [drug hypnotism], have occasionally accidentally entered "unconscious" periods. They have promptly considered, then, that these areas were equivocal, that the patient was probably not unconscious. In Dianetic research, patients have been rendered "unconscious" to the satisfaction of two doctors, both skeptical (since no longer skeptical) and have been given material which the Dianeticist knew nothing about. Along with the complete data of the tests—as muttered by the doctors as they took them to make sure by blood pressure, respiration, etc., that the patient could not be more "unconscious" unless he were dead, the data were recovered in full in every case and for every condition of "unconsciousness." Two patients were for a time severely aberrated by the careless comments of the anesthetizing and examining doctors: a note added to warn those attempting this experiment in the future. This is the stuff of which insanity is made. Be careful with it when manhandling patients. —LRH

169

L. RON HUBBARD

Emotion can be seen then to exist in two planes, the personal plane and the extravalance plane. It is communicable in terms of identical thinking. Rage present when a man is "unconscious" will give him a tone 1 engram: it will contain rage. Apathy present in the vicinity of an "unconscious" person will give him a tone 0 engram. Happiness present during an engram is not very aberrative but will give a tone 4 engram. And so forth. In other words, the emotions of those present around an "unconscious" person are communicated into the person as part of his engram. Any mood can be so communicated.

In dramatizing an engram, the aberree always takes the winning valence and that valence is not, of course, himself. If only one other person is present and the other is talking in terms of apathy, then the apathy is the tone value of the engram. When an apathy engram is restimulated, the individual, unless he wants to be hurt severely, is apathetic and this tone, being the nearest to death, is the most dangerous one to the individual. The rage emotion communicated to an "unconscious" person gives him a rage engram he can dramatize. This is most harmful to the society. A merely hostile tone present around an "unconscious" person gives him a merely hostile engram (covert hostility). With two people present, each having a different mood, the "unconscious" person receives an engram with two valences other than his own. When this happens he will first dramatize the winning valence with its mood and, if forced from this, will dramatize the second valence with its mood. Driven from this in a chronic engram, he goes insane.

Nothing here should be construed to mean that a person only uses or dramatizes sympathy engrams. This is very far from the case. The sympathy engram gives him the chronic psychosomatic illness. He can dramatize any engram he has when it is restimulated.

170

EMOTION AND THE DYNAMICS

Emotion, then, is communication and a personal condition. The cellular level evaluation of a situation depends upon any other analyzer present, even if that analyzer is thoroughly hostile to it. Lacking such evaluation, the individual takes his own tone for the moment.

There is another condition of emotion which is of extreme and useful interest to the therapist since it is

the first thing with which he will have to deal in opening a case. We do not mean here to start discussing therapy but to describe a necessary part of emotion.

Great loss and other swift and severe suppressor action dams up emotion in an engram. Loss itself can be a shock to reduce analytical power. And an engram is received. If it is the loss of a sympathetic person on whom an individual has depended, it seems to the individual as if death itself stalks him. When such a suppressor effect occurs, it is as if a strong steel spring had been compressed within the engram. When it releases, it comes with a terrible rush of emotion (if this discharge is, indeed, emotion, though we hardly know what other name to call it).

Life force apparently gets dammed up at these points in life. There may be enormous quantities of that life force available but some of it becomes suppressed into a loss engram. After that the person does not seem to possess as much fluid vitality as before. This may be not emotion but life force itself. The mind, then, has below it, as in a cyst, a great quantity of sorrow or despair. The more of these charges exist in such an encysted state, the less free are the emotions of the individual. This may be on a basis of suppression to a point from which there is no swift rising. Nothing in the person's future seems to bring him up to any plane like those he occupied before.

The glory and color of childhood vanishes as one progresses into later years. But the strange part of it is

171

L. RON HUBBARD

that this glamour and beauty and sensitivity to life are not gone. They are encysted. One of the most remarkable experiences a Clear has is to find, in the process of therapy, that he is recovering appreciation of the beauty in the world.

Persons, as they live forward from childhood, suffer loss after loss, and each loss takes from them a little more of this 6 quantity which may be, indeed, life force itself. Bound up within them, that force is denied them and, indeed, reacts against them.

Only this emotional encysting can, for instance, compartment the mind of a person who is multivalent or who cannot see or hear his past. The analytical mind, worked upon by the reactive bank, compartments and divides with loss after loss until there is no free flow left. Then a man dies.

Thus we could say that emotion, or what has been called emotion, is really in two sections: first, there is the endocrine system which, handled either by the analytical mind in the upper two zones or the reactive mind in the lower two zones, brings emotional responses of fear, enthusiasm, apathy, etc.; second, there would be life force itself becoming compartmented by engrams and being sealed up, little by little, in the reactive bank.

It is possible that a therapy could be formulated which would spring out these various life force charges only and create thereby a full Clear. Unfortunately, to date, this has not been possible.

The odd part of emotion is that it is so ordinarily based on the word content of engrams. If an engram says, "I am afraid," then the aberree is afraid. If an engram says, "I am calm," even if the rest of the engram gives him chattering shakes, the aberree still has to be "calm."

The problem of emotion as endocrine balance and

172

EMOTION AND THE DYNAMICS

life force has another complication in that the physical pain in an engram is often mistaken for a particular emotion named in the engram. For instance, the engram can say with verbal content that the individual is "sexually excited" and have, as a pain content, an ache in the legs and have, as an actual emotional content (the valence that says, "I'm sexually excited"), anger. This, to the aberree dramatizing it, is a complex affair. When he is "sexually excited"—he has an idea what that means as just language—he is also angry and has an ache in the legs. This is actually very amusing in many cases and has led to a standard set of clinical jokes, all of which begin with, "You know, I feel like everybody else."

Dianeticists, having discovered that people evaluate the emotions, beliefs, intelligence and somatics of the world in terms of their own engramic reactions, delight in discovering new concepts of "emotion." "You know how people feel when they're happy. Their ears burn." "I feel just like anybody else when I'm happy; my feet and eyes ache." "Of course I know how people feel when they're happy; just pin prickles going all over them." "I wonder how people can stand to be passionate when it makes their noses hurt so." "Of course I know how people feel when they're excited; they have to go to the toilet."

Probably every person on Earth has his own peculiar definition for every emotional state in terms of engram command. The command plus the somatics and perceptions make what they call an "emotional state."

Actually, the problem, then, should be defined in terms of the Clear, who can function without engramic orders from the reactive mind. So defined, it breaks down in terms of the endocrine system and the varying level of life force free to resurge against the suppressor.

173

L. RON HUBBARD

Laughter, it should be added, is not, strictly speaking, an emotion but a relief from emotion. The early Italians had a very definite idea, as represented by their folk tales, that laughter was of therapeutic value. Melancholy¹³ was the only mental illness these tales consider and laughter was its only cure. In Dianetics, we have a great deal to do with laughter. In therapy, patients vary in their laughter reaction from the slight chuckle to hilarious mirth. Any engram which really releases may be expected to begin somewhere between tears and boredom and end with laughter; the nearer the engram's tone is to tears at the first contact, the more certainly laughter will appear as it is relieved.

There is a stage of therapy often reached by the preclear when his entire past life seems to be a subject of uncontrollable mirth. This does not mean he is Clear but it means that a large proportion of the encysted charges have been tapped.¹⁴ A preclear has laughed for two days almost without ceasing. Hebephrenia¹⁵ is not the same thing as this laughter, for the relief of the preclear on realizing the shadowy aspect and completely knowable character of his past fears and terrors is hearty.

Laughter plays a definite role in therapy. It is quite amusing to see a preclear, who has been haunted by an engram which contained great emotional charge, suddenly relieve it, for the situation, no matter how gruesome it was, when relieved, is in all its aspects a subject of great mirth. The laughter fades away as he becomes

13. melancholy: a gloomy state of mind, especially when habitual or prolonged; depression.

14. tapped: penetrated, opened up, reached into, etc., for the purpose of using something or drawing something off.

15. hebephrenia: (psychiatry) a form of aberration characterized by childish or silly behavior.

174

EMOTION AND THE DYNAMICS

disinterested in it and he can be said to be "tone 3" about it.

Laughter is definitely the relief of painful emotion.*

* The complete Tone Scale, its use in predicting the behavior of others as well as assisting in auditing, is given in the book Science of Survival, by L. Ron Hubbard.

175

Prenatal Experience and Birth

Old women less than a hundred years ago talked wisely about "prenatal influence" and how a woman marked her child. Many such intuitive thoughts are based, actually, on observed data. It can be observed that the child born out of wedlock is often a luckless creature (in a society which frowns upon such bearings). These tenets have been held in the marketplace for a great many millennia. Just because they have been held is no reason they are true, but they make an excellent beginning for a chapter on prenatal experience and birth.

If Dianetics had worked on obscure theories, such as those of the old women or those of the mystics who believe that "childish delusions" are capable of aberrating a child, Dianetics would not be a science of mind. But it was no obscure theory which brought about the discovery of the exact role prenatal experience and birth play in aberration and psychosomatic ills.

Many schools of mental healing from the Aescula-pian to the modern hypnotist were studied after the basic philosophy of Dianetics had been postulated. Much data was accumulated, many experiments were made. The fundamentals about engrams had been formulated and "unconsciousness" had been discovered as being a period of actual recording, when the theory began to predict new phenomena not hitherto observed.

1. prenatal: existing or taking place before birth.

176

PRENATAL EXPERIENCE AND BIRTH

There has been, in recent years, a practice called "narco-synthesis."² This was actually a branch of "hyp-noanalysis"³ and "deep analysis."⁴ It did not produce Clears and it did not even produce alleviation in the majority of its cases. But it was discovered to be an aberrative factor in itself. A thing which aberrates may well lead to something which removes aberrations if it is studied scientifically. Narcosynthesis was so studied. Several cases were examined on which narcosynthesis had been employed. Some of these cases had experienced relief from narcosynthesis. Others had become a great deal worse.

Working with hypnoanalysis it was discovered that the technique could be varied until it would actually remove the aberrative charge contained in locks. In treating schizophrenics with narcosynthesis it was found that the locks (periods of mental anguish not including physical pain or "unconsciousness") would sometimes spring (clear) and sometimes not.

Narcosynthesis is a complicated name for a very ancient process quite well known in Greece and India. It is drug hypnotism. And it is generally employed either by those practitioners who do not know hypnosis or on those patients who will not succumb to ordinary hypnotism. A shot of sodium pentothal is given intravenously to the patient and he is asked to count backwards. Shortly he stops counting at which the injection is also stopped. The patient is now in a state of "deep sleep." That this is not sleep seems to have missed both

2. narcosynthesis: the practice of inducing sleep with drugs and then talking to the patient to draw out buried thoughts.

3. hypnoanalysis: (psychoanalysis) the use of hypnosis or hypnotic drugs in combination with psychoanalytic techniques.

4. deep analysis: depth therapy: a form of psychotherapy that attempts to work through unconscious conflicts to resolve problems in behavior.

177

L. RON HUBBARD

narcosynthesists and hypnotists. It is actually a depressant on the awareness of an individual so that those attention units which remain behind the curtain of his reactive bank can be reached directly. These attention units are up against the standard banks. The bypass circuits (demon circuits) which lie between these banks and "I" have themselves been bypassed. In other words, a section of the analytical mind has been exposed which is not aberrated. It is not very powerful and it is not highly intelligent, but it has the advantage of being hard up against the standard banks. This is basic personality? The intent and purpose and persistence of these few attention units have the same quality and direction as the whole analytical mind would have if it were Clear. It is a very nice, cooperative group of attention units and it is very useful; for basic personality has all recalls—sonic, audio, tactile, smell, pain, etc. It can get at anything that is in the banks—which is everything perceived or thought in a lifetime, minute by minute. These qualities of basic personality have been very poorly described in hypnotism, and it is doubtful even if it was generally known that sonic was part of the recall system disclosed by deep hypnotism or the drug hypnotism called narcosynthesis.

A study of basic personality in a multivalent subject who had poor memory, no good recalls and scant imagination disclosed the information that BP (the attention units called basic personality) was more able to select out data than AP (aberrated personality, as represented by the awake subject). It was further discovered that AP could ordinarily return better than BP so far as time-distance went but that when AP arrived at the

5. basic personality: the individual himself. The basic individual is not a buried unknown or a different person, but an intensity of all that is best and most able in the person.

178

PRENATAL EXPERIENCE AND BIRTH

earliest place it was unable to manage recall. But if AP had gone back and established a vague contact with an incident, drug hypnotism or standard hypnotism used on him when he was in present time (no longer returned) would then permit BP to return. Drug hypnotism has seldom been able to force back very early into a patient's life. But by making the strength of AP go back and then using BP for the recall, some very early incidents could be reached. This trick was invented to overcome some of the difficulties which had made drug hypnosis relatively uncertain in results.

Then another factor was discovered. All those patients who had been treated by narcosynthesis had become worse every time the people doing the work had crossed over but left (because "everybody knew" an "unconscious" person didn't record) a period of "unconsciousness." When one of these "unconscious" periods was so probed—by the drug hypnosis called narcosynthesis—the patient usually became worse, not better. Doing a little more probing than had been done by the usual practitioners, Dianetic research entered some of the late-life "unconscious" periods and, with much labor, laid them bare.

Now, all drug hypnosis, whether it is called narcosynthesis or a visit from the god Aesculapius, is still hypnosis. Whatever is said to a hypnotized subject remains as a positive suggestion, and these positive suggestions are simply engrams with a somewhat lighter effect and a shorter duration. When a drug is present the hypnotism is complicated by the fact that hypnotic drugs are, after all, poisons; the body is then possessed of a permanent (at least until Dianetics was discovered) somatic to go along with the suggestion. Drug hypnotism invariably creates an engram. Whatever a practitioner says to a drugged subject becomes engramic in some degree. In the course of Dianetic research, it first was supposed, playing back the careless chatter of

179

L. RON HUBBARD

practitioners out of the minds of patients they had placed under drug hypnosis, that this carelessness in saying so many aberrative things was responsible for some of the failure: But this was found to be true in a very limited sense. Then it was discovered that when the "unconscious" periods were reached by drug hypnosis they refused to lift even when the patient recounted them scores of times. This was blamed on the drug character of the hypnosis.

Straight hypnotism was then used to reach these late "unconscious" periods and these periods still failed to lift. Therefore it was adjudged safe to continue drug use on those patients who refused hypnosis. And the AP-BP alternate trick began to be employed.

It was discovered by drug hypnosis, where it was necessary, and straight hypnosis, where that was possible, that the "schizophrenic" (the multivalent aberree) could be made to reach very early periods in every case. And it was further found that an early period of "unconsciousness" would often lift. Experimentation brought about a scientific axiom: The earlier the period of "unconsciousness" the more likely it is to lift. That is a fundamental axiom of Dianetic therapy.

Manic-depressives who had sonic recall were worked upon, most of them by straight hypnosis, and it was discovered that they also followed this rule. But it was most dramatic in the multivalent aberree: for when the engram did not lift, it impinged against his analytical mind when he was awakened and created a variation in his psychoses and brought with it psychosomatic illnesses as well.

This brought about an understanding of why the multivalent aberree, under narcosynthesis, was made worse whenever some practitioner had glided over (but not entered, of course) a late-life period of "unconsciousness." Now came the problem of applying the

ISO

PRENATAL EXPERIENCE AND BIRTH

axiom. It was postulated that the primary engram must in some way suppress later engrams. In view of other data and postulates, this was an entirely reasonable assumption. The earlier a person went in the life of a multivalent aberree the less likelihood there was of restimulating him artificially. Often an engram at around two or three years of age would lift entirely and give him a great deal of relief.

The problem of this research was very far from the same problem of those who, not knowing about the reactive mind and "unconsciousness," tried merely to find computing factors on a rational level or incidents of everyday life as aberrative factors in a patient.

When an engram is touched, it is very resistive, particularly above the age of two years. Further, the

whole reactive bank was buried deeply under foggy layers of "unconsciousness," and was further safeguarded by a mechanism of the analytical mind which tended to prohibit it from touching pain or painful emotion. The reactive bank was protecting itself all the way through the research but it was obviously the answer. The problem was how to achieve its relief, if it could be relieved.

Having made several multivalent personalities intensely uncomfortable, a new necessity level was reached whereby something had to be done about the problem. But there was this shining hope, the above axiom. A bridge between insanity and sanity had to be built and there, in the axiom, one had at least a glimmer of a plan. The earlier one had experienced this fog and pain, the lighter these engrams seemed to be.

Then, one day, a multivalent patient, under drugs, went back to his birth. He suffered the pain—and it was very painful with this crude technique, for Dianetics had not yet smoothed down to a well-oiled piece of machinery—and he floundered through the "unconsciousness" of the period and he fought the doctor who had tried to

181

L. RON HUBBARD

put drops in his eyes and he generally resented the entire proceedings. AP had been sent down first, then later, under drugs, BP had contacted the incident.

This seemed a remarkable day for Dianetics. After twenty runs through birth, the patient experienced a recession of all somatics and "unconsciousness" and aberrative content. He had had asthma. It seemed that this asthma had been caused by the doctor's enthusiasm in yanking him off the table just when he was fighting for his first breath. He had had conjunctivitis. That came from the eye drops. He had had sinusitis. That had come from the nose swabs used by the pretty nurse.

Rejoicing was held, for he seemed to be a new man. A primary psychosis about being "pushed around" had vanished. The subjective reality of this incident was intense. Objective reality did not matter, but this patient had a mother near at hand and objective reality was established simply by returning her in therapy to his birth. They had not communicated about it in detail. The recording of her sequence compared word for word with his sequence, detail for detail, name for name. Possibility, even if they had communicated, of such duplication, outside the Dianetic situation, was mathematically impossible. And she had been "unconscious" during his birth and had always supposed that the affair had been quite different and the return data collapsed her awake description of it as being so much fable.

In order to make sure that this was no freak (for it is a very poor research man who will base conclusions on a series of one), two manic-depressives were returned to their births and both completed the experience. But one of these two birth engrams would not lift!

The postulated axiom was called into play again. If one could find the earliest engram, then the others would lift each in turn. That was the hope.

The manic-depressive whose birth had not lifted was

182

PRENATAL EXPERIENCE AND BIRTH

returned to a period before birth in an effort to find an earlier engram.

Structural theories, as fondly held for ages, had thoroughly collapsed already when "unconscious" fog and pain had been penetrated to discover the engram as an aberrative unit. Tests had held up the discovery that all data, awake, asleep and "unconscious," from the moment of conception on, was always recorded somewhere in the mind or body. The little matter of myelin sheathing,⁶ since it had already been disproven by laboratory research which included the reaching of birth, was discarded. The theory that no recordings can take place in the mind until the nerves are sheathed depends upon a theoretical postulate, has never been subjected to scientific research and depends for its existence upon authority alone—and a "science" which depends on authority alone is a breath in the wind of truth and is therefore no science at all. That babies cannot record until the myelin sheathing is formed has about as much truth, on investigation, as the fact that penis envy⁷ is the cause of female homosexuality. Neither theory, when applied, works. For the baby, after all, is composed of cells and it is evidenced now by much research that the cell, not an organ, records the engram.

Thus there was no inhibition about looking earlier than birth for what Dianetics had begun to call basic-basic (the first engram of the first chain of engrams). And an earlier engram was reached.

It has since been discovered that a great deal of recording is done by the child in the womb which is not

engramic. For a time it was thought that the child in the womb records on the proposition of "extended hearing."

6. myelin sheathing: the fatty layer of tissues coating the nerves.

7. penis envy: (psychoanalysis) the repressed wish of a female to possess a penis.

183

L. RON HUBBARD

where hearing tunes up in the presence of danger and particularly during "unconsciousness." But the first research discovered prenatal engrams to be most easily reached when they contained a great deal of pain. Cells, not the individual, are evidenced to record pain. And the reactive engram bank is composed only of cells.

Recourse to nature rather than recourse to authority is the very building block of modern science. So long as Galen⁸ remained an authority on blood, none but "madmen" like da Vinci, Shakespeare⁹ and William Harvey¹⁰ even thought to experiment to find out what truly was the action of blood! So long as Aristotle¹¹ remained the authority for all, the Dark Ages reigned. Advance comes from asking free-minded questions of nature, not from quoting the works and thinking the thoughts of bygone years. Recourse to precedent is an assertion that yesterday's mentors¹² were better informed than today's: an assertion which fades before the truth that knowledge is compounded of the experience of yesterdays, of which we have more, most certainly, than the best-informed mentor of yesterday itself.

In that Dianetics was based on a philosophy that used the cell as the basic building block, the fact that recording of engrams was done by cells came with less

8. Galen: (ca. 130-200 A.D.) Greek physician whose works were for centuries the standards for anatomy and physiology. Though Galen gave good descriptions of some of the human body's different parts and their functions, his observations and conclusions on the circulation of the blood were far from correct.

9. Shakespeare: William Shakespeare (1564-1616), English poet and dramatist of the Elizabethan period (1558-1603), the most widely known author in all English literature.

10. William Harvey: (1578-1657) English physician and anatomist, discoverer of the mechanics of blood circulation.

11. Aristotle: (384-322 B.C.) Greek philosopher noted for his works on logic, ethics, politics, etc.

12. mentors: wise and trusted counselors or teachers.

184

PRENATAL EXPERIENCE AND BIRTH

surprise than it otherwise might have. The engram is not a memory; it is a cellular trace of recordings impinged deeply into the very structure of the body itself.

The experience of which cells themselves were capable had already been tested. It had been found that a monocyte divided not only its substance but gave its total experience, as a master disc will make duplicates, to its offspring. Now, this is a peculiarity of monocytes: they survive as identities. Each is personally its forebear.¹³ Cell A divides to a first generation; this generation is also Cell A; the second generation, the second division, creates an entity which is still Cell A. Lacking the necessity of such laborious processes as construction and birth and growth before reproduction, the monocyte simply splits. And everything it has learned could be postulated to be contained in the new generation. Cell A dies but through generations from it, the latest generation is still Cell A. Man's belief that he is to live in his progeny might possibly derive from this cellular identity of procreation. Another interesting possibility lies in the fact that even neurons exist in embryo¹⁴ in the zygote, and neurons do not themselves divide but are like organisms (and may have the virus as their basic building block).

Dianetics, as a study of function and the science of mind, does not need any postulate concerning structure, however. The only test is whether or not a fact works. If it does work and can be used, it is a scientific fact. And the prenatal engram is a scientific fact. Tested and checked for objective reality, it still stands firm. And as for subjective reality, the acceptance of the prenatal engram as a working fact alone makes possible the Clear.

13. forebear: ancestor.

14. embryo: an early or undeveloped stage of something.

185

L. RON HUBBARD

At the end of a series of 270 Clears and alleviations, a short series of five cases was taken to finally settle the argument. These five cases were not permitted to admit anything before birth. They were treated with everything Dianetics, hypnotism and other therapeutics could offer, and no Clear was obtained. This ruled out the "personality of the operator" or "suggestion" or "faith" as factors in Dianetics. These five cases had never been informed of prenatal engrams. Each swerved in toward them but was restrained without informing him that engrams existed that early. The five were alleviated as to some variety of psychosomatic ills but the ills were only alleviated, not completely cured. The aberrations remained but little changed. They were extremely disappointed since each had heard something of "the miracles Dianetics could perform." Before them, 270 cases had been worked and 270 cases had reached prenatal engrams. And 270 cases had been cleared or alleviated as the Dianeticist chose and time permitted. All could have been cleared with an additional average of 100 or so hours for each of the persons who were alleviated. In short, on random cases—and selected cases, so that at least two of each classification of neurosis or psychosis were included in the clearing—when prenatal engrams and birth were taken into account and used in therapy, results were obtained. When these factors were not taken into account, results were no more favorable than those attained in the best successes of past schools—which is not nearly good enough for a science of mind.

Dianetics had prenatal and birth engrams wished off on it as facts existing in the nature of things. That past schools have been passing over these engrams and into the prenatal area without success does not mean that prenatals could not be found any more than it means that these past schools found much value in prenatal

186

PRENATAL EXPERIENCE AND BIRTH

experience when they considered it at all. The problem is slightly more complex: the difficulty lay in finding the reactive bank which was occluded by "unconsciousness" which had never before been penetrated wittingly as "unconsciousness." The discovery of this reactive bank led to the discovery of prenatal engrams, which are quite different from "prenatal memory."

After a few cases had been examined as to objective and subjective reality, Dianetics was forced to accept, if it wished a Clear, the fact that the cells of the fetus¹⁵ record. A few more cases and a little more experience discovered that the embryo¹⁶ cells record. And suddenly it was discovered that recording begins in the cells of the zygote—which is to say, with conception. That the body recalls conception, which is a high-level survival activity, has little to do with engrams. Most patients to date sooner or later startle themselves by finding themselves swimming up a channel or waiting to be connected with. The recording is there. And there's little use arguing with a preclear that he cannot recall being a sperm, engramic or not as the case may be. It must be remarked because any Dianeticist will encounter this.

Anyone postulating that "return to the womb" was an ambition should have examined life in the womb a little more carefully. Even a poor scientist would have at least tried to find out if anybody could recall it before he made a statement that there was a memory of it. But life in the womb does not seem to be the paradise it has been poetically, if not scientifically, represented. Actuality discloses that three men and a horse in a telephone booth would have but little less room than an unborn baby. The womb is wet, uncomfortable and unprotected.

15. fetus: in man, the offspring in the womb from the end of the third month of pregnancy until birth.

16. embryo: a child in the womb in the first eight weeks of its development.

187

L. RON HUBBARD

Mama sneezes, baby gets knocked "unconscious." Mama runs lightly and blithely¹⁷ into a table and baby gets its head staved in. Mama has constipation and baby, in the anxious effort, gets squashed. Papa becomes passionate and baby has the sensation of being put into a running washing machine. Mama gets hysterical, baby gets an engram. Papa hits Mama, baby gets an engram. Junior bounces on Mama's lap, baby gets an engram. And so it goes.

People have scores of prenatal engrams when they are normal. They can have more than two hundred. And each one is aberrative. Each contains pain and "unconsciousness."

Engrams received as a zygote are potentially the most aberrative, being wholly reactive. Those received as an embryo are intensely aberrative. Those received as the fetus are enough to send people to institutions all by themselves.

Zygote, embryo, fetus, infant, child, adult: these are all the same person. Time has been considered the great healer. That can be filed with the things "everybody knew." On a conscious level it may be true. But on a reactive level time is nothing. The engram, whenever received, is strong in proportion to the degree it is restimulated.

The mechanism of an engram has an interesting feature. It is not "reasoned" or analyzed, nor does it have any meaning until it has been keyed in. A baby, before speech, could have an engram in restimulation, but that engram must have been keyed in by the analytical data the baby has.

The reactive mind steals meaning from the analytical mind. An engram is just so many wave recordings

17. blithely: in a manner without thought or regard; in a carefree way; heedlessly.

188

PRENATAL EXPERIENCE AND BIRTH

until it is keyed in, and those recordings, by such restimulation, become effective upon the analytical mind. It may be that the engram never has any reason or meaning in itself but only thrusts its waves forward as unreasoned things at the body and analyzer, and the body and analyzer, through mechanisms, give them meaning. In other words, the engram is not a sentient recording containing meanings. It is merely a series of impressions such as a needle might make on wax. These impressions are meaningless to the body until the en-gram keys in, at which time aberrations and psychoso-matics occur.

Thus, it can be understood that the prenatal child has no remotest idea of what is being said in terms of words. It does learn, being an organism, that certain things may mean certain dangers. But this is every bit as far as it goes with recording. The mind must become more or less fully formed before the engram can impinge into the analytical level.

The prenatal child can, of course, experience terror. When the parents or the professional abortionist start after it and thrust it full of holes, it knows fear and pain.

It has, however, this prenatal child, an advantage in its situation. Being surrounded by amniotic fluid¹⁸ and dependent for nutrition on its mother, being in a state of growth and easily re-formed physically, it can repair an enormous amount of damage and does. The recovery qualities of the human body are never higher than before birth. Damage which would maim an infant for life or would kill a grown man can be taken in stride by the prenatal child. Not that this damage does not make an engram—it certainly does, complete with all data and speech and emotion—but that this damage does not easily kill it is the point here.

18. amniotic fluid: the fluid surrounding the embryo or fetus.

189

L. RON HUBBARD

Why people try to abort children is a problem which has its answer only in aberration, for it is very difficult to abort a child. One can say that in the attempt the mother herself is in more danger of dying than the child, no matter what method is used.

A society which suppresses sex as evil and which is so aberrated that any member of it will attempt an abortion is a society which is dooming itself to ever-rising insanity. For it is a scientific fact that abortion attempts are the most important factor in aberration. The child on whom the abortion is attempted is condemned to live with murderers whom he reactively knows to be murderers through all his weak and helpless youth! He forms unreasonable attachments to grandparents, has terrified reactions to all punishments, grows ill easily and suffers long. And there is no such thing as a guaranteed way to abort a child. Use contraceptives, not a knitting needle or the douche bag,¹⁹ to hold down population. Once the child is conceived, no matter how "shameful" the circumstances, no matter the mores,²⁰ no matter the income, that man or woman who would attempt an abortion on an unborn child is attempting a murder which will seldom succeed and is laying the foundation of a childhood of illness and heartache. Anyone attempting an abortion is committing an act against the whole society and the future; any judge or doctor

recommending an abortion should be instantly deprived of position and practice, whatever his "reason."

19. douche bag: a small syringe having detachable nozzles for administering a douche: a jet or current of water, sometimes with a dissolved medicating or cleansing agent, applied to a body part, organ or cavity (such as the vagina) for medicinal or hygienic purposes.

20. mores: the customs, or customary practices, rules, etc., regarded as essential to or characteristic of a group.

190

PRENATAL EXPERIENCE AND BIRTH

If a person knows he has committed this crime against a child who has been born, he should do all possible to have that child "cleared" as soon as possible after the age of eight and in the meantime should treat that child with all the decency and courtesy possible in order to keep the engram out of restimulation. Otherwise he may send that child to an institution for the insane.

A large proportion of allegedly feeble-minded children are actually attempted-abortion cases whose en-grams place them in fear paralysis or regressive palsy²¹ and which command them not to grow but to be where they are forever.

However many billions America spends yearly on institutions for the insane and jails for the criminals are spent primarily because of attempted abortions done by some sex-blocked mother to whom children are a curse, not a blessing of God.

Antipathy²² toward children means a blocked second dynamic. Physiological examination of anyone with such blockage will demonstrate a physical derangement of the genitalia or glands. Dianetic therapy would demonstrate attempted abortion or an equally foul prenatal existence and would clear the individual.

The case of the child who, as this is read, is not yet born but upon whom abortion has been attempted, is not hopeless. If he is treated with decency after he is born and if he is not restimulated by witnessing

quarrels, he will wax²³ and grow fat until he is eight and can be cleared, at which time he will probably be much startled to learn the truth. But that startlement and any antagonism included in it will vanish with the finishing

21. palsy: paralysis, especially with involuntary tremors.

22. antipathy: a strong or deep-rooted dislike.

23. wax: grow bigger or greater; increase.

191

L. RON HUBBARD

of the Clear, and his love of his parents will be greater than before.

All these things are scientific facts, tested and re-checked and tested again. And with them can be produced a Clear, on whom our racial future depends.

192

CHAPTER EIGHT

Contagion of Aberration

Disease is contagious. Germs, traveling from one individual to another, wander through an entire society, respecting none until stopped by such things as sulfa' or penicillin.²

Aberrations are contagious. Like germs they respect none and carry forward from individual to individual, from parents to child, respecting none until they are stopped by Dianetics.

The people of yesterday supposed that genetic insanity must exist, for it could be observed that the children of aberrated parents were often themselves aberrated. There is genetic insanity but it is limited to the case of actually missing parts. A very small percentage of insanity falls into such a category and its manifestation is mental dullness or failure to coordinate and beyond these has no aberrative quality whatever (such people receive engrams which complicate their cases).

The contagion of aberration is too simple in principle to be much labored here. In Dianetics, we learn that only moments of "unconsciousness," short or long and of greater or lesser depth, can contain engrams. When a person is rendered "unconscious," people in his vicinity react more or less at the dictates of their engrams: in fact, the "unconsciousness" is quite ordinarily caused by somebody's dramatization. A Clear, then, could be rendered unconscious by an aberree who is dramatizing

1. sulfa: any of a group of chemical compounds with antibacterial properties.
2. penicillin: a very powerful drug for destroying bacteria.

193

L. RON HUBBARD

and the aberree's dramatization of his engram would enter as an engram into the Clear.

The mechanics are simple. People under stress, if aberrated, dramatize engrams. Such dramatization may involve the injury of another person and render him more or less "unconscious." The unconscious person then receives as an engram the dramatization.

This is not the only way contagion of aberration gets about. People on operating tables, under anesthetic, are subjected to the more or less aberrated conversation of those present. This conversation enters into the "unconscious" person as an engram. Similarly, at the scene of accidents, the emergency

nature of the experience may excite people into dramatizations, and if a person is "unconscious" because of the accident, an engram is received.

Aberrated parents are certain to infect their children with engrams. The father and mother, in dramatizing their own engrams around sick or injured children, pass them along just as certainly as if those engrams were bacteria. This does not mean that the total reactive bank of a child is composed solely of the parents' engrams, for there are many exterior influences to the home which can enter into the child when it is "unconscious." And it does not mean that the child is going to react to the same engrams the way either parent might react, for the child, after all, is an individual with an inherent personality, a power of choice and a different experience pattern. But it does mean that it is utterly inevitable that aberrated parents will in some way aberrate their children.

Misconceptions and poor data in a society's culture become engrams because not all the conduct around an "unconscious" person is dramatization. If some society believed that fish-eating brought on leprosy,³ it is quite

3. leprosy: a chronic, infectious disease caused by a bacterium that attacks the skin, flesh, nerves, etc.: it is characterized by ulcers, white scaly scabs, deformities and wasting of body parts.

194

CONTAGION OF ABERRATION

certain that this false datum would find its way into engrams and sooner or later someone would develop a leprosy-like disease after having eaten fish.

Primitive societies, being subject to much mauling by the elements, have many more occasions for injury than civilized societies. Further, such primitive societies are alive with false data. Further, their practice of medicine and mental healing is on a very aberrative level by itself. The number of engrams in a Zulu⁴ would be astonishing. Moved out of his restimulative area and taught English he would escape the penalty of much of his reactive data; but in his native habitat the Zulu is only outside the bars of a madhouse because there are no madhouses provided by his tribe. It is a safe estimate, and one based on better experience than is generally available to those who base conclusions on "modern man" by studying primitive races, that primitives are far more aberrated than civilized peoples. Their savage-ness, their unprogressiveness, their incidence of illness: all stem from their reactive patterns, not from their inherent personalities. Measuring one set of aberrations by another set of aberrations is not likely to lead to much data. And the contagion of aberration, being much greater in a primitive tribe, and the falsity of the superstitious

data in the engrams of such a tribe both lead to a conclusion which, observed on the scene, is carried out by actuality.

Contagion of aberration is very easily studied in the process of clearing any aberration whose parents fought. Mother, for instance, might be relatively unaberrated at the beginning of the marriage. If she is beaten by her husband who is, after all, dramatizing, she will begin to

4. Zulu: a member of a large, formerly warlike, Bantu people of southeastern Africa.

195

L. RON HUBBARD

pick up his aberrations as part of her own reactive pattern. This is particularly noticeable when one is clearing a person who was conceived shortly after his parents' marriage or before it. Papa may begin with a certain dramatization which includes beating a wife. Whatever he says in such a dramatization will sooner or later begin to affect the wife and she may—unless extraordinarily well balanced—begin to dramatize these things on her own. Eventually, when the child is born, she will begin to dramatize on the child, thus putting him into a continual state of restimulation.

Birth is one of the most remarkable engrams in terms of contagion. Here the mother and child both receive the same engram which differs only in the location of pain and the depths of "unconsciousness." Whatever the doctors, nurses and other people associated with the delivery say to the mother during labor and birth and immediately afterwards before the child is taken away is recorded in the reactive bank, making an identical engram in both mother and child.

This engram is remarkably destructive in several ways. The mother's voice can restimulate the birth engram in the child and the presence of the child can restimulate the giving-birth engram in the mother. Thus they are mutually restimulative. In view of the fact that they have all the other restimulators also in common, a later-life situation can cause them each to suffer simultaneously from the engram. If birth included a slammed window, a slammed window may trigger birth dramatization in both, simultaneously, with resultant hostilities or apathies.

Should a doctor become angry or despairing, the emotional tone of birth can be severe. And if the doctor talks at all, the conversation takes on its full, reactive, literal meaning to both mother and child.

Many cases were cleared where both mother and 196

CONTAGION OF ABERRATION

child were available. One such case found the mother (as heard by the child in Dianetic clearing) moaning, "I'm so ashamed, I'm so ashamed," over and over. The child had a neurosis about shame. When the mother was cleared, it was found that her mother at birth was moaning, "I'm so ashamed, I'm so ashamed." One can presume that this has been going along, by contagion, since Cheops' built his tomb.

In the larger sphere of society, contagion of aberration is extremely dangerous and cannot but be considered as a vital factor in undermining the health of that society.

The social body behaves similarly to an organism in that there are social aberrations which exist within the society. The society grows and may fade like an organism which has people, not cells, for its parts. Where pain is leveled by the head of the society at any member in that society, a source of aberration is begun which will be contagious. The reasons against corporal punishment⁶ are not "humanitarian," they are practical. A society which practices punishment of any kind against any of its members is carrying on a contagion of aberration. The society has a social engram, society size, which says punishment is necessary. Punishment is meted.⁷ The jails and institutions fill. And then one day some portion of the society, depressed into zone 1 by a government's freedom with government engrams,

5. Cheops: king of ancient Egypt for 23 years (around 2900 B.C.). Cheops was famous as the builder of the Great Pyramid in Egypt, which is one of the Seven Wonders of the World. Egyptian pyramids were built as royal tombs: each monarch built his own pyramid.

6. corporal punishment: (law) physical punishment, as flogging, inflicted on the body of one convicted of a crime: formerly included the death penalty, sentencing to a term of years, etc.

7. meted: distributed or apportioned by measure; allotted; doled (usually followed by out).

L. RON HUBBARD

jumps up and wipes the government out. And a new set of aberrations is formed from the violence attending the destruction. Violent revolutions never win because they begin this cycle of aberration.

A society filled with aberrations may feel it necessary to punish. There has been no remedy other than punishment. The provision of a remedy for unsocial conduct by members of the group is of more than passing interest to a government for a continuance of its own corporal practices; adding these to the continuing aberrations of the past seriously depresses the survival potential of that government and will someday cause that government to fall. After many governments so fall, its people, too, perish from this Earth.

Contagion of aberration is never more apparent than in that social insanity called war. Wars never solve the need of wars. Fight to save the world for democracy or save it from Confucianism⁸ and the fight is inevitably lost by all. War has become associated in the past with competition, and it has been believed, therefore, by shifty logic, that wars were necessary. A society which advances into a war as a solution of its problems cannot but depress its own survival potential. No government was ever permitted to enter a war without costing its people some of their liberties. The end product is the apathy of a ruling priesthood, where mystery and superstition alone can band the insane remnants of a people together. This is too easily observed in past histories to need much amplification. A democracy engaging in war has always lost some of its democratic rights. As it engages in more and more wars, it eventually comes under the command of a dictator (rule by a single engram). The dictator, forcing his rule, increases

8. Confucianism: the system of morality taught by Confucius, a Chinese philosopher (551-479? B.C.).

198

CONTAGION OF ABERRATION

the aberrations by his activity against minorities. Revolt begins to follow revolt. Priesthoods flourish. Apathy awaits. And after apathy comes death. So went Greece, so went Rome. So goes England. So goes Russia. And so goes the United States and with it goes mankind.

Rule by force is a violation of the law of affinity, for force begets force. Rule by force reduces the self-determinism of the individuals in a society and therefore the self-determinism of the society itself. Contagion of aberration sweeps along like a forest fire. Engrams beget engrams. And unless the dwindling spiral is interrupted by new lands and mongrel races which escape their aberrative environments, or by the arrival of n means to break the contagion of aberration by clearing individuals, a race will reach downward to the end of the cycle—zone 0.

A race is as great as its individual members are self-determined.

In the smaller sphere of the family, as in the national scenes, contagion of aberration produces an interruption of optimum survival.

Self-determinism is the only possible way a computer can be built to give rational answers. Holding down seven in an adding machine causes it to give wrong answers. Entering fixed and not-to-be-rationalized answers into any human being will cause him to compute wrong answers. Survival depends on right answers. En-grams enter from the exterior world into the hidden recesses below rational thinking and prevent rational answers being reached. This is exterior-determinism. Any interference with self-determinism cannot but lead to wrong computations.

In that a Clear is cooperative, a society of Clears would cooperate. This may be an idyllic, Utopian⁹

9. Utopian: of or like a Utopia, any idealized place, state or situation of perfection.

199

L. RON HUBBARD

dream and it may not be. In a family of Clears there is observable harmony and cooperation. A Clear can recognize a superior computation when he sees one. He does not have to be slugged and held down and made to obey to make him put a shoulder to the wheel.¹⁰ If he is made to obey, independent of his thinking, his self-determinism is interrupted to a point where he cannot get right answers; the society which holds him has penalized, itself, his ability to think and act rationally. The only way a Clear could so be forced would be to give him engrams or turn a neurosurgeon loose upon his brain. But a Clear does not need to be forced for, if the job is important enough to do in terms of general need, he will most

certainly do it according to his intelligence and do it as well as possible. One never observes the forced individual doing a job well, just as one never observes a forced society winning against an equally prosperous free society.

A family which runs on the godhead" plan, where somebody must be obeyed without question, is never a happy family. Its prosperity may be present in some material aspects but its apparent survival as a unit is superficial.

Forced groups are invariably less efficient than free groups working for the common good. But any group which contains aberrated members is likely to become entirely aberrated as a group through contagion. The effort to restrain aberrated members of a group inevitably restrains the group as a whole and leads to further and further restraint.

Clearing one member of a family of aberrees is seldom enough to resolve the problems of that family. If

10. put a shoulder to the wheel: work energetically toward a goal; put forth effort.

11. godhead: godhood; divinity.

200

CONTAGION OF ABERRATION

the husband has been aberrated, he will have aberrated or restimulated his wife and children in one way or another, even when he used no physical violence upon them. The parents implant their mutual aberrations in the children and the children, being potentially self-determined units, revolt back to stir up the aberrations of the parents. In that so many of these aberrations, by contagion, have become mutual and held in common with the whole family, the happiness of the family is severely undermined.

The corporal punishment of children is just another facet of the problem of the forced group. If anyone cares to argue over the necessity of punishing children, let him examine the source of the misbehavior of the children.

The child who is aberrated may not have his en-grams entirely keyed in. He may have to wait until he himself is married and has children or a pregnant wife to have restimulators enough to cause him to become, suddenly, one of these things they call a "mature adult," blind to the beauty of the world and burdened by all its griefs. But the child is nevertheless aberrated and has many dramatizations. The child is in a very unlucky situation in that he has with him his two most powerful restimulators—his mother and father. These assume the power of physical punishment over him. And they are giants to him. He is a pygmy.¹² And he has to depend upon them for food, clothing and shelter. One can speak very grandly about the "delusions of childhood" until he knows the engram background of most children.

The child is on the unkind receiving end of all the dramatizations of his parents. A cleared child is a most remarkable thing to observe: he is human! Affinity alone can pull him through. The spoiled child is the

12. pygmy: a very small person.

201

L. RON HUBBARD

child whose decisions have been interrupted continuously and who is robbed of his independence. Affection could no more spoil a child than the sun could be put out by a bucket of gasoline.

The beginning and end of "child psychology" is that a child is a human being, that he is entitled to his dignity and self-determinism. The child of aberrated parents is a problem because of the contagion of aberration and because he is denied any right to dramatize or counter. The wonder is not that children are a problem but that they are sane in any action, for—by contagion, punishment and denial of self-determinism—the children of today have been denied all the things required to make a rational life. And these are the future family and the future race.

This is not a dissertation on children or politics, however, but a chapter on contagion of aberration. Dia-netics covers human thought, and human thought is wide ground. When one gazes at the potentialities inherent in the mechanism of contagion, respect for the inherent stability of man cannot but arise. No "wild animal" reacting with inherent "asocial tendencies" could have built Nineveh¹³ or Boulder Dam."¹⁴ Carrying the contagion mechanism like some Old Man of the Sea,¹⁵ we have yet come far. Now that we know it, perhaps we shall truly reach the stars.

13. Nineveh: capital of the ancient empire of Assyria, situated on the east bank of the Tigris River, opposite modern Mosul, Iraq. Nineveh contained magnificent palaces and sculpture, which have been unearthed in archaeological excavations.

14. Boulder Dam: officially Hoover Dam, one of the highest dams in the world, on the Colorado River between the southern tip of Nevada and Arizona.

15. Old Man of the Sea: character in the story of "Sinbad the Sailor" in The Arabian Nights. A seemingly harmless old man, he climbs onto the shoulders of the obliging Sinbad and refuses to get off. He clings there for many days and nights until Sinbad escapes by getting him drunk.

202

CHAPTER NINE

Keying In the Engram

The single source of inorganic mental illness and organic psychosomatic illness is the reactive engram bank. The reactive mind impinges these engrams upon the analytical mind and the organism whenever they are restimulated after being keyed in.

There are many known incidents in a lifetime which apparently have a profound influence upon the happiness and mental condition of the individual. The individual remembers these and to them attributes his troubles. In a measure he is right: he is at least looking back at incidents which are held in place by engrams. He does not see the engrams. In fact, unless he is acquainted with Dianetics, he does not know the engrams are there. And even then he will not know their contents until he has undergone therapy.

It can be demonstrated with ease that any moment of "conscious level" unhappiness which contained great stress or emotion was not guilty of the charge of causing aberration and psychosomatic illness. These moments, of course, played a role in the matter: they were the key-ins.

The process of keying in an engram is not very complex. Engram 105, let us say, was a moment of "unconsciousness" when the prenatal child was struck, via Mother, by Father. The father, aware or not of the child, uttered the words, "Goddamn you, you filthy whore: you're no good!" This engram lay where it was impressed, in the reactive bank. Now, it could lie there for seventy years and never become keyed in. It contains a headache and a falling body and the grating of teeth

203

L. RON HUBBARD

and the intestinal sounds of the mother. And any of these sounds, postbirth, may be present in large quantities without keying in this engram.

One day, however, the father becomes exasperated at the child. The child is tired and feverish, which is to say that his analytical mind may not be at its highest level of activity. And the father has a certain set of engrams which he dramatizes and one of these engrams is the above incident. And the father reaches out and slaps the child and says, "Goddamn you: you're no good!" The child cries. That night he has a headache and is much worse physically. And he feels both an intense hatred and a fear of his father. The engram has keyed in. Now the sound of a falling body or grating teeth or any trace of anger of any kind in the father's voice will make the child nervous. His physical health will suffer. He will begin to have headaches.

If we take this child who has now become an adult and rake back over his past, we shall discover (though it may be occluded) a lock like the above key-in. And now not only the key-in; we may discover half a hundred, half a thousand, such locks just on this one subject. One would say, unless he knew Dianetics, that this child was ruined postnatally by being beaten by the father, and one might attempt to bring the patient's mind back into better condition by removing these locks.

There are literally thousands, tens of thousands, of locks in the average life. To take all of these locks away would be a task for Hercules.¹ Every engram a person has, if it has been keyed in, may have its hundreds of locks.

If conditioning existed as a mechanism of pain and

1. Hercules: a mythical Greek hero of fabulous strength and courage who, after completing 12 heroic

feats assigned to him (including killing several legendary monsters), became immortal.

204

KEYING IN THE ENGRAM

stress, mankind would be in very bad condition. Fortunately, conditioning does not so exist. It appears to exist but the appearance is not the fact. One would think that if a child were daily thrust around and reviled² he would eventually become conditioned into a belief that this was the way life was and that he had better turn against it.

Conditioning does not, however, exist. Pavlov³ may have been able to drive dogs mad by repeated experiments: this was simply bad observation on the part of the observer. The dogs might be trained to do this or that. But it was not conditioning. The dogs went mad because they were given engrams—if and when they did go mad. A series of such experiments, properly conducted and observed, proves this contention.

The boy who was daily told he was no good and who apparently went into a decline solely because of that, declined only because of the engram. This is a happy fact. The engram may take a while to locate—a few hours—but when it is alleviated or refiled in the standard memory banks, everything which had locked onto it also refiles.

People trying to help others with their aberrations who did not know about engrams were, of course, operating with 2.9 strikes against any success. In the first place, the locks themselves may vanish down into the reactive bank. Thus we get a patient who says, "Oh, my father wasn't so bad. He was a pretty good guy." And we discovered, and the patient discovers, when an engram is sprung, that Father was customarily to be found dramatizing. What the patient knows about his past before engrams are sprung is not worth cataloging. In another case we may find a patient saying, "Oh, I

2. reviled: criticized angrily in abusive language.

3. Pavlov: Ivan Petrovich Pavlov (1849-1936), Russian physiologist; noted for behavioral experiments on dogs.

205

L. RON HUBBARD

had a terrible childhood, a terrible childhood. I was beaten seriously." And we discover, when we get the engrams refiled, that the parents of this patient never laid a hand on him in punishment or wrath in his entire life.

An engram may coast along without being keyed in for decades. One of the most remarkable types of case is one which spent an entire youth without displaying any aberration. Then suddenly, at the age of twenty-six, we discover him to be so aberrated, so suddenly, that it appears he must have been hexed.⁴ Perhaps most of his engrams were concerned with the action of getting married and having children. He has never been married before. The first time he is weary or ill and realizes he has a wife on his hands, the first engram keys in. Then the dwindling spiral begins to go to work. This one shuts down the analyzer enough so that others can be keyed in. And finally we may discover him in an institution.

The young girl who has been happy and carefree to the age of thirteen and then suddenly goes into a decline has not, that moment, received an engram. She has had an engram key in, which let another key in. Fission reaction. This key-in may have required nothing more than the discovery that she was bleeding from the vagina. She has an emotional engram about this; she becomes frantic. The other engrams, as the days follow, may swing into position to impinge upon her. And so she becomes ill.

The first sexual experience may be one which keys in an engram. This is so standard that sex has gotten a rather bad name for itself here and there as being an aberrative factor all by itself. Sex is not and never has been aberrative. Physical pain and emotion which incidentally contain sex as a subject are the aberrative factors.

4. hexed: bewitched; practiced on by witchcraft.

206

KEYING IN THE ENGRAM

It may be that a patient is urgent in her insistence that her father raped her when she was nine and that this is the cause of all her misery. Large numbers of insane patients claim this. And it is perfectly true. Father did rape her, but it happened she was only nine days beyond conception at the time. The pressure and upset of coitus⁵ is very uncomfortable to the child and normally can be expected to give the child an engram which will have as its content the sexual act and everything that was said.

Drug hypnosis is dangerous when one is trying to treat psychotics, as has been mentioned. And there are other reasons it is dangerous. Any operation under anesthetic or any drugging of a patient may bring about the keying in of engrams. Here is the analyzer shutdown, there is the reactive bank open to be stirred by any comment made by the people around the drugged subject. Hypnotism itself is a condition in which en-grams may be keyed in which have never before been restimulated: the glassy-eyed stare of the person who has been "too often hypnotized," the lack of will seen in people too often hypnotized, the dependence of the subject upon the hypnotic operator: all these things stem from the keying in of engrams. Any time the body is rendered "unconscious" without physical pain, no matter how light the degree of "unconsciousness" is, even if it is only the lightness of weariness, an engram may be keyed in. And when "unconsciousness" is complicated by new physical pain, a new engram is formed which may gather up with it an entire bundle of old engrams not hitherto keyed in. Such a late engram would be a cross engram in that it crosses chains of engrams. And if such an engram resulted in a loss of sanity, it would be called a break engram.

5. coitus: sexual intercourse.

207

L. RON HUBBARD

There are some aspects to various drug "unconsciousnesses" which have been very perplexing in the past. Psychotic women often maintain, after they are awakened from a drugged sleep (and sometimes a hypnotic sleep), that they have been raped. Men occasionally maintain that the operator has tried to perform a homosexual act upon them while they were drugged. Although it occasionally occurs that people are raped after being drugged, the largest number of such assertions are merely an aspect of the key-in mechanism. Almost any child has been put through the prenatal discomfort of coitus. Often there was violent emotion other than passion present. Such an engram may stay out of circuit for years until drugged "unconsciousness" or some such thing keys it in. The patient goes to sleep without a keyed-in engram; he wakes up with one. He tries to justify the strange sensations he has (and engrams are timeless things unless they are arranged properly on the time track⁶) and comes out with the "solution" that he must have been raped.

Childhood rapes are very seldom the responsible cause in sexual aberration. They are the key-in.

One looks at the conscious level locks and sees sadness, mental anguish and misfortune. Some of the experience there seems to be so terrible that it must certainly cause aberration. But it does not. Man is a tough, resilient creature. These conscious level experiences are at best only guideposts leading toward the actual seat of trouble, and that is not known in any detailed way to the individual.

The engram is never "computed." An example of this, on a lightly aberrative level, can be found in a child's punishment. If one examines a childhood where

6. time track: the time span of the individual from conception to present time on which lies the sequence of events of his life.

208

KEYING IN THE ENGRAM

punishment has been corporal and frequent, he begins to understand the utter futility of the pain-drive theory. Punishment actually and literally and emphatically does no good of any kind whatsoever but accomplishes quite the reverse, since it occasions a reactive revolt against the punishment source, and is likely to cause not only a disintegration of a mind but also a continual bedevilment⁷ of the punishment source. Man reacts to fight sources of pain. When he stops fighting them he is mentally broken and of little use to anyone, much less himself.

We take a case of a boy who was beaten with a hairbrush every time he was "bad." In researching this case, the most searching inquiry fails to reveal any vivid recall of why he was punished but only that he was punished. The progress of the event would go something like this: activity more or less rational, fright at threatened punishment, punishment, sorrow over punishment, renewed activity. The mechanics of the case showed the person to have been engaged on some activity which, whether others would consider it so or not, was nevertheless survival activity to him, giving him either pleasure or actual gains or even the assertion that he could and would survive. The moment punishment is threatened, old punishments go into restimulation as minor engrams, resting usually on major engrams: this shuts down the analytical power to some extent and the recording is now being done on a reactive level; the punishment takes place, submerging analytical awareness so that the punishment records in the engram bank only; the sorrow following is still in the period of analytical shutdown; the analyzer gradually turns on; full awareness returns, and then activity on an analytical plane can be resumed. All

7. bedevilment: the act of plaguing diabolically; torment; harassment.

209

L. RON HUBBARD

corporal punishment runs this gamut and all other punishments are, at best, locks, following this same pattern with only the complete shutdown resulting from pain missing.

If the analyzer wants this data for computation, it is not available. There is a reaction in the reactive mind when the matter is approached. But there are five courses the reactive mind can take with this data! And there is no guarantee and no method between land and sky of knowing what course the reactive mind will take with the data except knowing the full engram bank—and if that is known, the person could be cleared with a few more hours' work and would need no punishment.

These five ways of handling data make corporal punishment an unstable and unreliable thing. A ratio exists which can be tested and proven in any man's experience: A man is evil in the direct ratio that de-structiveness has been leveled against him. An individual (including those individuals society is liable to forget as individuals: children) reacts against the punishment source whether that source be parents or government. Anything which sets itself forward against an individual as a punishment source will be considered in greater or lesser degree (as it is in proportion to benefits) as a target for the reactions of the individual.

The little accidental milk glass upsets of children, that noise which just accidentally occurs on the porch where the children are playing, that little accidental ruination of Papa's hat or Mama's rug: these are often cold, calculated, reactive mind actions against pain sources. The analytical mind may temporize⁸ about love and affection and the need of three square meals. The reactive mind runs off the lessons it has learned and devil take the meals.⁹

8. temporize: effect a compromise; negotiate.

9. devil take the ____: a phrase used as a curse, wish of evil or the like.

210

KEYING IN THE ENGRAM

If one turned an idiot loose on an adding machine to let him audit the company books and let him prevent the auditor¹⁰ from touching equipment and data which has to be his if any answers will be right, one would get very little in the way of correct answers. And if one kept feeding the idiot and made him fat and powerful, the firm would sooner or later go to ruin. The reactive mind is the idiot, the auditor is "I" and the firm is the organism. Punishment feeds the idiot.

The helpless amazement of police about the "confirmed criminal" (and the police belief in the "criminal type" and the "criminal mind") comes about through this cycle. Police, for some reason or other, like governments, have become identified with society. Take any one of these "criminals" and clear him and the society regains a rational being of which it can use all it can get. Keep up the punishment cycle and the prisons will get more numerous and more full.

The problem of the child lashing back at his parents by "negation" and the problem of Jimmie the Cob" blowing a bank guard apart in an armed robbery stem both from the same mechanism. The child, examined on the "conscious level," is not aware of his causes but will put forth various justifications for his conduct. Jimmie the Cob, waiting for this oh-so-very-sentient society to tie him down with straps in an electric chair and give him an electric shock therapy which will cause him to cease and desist forever, examined for his causes, will pour forth justifications to explain his life and conduct. The human mind is a pretty wonderful computing machine. The reasons it can evolve for unreasonable acts

10. auditor: a person who is authorized to audit (to check or examine) accounts.

11. Jimmie the Cob: a made-up name for a criminal. Cob is British dialect for "leader; chief."

211

L. RON HUBBARD

have staggered one and all and particularly social workers. Without knowing the cause and the mechanism, the chances of drawing a correct conclusion by comparing all conducts available are as remote as winning at fan-tan¹² from a Chinese. Hence, the punishments have continued as the muddled answer to a very muddled society.

There are five ways in which a human being reacts toward a source of danger. These are also the five courses he can take on any given problem. And it might be said that this is five-valued action.

The parable of the black panther* is appropriate here. Let us suppose that a particularly black-tempered black panther is sitting on the stairs and that a man named Gus is sitting in the living room. Gus wants to go to bed. But there is the black panther. The problem is to get upstairs. There are five things that Gus can do about this panther: (1) he can go attack the black panther; (2) he can run out of the house and flee the black panther; (3) he can use the back stairs and avoid the black panther; (4) he can neglect the black panther; and (5) he can succumb to the black panther.

These are the five mechanisms: attack, flee, avoid, neglect or succumb.

All actions can be seen to fall within these courses. And all actions are visible in life. In the case of a punishment source, the reactive mind can succumb,

* In Dianetics considerable slang has been developed by patients and Dianeticists and they call a neglect of the problem the "black panther mechanism." One supposes this stems from the ridiculousness of biting black panthers.

-LRH

12. fan-tan: a Chinese gambling game in which a pile of coins, counters or objects is placed under a bowl and bets are made on what the remainder will be after they have been counted off in fours.

neglect, avoid, flee or attack it. The action is dictated by a complexity of engrams and depends upon which one comes into restimulation. This maelstrom¹³ of reaction generally resolves itself, however, in one of the five courses.

If a child is punished and thereafter obeys, he can be considered to have succumbed. And the value of a child who will succumb to punishment is so slight that the Spartans¹⁴ would long since have drowned him, for it means he has sunk into an apathy unless it so happens that he himself has computed the idea, bypassing all reaction, that the thing for which he was punished was not bright (he can't be assisted in this computation if punishment is entered into the reactive mind by the source trying to assist him). He can flee the punishment source, which at least is not apathy but merely cowardice by popular judgment. He can neglect the matter entirely and ignore the punishment source—and would have been called a stoic by the ancients, but might be called merely dull-witted by his friends. He can avoid the punishment source, which might give him the doubtful compliment of being sly or cunning or pandering.¹⁵ Or he can attack the punishment source either by direct action or by upsetting or fouling the person or the possessions of the source—in which instance he would be called, on direct action, a valiant fool, taking parental size into account, or in a less direct fashion he could be called "covertly hostile" or could be said to be "negating." As long as a human being will attack as a response to a valid threat, he can be said to be in fair

13. maelstrom: an agitated or tumultuous state of affairs.

14. Spartans: the citizens of Sparta, a city in ancient Greece, who would permit a child to live only if he showed potential of becoming an asset to the state.

15. pandering: ministering to others' passions or prejudices for selfish ends.

213

L. RON HUBBARD

mental condition—"normal"—and a child is said to be "just acting like any normal child."

Enter punishment into the computation and it no longer computes. It is entirely different in the case of

"experience." Life has plenty of painful experience waiting for any human being without other human beings complicating the score. A person who is still unblocked in his dynamics or who has been unblocked by Dianetics can absorb the most amazing amount of hammering in the business of living. Here, even when the reactive mind receives engrams as a result of some of this experience, the analytical mind can continue to cope with the situation without becoming aberrated in any way. Man is a tough, resilient, competent character. But when the law of affinity begins to be broken and such a breaking of affinity gets into the reactive bank, human beings, as antagonistic sources of nonsurvival, become a punishment source. If no contrasurvival en-grams involving human beings are in the earlier (before five years) content of the engram bank, prosurvival engrams are taken as a matter of course and are not severely aberrative. In other words, it is the breaking of affinity with his fellows on an engramic level which most solidly blocks the dynamics. Man's affinity with man is far more a scientific fact than it is a poetic and idyllic idea.

The cycle, then, of life which will be "normal" (current average state) or psychotic is an easy thing to draw. It begins with a large number of engrams before birth, it gathers more in the dependent and rather helpless condition postbirth. Punishment of various kinds, entering now as locks, key in the engrams. New engrams which will involve the earlier ones enter. New locks accumulate. Illness and aberrated action set in most certainly by the age of forty or fifty. And death ensues sometime afterwards.

214

KEYING IN THE ENGRAM

Short of the optimum solution of clearing the en-grams, there are several things which can be done about aberration and psychosomatic ills. That these methods are uncertain and of only limited value does not mean that they will not occasionally meet with some astonishingly beneficial responses.

Such methods can be classified under the headings of environmental change, education and physical treatment. Taking factors out of the environment of an aberree or taking the aberree out of the environment in which he is unhappy or ineffective can bring about some astonishingly swift recoveries: this is valid therapy. It removes the restimulators from the individual or takes the individual away from the restimulators. It is ordinarily quite hit-or-miss (and more miss than hit) and it will not remove all the restimulators by nine-tenths, since the individual himself carries the bulk of these around with him or is compelled to contact them. One is reminded of a case which had severe asthma. He had received it in a very severe birth engram; his frantic parents carried him to every mountain asthma resort suggested and spent tens of thousands of dollars in these jauntings. '6 When this patient was cleared and the engram refilled, it was discovered that the restimulator for his asthma was clean, cold air! The only certainty in the environment approach is that a sickly child will recover when removed from restimulative parents and taken where he is loved and feels safe—for his sickness is the inevitable result of restimulation of prenatal engrams by one or the other or both his parents. Somewhere along the line there is probably a husband or a wife who has descended chronically into the first two zones after marriage, after having married

pseudo-mother or pseudofather or pseudoabortionist.

16. jauntings: trips; excursions.

215

L. RON HUBBARD

In the educational field, new data or enthusiasms may very well key out engrams by overbalancing the reactive mind in the light of a new analytical surge. If a man can simply be convinced he has been fighting shadows or if he can be persuaded to hang his fears on some indicated cause, whether that cause is true or not, he can be benefited. Sometimes he can be "educated" into a strong faith in some deity or cult which will cause him to feel so invulnerable that he rises above his engrams. Raising his survival potential in any way will raise his general tone to a point where it is no longer on a par with the reactive bank. Giving him an education in engineering or music, where he can receive a higher level of respect, will often defend him from his restimulators. A rise to a position of esteem is actually a change of environment, but it is also educational since he is now taught he is valuable. If a man can be made busy at a hobby or work by personal or exterior education that it is good for him, another mechanism comes into being: the analytical mind becomes so engrossed that it takes to itself more and more energy for its activity and begins to align with a new purpose.

Physical treatment resulting in improved physical condition will bring about hope or change a man's reactions by shifting him on his time track. It may key out engrams.

These methods are valid therapy: they are also, in reverse, the things which cause aberrations to manifest themselves. There are wrong ways to act and wrong things to do and wrong ways to treat men which, in the light of what we know now, are criminal.

Thrusting a man into an environment which re-stimulates him and making him stay there is a slice of murder. Making him keep an associate who is restimulative is bad; making a man or a woman stay with a marriage partner who is restimulative is unworkable

216

KEYING IN THE ENGRAM

mores unless Dianetic therapy is used; making a child stay in a home where he is restimulated is most certainly inhibitive, not only of his happiness but of his mental and physical development—a child should have many more rights about such things, more places to go. On the physical therapy level, anything as violent as surgery or exodontistry in the psychosomatic plane is utter barbarism in the light of Dianetics. "Toothache" is normally psychosomatic. Organic illnesses enough to fill several catalogs are psychosomatic. No recourse to surgery of any kind should be had until it is certain that the ailment is not psychosomatic or that the illness will not diminish by itself if the potency of the reactive mind is reduced. Mental-physical therapy is too ridiculous, with the source of aberration now a science, to be seriously mentioned. For no thinking doctor or psychiatrist possessed of this information would touch another electrode for electric shock therapy or even glance at a scalpel or ice pick to perform an operation on the pre-frontal lobes of the brain unless that doctor or psychiatrist is himself so thoroughly aberrated that the act springs, not from any desire to heal, but from the most utter and craven¹⁷ sadism to which engrams can bring a man.*

* Many persons investigating the treatment of the mentally ill by psychiatrists and others in charge of mental institutions are prompted—when they discover just what the prefrontal lo-botomy, the transorbital leukotomy and electric shock actually do to patients—to revile the psychiatrist as unworthy of trust and accuse him of using it to conduct vivisection experiments on human beings. That any possible hope of recovery via Dianetics may be gone for these unfortunate patients in the majority of cases should not be blamed upon the psychiatrist and neurosurgeon. These people have only followed their teachings in various universities and have practiced such

17. craven: cowardly.

217

L. RON HUBBARD

actions merely because they believed the problem of the mind could not be solved by anyone. A witch-burning attitude toward these people is very far from the one adopted by Dianetics. Pointing to the fact that they have murdered minds which would otherwise have recovered, labeling them "mind snatchers," and making a horror story out of their actions is far from rational conduct. On the whole, these people have been entirely sincere in their efforts to help the insane. By contagion of aberration such people have been subjected to enormous stresses in this work, having had their own engrams in continual re stimulation. They can be cleared and their experience is valuable. Legislation against them such as that recently mentioned by a senator who was familiar with Dianetics, horror stories about them in

newspapers and a general public antipathy, as well as the medical doctors' traditional distrust of them, cannot but bring about a disorderly condition. Dianetics is a newly discovered science and is nonpartisan. K -LRH

18. nonpartisan: not an adherent or supporter of a person, group, party or cause; objective.

218

CHAPTER

Preventive Dianetics

There are many branches in Dianetics. It is actually a family of sciences covered by a single set of axioms. There is, for instance, Educational Dianetics, which contains the body of organized knowledge necessary to train minds to their optimum efficiency and to an optimum of skill and knowledge in the various branches of the works of man. And there is Political Dianetics, which embraces the field of group activity and organization to establish the optimum conditions and processes of leadership and intergroup relations. And again there is Medical Dianetics. And there is Social Dianetics. There are many such subdivisions which are sciences within themselves guided by their own axioms.

We are dealing in this volume, actually, with basic Dianetics and Dianetic therapy as applied to the individual. This is the most immediately important and the most valuable to the individual.

But no book on Dianetic therapy would be complete without a mention of a branch of Dianetics which, some say, is even more important to the race than the therapy. This is Preventive Dianetics.

If one knows the cause of something, he can usually prevent the cause from going into effect. The discovery and proof of Ronald Ross¹ that the malaria germ was carried by the mosquito makes it possible to prevent the disease from committing the ravages it once enjoyed at the expense of mankind. Similarly, when one knows the

1. Ronald Ross: (1857-1932) British physician.

L. RON HUBBARD

cause of aberration and psychosomatic illness, he can do a great deal toward preventing them. '

While Preventive Dianetics is a large subject, infiltrating the fields of industry and agriculture and other specialized activities of man, its basic principle is the scientific fact that engrams can be held to minimal content or prevented entirely with large gains in favor of mental health and physical well-being as well as social adjustment.

The engram is actually a very simple thing: it is a moment when the analytical mind is shut down by physical pain, drugs or other means, and the reactive bank is open to the receipt of a recording. When that recording has verbal content, it becomes most severely aberrative. When it contains antagonism on an emotional level, it becomes very destructive. When it is intensely pro-survival in content, it is most certainly capable of thoroughly deranging a life.

The engram, amongst other things, determines fate. The engram says that a man has to fail to survive, and so he contrives numerous ways to fail. The engram commands that he can only experience pleasure amongst the members of another race and so he goes amongst them and abandons his own. It commands that he must kill to live and so he kills. And far more subtly, the engram weaves its way from incident to incident to cause the catastrophe which it dictates.

A recent case was plotted out to have actually gone to enormous lengths to break his arm, for with a broken arm he received the sympathy without which the en-gram said he could not live. The plot covered three years and half a hundred apparently innocent incidents which, when netted together, told the story.

The accident-prone person is a case where the reactive mind commands accidents. He is a serious menace in any society for his accidents are reactively intentional

PREVENTIVE DIANETICS

and they include the destruction of other people who are innocent.

Drivers with several accidents on their records are generally accident-prone. They have engrams which command them to have accidents. When you have run a case, just one, you will see how thoroughly and maliciously disposed this moronic thing, the reactive mind, can be about such things. Cleared drivers could have accidents only through two sources: (a) mechanical failure and, more important, (b) because of accident-prone people. The terrible and awesome death toll taken by our automotive transport is almost all attributable to reactive mind driving rather than learned response driving. The apathy of this society is measured by the fact that it does not act severely to prevent all automotive accidents; just one broken windshield is one too many. Now that an answer is to hand, action can take place.

The aberree, in thousands of ways, complicates the lives of others. Preventive Dianetics makes it possible to sort out the aberree who is accident-prone and bar him from activities which will menace others. This is one general aspect of Preventive Dianetics. That the aberrees so isolated can be cleared is another type of problem.

The other general aspect of Preventive Dianetics, and the more important, is the prevention of engrams and modification of content both on the social and the individual scale. On the social scale one would delete from the society the causes of aberration in that society as if he were deleting engrams from the individual. In the same way, one can prevent the social causes from occurring in the first place.

In the individual, the prevention of engrams is a very easy matter. Once the source of aberration and illness is known, one can prevent the source from entering a life. If the source has been known to enter, one can prevent

221

L. RON HUBBARD

the next step, the key-in. Of course, the final answer in all this is therapy to a clearing, but there is one aspect of the source which is not so answered.

The child cannot be safely cleared until he is at least five years of age and current practice is to place this figure at about eight years. Improved address to the problem may reduce this figure, but it cannot be reduced below the age of speech unless someone in the future invents a catalyst² which simply clears out the reactive mind without further treatment (not as wild as it may sound). But just now, and probably for a long time to come, the child will remain a problem to Dianetics.

Childhood illness is chiefly derived from engrams. It is most likely to be severe before the age of speech and the number of deaths within the first year of life, while medicine may reduce them, is yet a serious thing.

Preventive Dianetics addresses this problem in two phases: first, the prevention of engrams; and second, the prevention of the key-in.

Taking the key-in first, there are two things which can be done to prevent it. The child can be given a calm and harmonious atmosphere which is not restimulative or, if the child appears to be restimulated despite kindly treatment, he can be removed to another environment which will be minus the two most certain sources—his father and mother—and which will contain a source of affection. The test of whether or not a child is restimulated, prespeech or postspeech, is very simple. Is he susceptible to illness? Does he eat well? Is he nervous? There can be actual physical things wrong with the child, of course, but these are quickly established by a doctor and they lie in the category of physical derangement.

2. catalyst: a person or thing acting as the stimulus in bringing about or hastening a result.

222

PREVENTIVE DIANETICS

Quarrels within the hearing of a child, loud noises, frantic conduct, drooling sympathy when he is sick or hurt: these things are some of the key-in catalog. These make a child ill physically and aberrated mentally by keying in his engrams. And nobody can say how many he has!

The primary source of prevention lies in the field, oddly enough, of the regard in which another person is held—his mother.

It is not "biological love" which makes Mother play such an enormous role in the life of a human being. It is the simple mechanical truth that Mother is a common denominator to all the child's prenata. The prenatal engram is far more serious than the postnatal. Any such engram a person has contains his mother or his mother and another person, but always his mother. Therefore her voice, the things she says, the things she does, have an enormous and vast effect upon the unborn child.

It is not true that emotion gets into a child through the umbilical cord, as people always suppose the moment they hear of prenata. Emotion comes on another (more electrical than physical) type of wave—what type is a problem for structure. Therefore, anyone who is emotional around a pregnant woman is communicating that emotion straight into the child. And Mother's emotion is, in the same manner, so conducted to his reactive mind.

Whether or not the unborn child is "unanalytical" has no bearing on his susceptibility to engrams. The prenatal engram is just another engram. Only when the child is actually struck or hurt by high blood pressure or orgasms or other sources of injury does he become "unconscious." When he becomes "unconscious" he receives all the percepts and words in the area of the mother as engrams. Analytical power has nothing to do with engrams. If the child is "unanalytical," this does not

223

L. RON HUBBARD

predispose him to engrams. If the child is "unconscious" or hurt, it does. The presence or absence of "analytical power" has nothing to do with whether or not engrams are received.

Morning sickness, coughing, all monologuing (Mother talking to herself), street noises, household noises, etc., are all communicated to the "unconscious" child when he is injured. And the child is very easily injured. He is not protected by formed bones and he has no mobility. He is there: when something strikes him or presses him, his cells and organs are injured. A simple experiment to demonstrate how mobility influences this is to lie down in bed and place one's head on a pillow. Then have somebody lean a hand on one's forehead. As there is no mobility, the pressure of the hand is far stronger than it would be if a hand were laid on the forehead when one was standing. The tissue and the water around the child form very slight buffers. In an injury, amniotic fluid, as an incompressible medium, presses him, for it cannot compress itself. The child's situation is far from armored. Mother's act of tying her shoes, in the later stages of pregnancy, even may be severe on the child. Mother's strain when lifting heavy objects is particularly injurious. And Mother's collision with objects like a table edge might well crush a baby's

head. The repair facilities of the unborn child, as mentioned elsewhere, are far above anything ever before discovered. The child may have its head crushed but the blueprint is still there and the building materials and repair can be made. So it is not a case of the child being "all right" just because it can live through almost anything. It is a case of whether or not these injuries are

3. morning sickness: nausea occurring in the early part of the day, especially as a characteristic symptom in the first months of pregnancy.

224

PREVENTIVE DIANETICS

going to have high aberrative value as engrams.

Attempted abortion is very common. And remarkably lacking in success. The mother, every time she injures the child in such a fiendish fashion, is actually penalizing herself. Morning sickness is entirely en-gramic, so far as can be discovered, since Clears have not so far experienced it during their own pregnancies. And the act of vomiting because of pregnancy is via contagion of aberration. Actual illness generally results only when Mother has been interfering with the child either by douches or knitting needles or some such thing. Such interference causes the mother to become ill and, from an actual physical standpoint, is much harder on the mother than on the child. Morning sickness evidently gets into a society because of these interferences such as attempted abortion and, of course, injury.

The cells know when pregnancy occurs. The reactive mind is acquainted with the fact before the analyzer by process of organic sensation, since the endocrine system is altered. Hence, the mother's discovery of pregnancy has little to do with whether or not she was sick before the discovery.

This entire field has been a subject of considerable research in Dianetics. Much more research must be done. These conclusions are tentative. But the conclusion that the engram is received and that it is as violent as its content, rather than its actual pain, is a scientific fact and not in any way a theory. It is as real a discovery as gravity.

Preventing these engrams is the first consideration. Preventing them from having any content is the second. Women who lead peasant lives, doing heavy labor, are subject to all manner of accident. Perhaps such accidents cannot be prevented because of the purpose these women serve in the society.

But when it is known that

225

L. RON HUBBARD

any injury to the mother can create an engram in the

unborn child, it should be the concern of all those

present during such an injury, including the mother, to

maintain a complete and utter silence. Any remark is

abcrmtive, in an engram. Even such a statement as "You

can remember this when in Dianetic therapy," made

toward an unborn child, installs an engram so that

every word in this statement means a physical pain just

where he received it at the time, and in the future

"Dianetic therapy" will be restimulative to him.

The doctor, punching around to find out if Mother is pregnant, may say, "Well, it's hard to tell this early."

The patient in Dianetic therapy years later will return

into the vicinity of this incident only to draw a blank

until the Dianeticist suddenly guesses the content from

how the patient describes his reactions. If the doctor is

very tough and says, "You had better take good care of

yourself, Mrs. Jones. If you don't, you'll be mighty

sick!" the child, "unconscious" from the examination

no matter how mild it is, will get a mild hypochondria

when the engram keys in and be very concerned over

his health.

If the husband uses language during coitus, every word of it is going to be engramic. If the mother is beaten by him, that beating and everything he says and that she says will become part of the engram.

If she does not want the child and he does, the child will later react toward him as an ally⁴ and perhaps have a nervous breakdown when the father dies. If she wants

4. ally: in Dianetics it basically means someone who protects a person who is in a weak state and becomes a very strong influence over the person. The weaker person, such as a child, even partakes the characteristics of the ally so that one may find that a person who has, for instance, a bad leg, has it because a

protector or ally in his youth had a bad leg. The word is from

French and Latin and means to bind together.

226

PREVENTIVE DIANETICS

the child and he doesn't, the ally computation⁵ is reversed.

This is true when abortion is threatened or attempted,

providing the threat is contained in an engram.

Should the mother be injured and the father be

highly solicitous,⁶ the engram has this for content and

the child has a sympathy engram. The way to survive,

then, is to be pathetic when injured, and even see to it

that one is injured.

A woman who is pregnant should be given every consideration by a society which has any feeling for its future generations. If she falls, she should be helped—but silently. She must not be expected to carry heavy things. And she should not have coitus forced upon her.

For every coital experience is an engram in the child during pregnancy.

An astonishing number of pregnancies must take place which are never realized. The violence of coitus, the use of douches and jellies (used because the woman is still contracepting and does not know she is already pregnant), straining bowel movements, falls and acci-

dents must account for a large number of miscarriages

which come about sometime around the first period

after conception. For the zygote and embryo forms of

the child have a rather frail grip on existence and are

very severely injured by things the mother would con-

sider nothing. Once past the first missed period, the

chances of miscarriage rapidly grow less and only when

the child is a genetic monstrosity or when abortion

5. ally computation: little more than a mere idiot calculation

that anyone who is a friend can be kept a friend only by

approximating the conditions wherein the friendship was real-

ized. It is a computation on the basis that one can only be safe in

the vicinity of certain people and that one can only be in the

vicinity of certain people by being sick or crazy or poor and generally disabled.

6. solicitous: anxious and concerned about a person's welfare or comfort.

227

L. RON HUBBARD

attempts are made can a miscarriage be expected to take place The monstrosities are so small a percentage that they are negligible as a possibility.

The amniotic sac⁷ can be pierced many times and repeatedly and emptied of all water after the first

missed period and the child can still survive. Twenty or thirty abortion attempts are not uncommon in the abortifacient and in every attempt the child could have been pierced through the body or brain.

The child before birth does not depend upon the standard senses for its perceptions. Engrams are not memories but cellular level recordings. Therefore, the child needs no eardrums to record an engram. Cases are on hand where whatever hearing mechanism the unborn child had must have been temporarily destroyed by an abortion attempt. And the engram was still recorded.

The cells rebuilt the apparatus which was to be the

source of sound in the standard banks and stored their

own data in the reactive bank.

Release of such engrams means a restoration of

rationality to the individual far above the current norm

and a stability and well-being greater than man ever

thought man possessed. These engrams have been con-

firmed by taking the data from a child, from the mother

and the father, and all data checked. So we are dealing

here with scientific facts which, no matter how star-

ting, are nevertheless true.

The mother, then, should be extremely gentle on

herself during pregnancy and those around her should

be entirely informed of the necessity for silence after

any jar or injury. And in view of the fact that it is not possible to tell when a woman has become pregnant and in view also of the high potentiality of aberration in the zygote and embryo engrams, it is obvious that society

7. amniotic sac: the membrane sac enclosing the developing fetus and amniotic fluid.

228

PREVENTIVE DIANETICS

must better its ways toward women if the future health of the child is to be preserved.

The woman has, to some degree, become considered less valuable in this society than in other societies and

times. She is expected to be in competition with men.

Such a thing is nonsense. A woman has as high a plane

of activity as man. He cannot compete with her any

more than she can compete with him in the fields of

structure and vigorous activity. Much of the social

maelstrom now in existence has as its hub the failure to

recognize the important role of the woman as a woman

and the separation of the fields of women and men.

The changes which will come about in the next

twenty years need no urging here. But with the recent

discoveries in photosynthesis⁸ which should secure

enough food to feed man better and at less cost, the

importance of birth control dwindles. The morality

standards have already changed, no matter what moralists do to try to block the change. And woman, therefore, can be freed of many of her undesirable chains.

In the custody of man is the current world and its activity and structure. In the charge of woman is the care of the person of the human being and his children.

Almost sole custodian of tomorrow's generation, she is entitled to much more respect than her chattel⁹ period of the past gave her.

It is not, then, any wild Utopian thought that woman can be placed above the level hitherto occupied. And so she must be placed if the childhood of tomorrow's

generation is to reach any high standard, if homes are to

be peaceful and unharassed and if society is to advance.

8. photosynthesis: the process by which green plants use sun-

light to convert carbon dioxide (taken from the air) and water into

complex substances.

9. chattel: slave or any movable possession (as opposed to a

house or land).

229

L. RON HUBBARD

Preventive Dianetics, in the sphere of the home,

must place emphasis on the woman in order to safe-

guard the child.

As any first step, a mother should be cleared, for any mother who attempts an abortion is blocked across the second dynamic and any block menaces her health as well as her happiness. An antipathy for children has been found to accompany sexual aberration.

Preventive Dianetics, then, on the level of the individual, asks for cleared parents and then precaution against the aberrating of the child, and further precaution against the keying in of any aberration the child might have received.

To do this is very easy. Maintain silence in the presence of injury. Do what has to be done for the

injured or ill and do it in silence. Maintain silence in the presence of birth to save both the sanity of the mother and the child and safeguard the home to which they will go. And the maintaining of silence does not mean a volley¹⁰ of "Sh's," for those make stammerers.

In a wider field, the maintenance of silence around any "unconscious" or injured person is second in importance only to preventing the "unconsciousness" in the first place.

Say nothing and make no sound around an "unconscious" or injured person. To speak, no matter what is said, is to threaten his sanity. Say nothing while a person is being operated upon. Say nothing when there

is a street accident. Don't talk!

Say nothing around a sick child or an injured child.

Smile, appear calm, but say nothing. Actions do not

speak louder than words but actions are all that can be

done around the sick and injured, unless one has an

10. volley: (figurative) a noisy, rapid outpouring or burst of many

things at once.

230

PREVENTIVE DIANETICS

active desire to drive them into neurosis or insanity or,

at best, to give them a future illness.

And above all, say nothing around a woman who has
been struck or jarred in any way. Help her. If she
speaks, don't answer. Just help her. You have no idea of
whether she is pregnant or not.

And it is a remarkable fact, a scientific fact, that the
healthiest children come from the happiest mothers.

Birth, for one thing, in a cleared mother, is a very mild
affair. Only birth engrams in the mother made it hard.

A cleared mother needs no anesthetic. And that is well
because the anesthetic makes a dazed child and the
engram, when it reacts, makes him appear a dull child.

A happy woman has very little trouble. And even a few
engrams, which arrive despite all precautions, are noth-

ing if the general tone of the mother is happy.

Woman, you have a right and a reason to demand

good treatment.

231

I

Book Three

Therapy

CHAPTER ONE

The Mind's Protection

The mind is a self-protecting mechanism. Short of

the use of drugs as in narcosynthesis, shock, hypnotism

or surgery, no mistake can be made by an auditor1

which cannot be remedied either by himself or by

another auditor. Those things which are stressed, then,

in this book, are ways to accomplish therapy as swiftly

as possible with minimal errors; for errors take time.

Auditors are going to make errors, that is inevitable. If

they make the same error repeatedly, they had better get

someone to guide them through therapy.

There are probably thousands of ways to get into

trouble with mental healing, but all these ways can be

classified in these groups: (1) use of shock or surgery on

the brain; (2) use of strong drugs; (3) use of hypnosis as

such; and (4) trying to crossbreed Dianetics with older

forms of therapy.

The mind will not permit itself to be seriously

overloaded so long as it can retain partial awareness of

itself; it can only be overloaded when its awareness is

reduced to a point where it cannot evaluate anything: it

can then be thoroughly upset. Dianetic reverie² leaves a

1. auditor: a person trained and qualified in applying Dianetics

processes and procedures to individuals for their betterment;

called an auditor because auditor means "one who listens."

2. reverie: the state of reverie is actually just a name. It is a label

introduced to make the patient feel that his state has altered and

that he has gone into a state where his memory is very good or

where he can do something he couldn't ordinarily do before. The

actuality is that he is able to do it all the time anyway. It is not a strange state. The person is wide awake, but merely by asking him to close his eyes he is technically in reverie.

235

L. RON HUBBARD

patient fully aware of everything which is taking place and with full recall of everything which has happened.

Types of therapy which do not do this are possible and useful but they must be approached with the full knowledge that they are not foolproof. Dianetics, then, uses the reverie for the majority of its work, and, using the reverie, an auditor cannot possibly get himself into any

trouble from which he cannot extricate himself and the patient. He is working with an almost foolproof mechanism as long as the mind retains some awareness: a radio or a clock or an electric motor are far more susceptible to injury in the hands of a workman than the human mind. The mind was built to be as tough as possible. It will be found that it is difficult to get it into situations which make it uncomfortable and impossible, with the reverie, to embroil³ it enough to cause neurosis or insanity. In the US infantry manual there is a line about decision: "Any plan, no matter how poorly conceived, if boldly executed, is better than inaction."

In Dianetics, any case,⁴ no matter how serious, no

matter how unskilled the auditor, is better opened than left closed. It is better to start therapy if it is to be interrupted after two hours of work than not to start therapy at all. It is better to contact an engram than to leave an engram uncontacted even if the result is physical discomfort for the patient—for that engram will not thereafter possess as much power and the discomfort will gradually abate.

This is scientific fact. The mechanism Dianetics uses is an ability of the brain which man as a whole did not know he had. It is a process of thought which

3. embroil: throw into confusion; complicate.

4. case: a general term for a person being treated or helped. Case

also refers to a person's condition, which is monitored by the

content of his reactive mind. A person's case is the way he

responds to the world around him by reason of his aberrations.

236

THE MIND'S PROTECTION

everyone possesses inherently and which was evidently

meant to be used in the overall process of thinking but

which, by some strange oversight, man has never before

discovered. Once a person has learned that he possesses

just this one new faculty, he is better able to think than

he was before, and he can learn this faculty in ten minutes. Further, when one approaches an engram with this faculty (which, when intensified, is the reverie), some of that engram's sublevel connections are broken and the aberrative factors no longer have as much force either in the physical or mental spheres. Further, the knowledge that there is a solution to mental ills is a stabilizing factor.

Approaching an engram with the reverie is very far from the same as restimulating the engram exteriorly as is done in life. The engram is a powerful and vicious character only so long as it is untapped. In place and active, it can be restimulated to cause innumerable

mental and physical ills. But approaching it with reverie

is approaching it on a new circuit, one that disarms it.

The power of the engram is partly the fear of the

unknown—knowing brings stability by itself.

Do not think that you will not make patients uncom-

fortable. That is not true. The auditor's work, when it

taps engrams which cannot be lifted, may cause the

patient to have headaches, various aches and pains and

even mild physical illness, even when the work is

carefully done. But life has been doing this to the

patient on a much grander scale for years and, no

matter how badly the case is mauled around, no matter

how many aberrations spring into view to plague the

patient for a day or two, none are as serious as those

which can be occasioned by the environment acting

upon the untapped engram.

The auditor can do everything backwards, upside

down and utterly wrong and the patient will still be

237

L. RON HUBBARD

better, provided only that he does not try to use drugs

before he has worked a few cases, that he does not use

hypnotism as hypnotism and he does not try to cross

Dianetics with some older therapy. He can use drugs in

Dianetics if he knows his Dianetics and if he has

medical concurrence. He can use all the techniques of
hypnotism so long as he is thoroughly experienced with
Dianetics. And once he has used Dianetics, he will not
fall back to mystic efforts to heal minds. In short, the
point which is offered here is that so long as the auditor
takes a relatively simple case at first to see how the
mechanisms of the mind work and uses only the rev-
erie, he cannot get into trouble. There will be those,
certainly, who believe they are so vastly experienced in
tom-tom beating or gourd rattling that they won't give
Dianetics a chance to work as Dianetics but will sail in
and begin to plague the patient about "penis envy" or

make him repent his sins; but the patient who starts to

get this will be smart to simply change positions from

the couch to the auditor's chair and clear up some of

the aberrations of the auditor before work proceeds.

Anybody who has read this book once through and

procured a patient with sonic recall for a trial effort

will know more about the mind, in those actions, than

he has ever known before, and he will be more skilled

and able to treat the mind than anyone attempting to do

so, regardless of reputation, a very short while ago.

This does not mean that men who have had experience

with mental patients will not, knowing Dianetics (know-

ing Dianetics) have an edge on those who do not realize

some of the foibles⁵ of which man in an aberrated state

is capable. And on the other hand it does not mean that

some engineer or lawyer or cook with a few Dianetic

5. foibles: minor weaknesses or failings of character; slight flaws

or defects.

238

THE MIND'S PROTECTION

cases under his belt will not be more skilled than all

other practitioners of whatever background or kind. In

this case, the sky is no limit.

One could not say, offhand, that an able hypnotist or

an able psychologist, ready and willing to jettison⁶ and

unlearn yesterday's mistakes, is not better prepared to
practice Dianetics. In the field of psychosomatic medicine, the medical doctor, with a vast fund of experience in healing, might very well be far and above other auditors in Dianetic work. But it is not necessarily the case, for in research it has been proven that men and women with most unlikely professional backgrounds have suddenly become auditors superior in skill to those in fields you might suspect were more closely allied.

Engineers particularly are excellent material and make excellent auditors. Again, Dianetics is not being released to a profession, for no profession could encompass it. It is insufficiently complicated to warrant years

of study in some university. It belongs to man and it is
doubtful if anyone could manage to gain a corner⁷ on it
for it does not fall within any legislation of any kind in
any place and if Dianetics were legislated into a li-
censed profession, then it is to be feared that listening
to stories and jokes and personal experience would also
have to be legislated into a profession. Such laws would
put all men of goodwill who lend a sympathetic ear to a
friend's troubles inside the barbed wire. Dianetics is
not psychiatry. It is not psychoanalysis. It is not psy-
chology. It is not personal relations. It is not hypnotism.
It is a science of mind and needs about as much

licensing and regulation as the application of the science

6. jettison: throw off (something) as an obstacle or burden;

discard.

7. corner: a monopoly acquired on a stock or a commodity so as

to be able to raise the price.

239

L. RON HUBBARD

of physics. Those things which are legislated against

are a matter of law because they may in some way

injure individuals or society. Legislation exists about

psychoanalysis in some three states in the Union, legis-

lation against or about psychiatry exists everywhere. If

an auditor wishes to constitute⁸ himself a psychiatrist
with the power of vivisection⁹ human brains, if he wants
to constitute himself a doctor and administer drugs and
medicines, if he wants to practice hypnotism and pour
suggestions into a patient, then he must square it with
psychiatry, medicine and the local laws about hypno-
tism, for he has entered other fields than Dianetics. In
Dianetics, hypnotism is not used, no brains are operated
upon and no drugs are given unless the local medico is
part of the staff. Dianetics is not in any way covered by
legislation anywhere, for no law can prevent one man
sitting down and telling another man his troubles, and if
anyone wants a monopoly on Dianetics, be assured that

he wants it for reasons which have to do not with

Dianetics but with profit. There are not enough psy-

chiatrists in the country to begin to staff the mental

institutions. Surely this generation, particularly with all

the iatrogenic* work which has been done, will con-

tinue to need those institutions and will need psychia-

trists: their field is the treatment of the insane by

definition and that has nothing to do with thee and me.

In psychology, Dianetics drops into line without dis-

turbing anything concerned with staffs or research or

* Iatrogenic means illness generated by doctors. An operation

during which the doctor's knife slipped and accidentally

harm the patient might cause an iatrogenic illness or injury

since the fault would have been with the surgeons. —LRH

8. constitute: establish or set up; make (a person or thing)

something.

9. vivisecting: cutting into or dissecting.

240

THE MIND'S PROTECTION

teaching posts, for psychology is simply the study of the

psyche and now that there exists a science of the psyche

it can go ahead with a will. Thus, Dianetics is the

enemy of none, and Dianetics falls utterly outside all

existing legislation, none of which anticipated or made

any provision for a science of mind.

241

CHAPTER Two

Release or Clear

The object of Dianetic therapy is to bring about a

Release or a Clear.

A Release (noun) is an individual from whom major

stress and anxiety have been removed by Dianetic therapy.

A Clear (noun) is an individual who, as a result of

Dianetic therapy, has neither active nor potential psycho-

somatic illness or aberration.

To clear (verb) is to release all the physical pain and painful emotion from the life of an individual or, as in Political Dianetics, a society. The result of this will bring about persistence in the four dynamics, optimum analytical ability for the individual and, with that, all recall. The experience of his entire life is available to the Clear and he has all his inherent mental ability and imagination free to use it. His physical vitality and health are markedly improved and all psychosomatic illnesses have vanished and will not return. He has greater resistance to actual disease. And he is adaptable to and able to change his environment. He is not "adjusted"; he is dynamic. His ethical and moral stand-

ards are high, his ability to seek and experience pleas-

ure is great. His personality is heightened and he is

creative and constructive. It is not yet known how much

longevity is added to a life in the process of clearing,

but in view of the automatic rebalancing of the endo-

crine system, the lowered incidence of accident and the

improvement of general physical tone, it is most cer-

tainly raised.

A Release is an individual from whom have been

released the current or chronic mental and physical

difficulties and painful emotion. The value of a Release, when compared to a Clear, may not at first thought be considered great, but when one understands that a Release is usually in excess of the contemporary norm in mental stability, it can be seen that the condition is not without great value.

As a standard of comparison, a Clear is to the contemporary norm as the contemporary norm is to a contemporary institutional case. The margin is wide and it would be difficult to exaggerate it. A Clear, for instance, has complete recall of everything which has ever happened to him or anything he has ever studied.

He does mental computations, such as those of chess,1
for example, which a normal would do in half an hour,
in ten or fifteen seconds. He does not think "vocally"
but spontaneously. There are no demon circuits in his
mind except those which it might amuse him to set
up—and break down again—to care for various ap-
proaches to living. He is entirely self-determined. And
his creative imagination is high. He can do a swift study
of anything within his intellectual capacity, which is
inherent, and the study would be the equivalent to him
of a year or two of training when he was "normal." His
vigor, persistence and tenacity to life are very much
higher than anyone has thought possible.

The objection that it is dangerous to create too many

Clears in a society is a thoughtless one. The Clear is

rational. The acts which damage a society are irra-

tional. That a handful of Clears could probably handle

any number of "normals" is within reason, but that the

1. chess: a game of skill played on a checkered board by two

players, each possessing an initial force of 16 pieces, including a

piece called a "king." There are individual rules of movement for

each different kind of piece. Players make alternate moves, each

seeking to attack the other's king in such a manner that no escape

or defense is possible, thus ending the game.

Clear would handle them to their detriment is unreasonable. The more Clears a society possessed, the more chance that society would have to prosper. That a Clear is unambitious is not proven out by scientific observation, for the curve of dwindling ambition follows the curve of reducing rationality; and those who have been cleared have proven the matter by re-activating all their skills toward goals they had once desired but had begun to consider unattainable when "norms."* That a Clear is in some degree separated from the "norm" is attributable to the gulf between their respective mental abilities, for he has achieved solutions and conclusions

before the "norm" has begun to form an idea of what to
conclude. This does not make a Clear intolerable to the
"norm," for the Clear has none of that superiority
attitude which is actually a product of engrams. This is
a quick glance at the state of being Clear, but the state
cannot be described; it has to be experienced to be
appreciated.

A Release is a somewhat variable quantity. Anyone
well advanced on the road to Clear is a Release. There
is no comparison between a Clear and anything man has
before believed obtainable, and there is no comparison
between clearing and any therapy hitherto practiced. In

the case of the Release only is there a basis of com-

parison between Dianetics and past therapies such as

"psychoanalysis" and any other. A Release can be ef-

fectured in a few weeks. The resulting condition will be at

least equivalent to that following two years of "psycho-

analysis" with the difference that the Release has a guar-

antee of permanent results and no guarantee of success

has ever been made by "psychoanalysis." A Release does

* Norm is a term in psychology denoting the normal individual,

which is to say, an average person. The IQ and behavior of a

"norm" would be an averaging out of the current population. There

is nothing desirable about being a "norm," for he is badly aberr-

ted. -LRH

RELEASE OR CLEAR

not relapse into any pattern which has been relieved.

These are the two goals of the Dianetic auditor:

Clear and Release. It is not known at this writing how

long is the average time to raise the institutionally

insane into the neurotic level: it has been done in two

hours, it has been done in ten and in some cases it has

required two hundred.*

The Dianetic auditor should determine beforehand

in any case whether he wishes to attempt a Release or a

Clear. He can achieve either with anyone not organi-

cally insane (missing or seared portions of the brain

bringing about insanity, mainly genetic or iatrogenic

and relatively rare except in institutions). But he should

make an estimate of the amount of time he can invest in

any one person and regulate his intention accordingly

and announce it to his patient. The two goals are

slightly different. In a Release, one does not attempt

entrance into phases of the case which will or may bring

about a necessity of long work and gives his attention to

the location and release of emotional charge. In clear-

ing, the auditor gives his attention to the location of the

basic-basic engram, the discharge of emotion and the

entire engram bank.

There is a third goal which could be considered a subhead of a Release. This is an assist: it is done after injury, or illness following the injury, or illness just sustained, in order to promote more rapid recovery; to assist the body in its rehabilitation after injury or

* The Dianetic auditor who practices with the institutionally insane exclusively should provide himself with the text now in preparation on that subject. The techniques are similar to those described here but incline more toward heroic measures. This present volume is addressed to treatment of the normal person or the neurotic patient not sufficiently violent to be institutionalized. However, with intelligence and imagination, these same

techniques can be applied with success to any mental state or

physical illness. Institutional Dianetics is primarily the reduction

of an insanity to a neurosis. — LRH

245

L. RON HUBBARD

illness. This is specialized therapy which will probably

be practiced commonly enough but is of primary ben-

j| efit to the medical doctor who, with it, can save lives

and speed healing by releasing the engram of that

particular illness or injury, thus removing the various

engram conceptions which the furtherance of the injury

restimulates. Any Dianetic auditor can practice this.

The assist has about the same level of usefulness as a

faith-healing miracle which would work every time.

Estimations of the amount of time the case will

require are difficult to attain with any accuracy greater

than 50 percent and it should be understood by the

patient that the time in therapy is variable. It depends in

a measure upon the skill of the auditor, the number of

unsuspected engrams never hitherto reactivated, and the

amount of restimulation to which the patient is subject

during therapy. Therefore, the auditor should not be

optimistic in estimating time but should make his pa-

tient understand that greater or lesser time may be

consumed in the therapy.

Any person who is intelligent and possessed of

average persistency and who is willing to read this book

thoroughly should be able to become a Dianetic auditor.

When he has cleared two or three cases he will have

learned far more and understood far more than is

contained in this book, for there is nothing which

develops an understanding of a machine like handling it

in action. This is the instruction book, the machine in

question is ready to hand wherever there are men.

Contrary to superstition about the mind, it is almost

impossible to permanently injure the mechanism. It can

be done with an electric shock or a scalpel or an ice

pick, but it is almost impossible to do it with Dianetic

therapy.

CHAPTER THREE

The Auditor's Role

The purpose of therapy and its sole target is the removal of the content of the reactive engram bank. In a Release, the majority of emotional stress is deleted from this bank. In a Clear, the entire content is removed.*

The application of a science is an art. That is true of any science. The efficacy of its application depends upon the understanding, skill and ability of whoever applies it. The chemist has a science of chemistry and

yet the profession of being a chemist is an art. The

engineer may have behind him the precision of all the

physical sciences and yet the practice of engineering is

an art.

Certain rules of procedure can be laid down after

the basic axioms of a science are understood. Beyond

those rules of procedure is the understanding, skill and

ability necessary to application.

Dianetics is extremely simple. This does not mean

that cases cannot be extremely complicated. To cover

one case for each kind of case in this book would

necessitate two billion cases and that would only en-

compass the current population. For each man is a great

deal different from every other man. His inherent personality is different. His composite of experience is different. And his dynamics are of different strengths.

* The content of the engram bank is actually shifted rather than removed, for it refiles under the heading of experience in the standard banks. The material, however, appears to vanish in therapy because the therapy is addressed to the engram bank, not the standard banks. —LRH

247

L. RON HUBBARD

The only constant is the mechanism of the reactive

engram bank and that alone does not vary. The content

of that bank is different from man to man both in

quantity and intensity but the mechanism of operation

of the bank and therefore the basic mechanisms of

Dianetics are constant from man to man, and were in

every age and will be in every future age until man

evolves into another organism.

The target is the engram. It is also the target of the

patient's analytical mind and the patient's dynamics as

he tries to live his life: It is the target of the auditor's

analytical mind and the auditor's dynamics. So brack-

eted¹ and salvoed,² it gives up its store of engrams.

This should be extremely plain to any auditor: the

amount he relaxes from the position of auditor and forgets the target, he garners³ trouble which will consume his time. The moment he makes the error of thinking that the person, the analytical mind or the dynamics of the patient are resisting, trying to stop therapy or giving up, the auditor has made the fundamental and primary error in the practice of Dianetics.

Almost anything that goes wrong can be traced back to this error. It cannot be too emphatically stated that the analytical mind and the dynamics of the patient never, never, never resist the auditor. The auditor is not there to be resisted. He has no concern with resistance from

anything except the patient's (and sometimes his own)

engrams.

The auditor is not there as the patient's driver or

adviser. He is not there to be intimidated by the patient's

1. bracketed: of a target, having had its range determined by

placing shots both short of the target and beyond it. Used

figuratively.

2. salvoed: fired at with a number of guns or artillery pieces at

one time.

3. garners: acquires; gathers or collects.

engrams or be frightened by their aspects. He is there to

audit and only to audit. If he feels that he is called upon

to be lordly to the patient, then the auditor had better

change chair for couch because he has a case of authori-

tarianism coming into view. The word auditor is used,

not operator or therapist, because it is a cooperative

effort between the auditor and the patient, and the law

of affinity is at work.

The patient cannot see his own aberrations. That is

one of the reasons why the auditor is there. The patient

needs to be bolstered to face the unknowns of his life.

That is another reason the auditor is there. The patient

would not dare address the world which has gotten

inside him and turn his back upon the world that is

outside him unless he has a sentry. That is another

reason the auditor is there.

The auditor's job is to safeguard the person of the

patient during therapy, to compute the reasons why the

patient's mind cannot reach into the engram bank, to

strengthen the patient's nerve and to get those engrams.

There is a three-way case of affinity at work this

moment. I am in affinity with the auditor: I am telling

him all that has been discovered and is in practice in

Dianetics and I want him to succeed. The auditor is in

affinity with the patient: he wants the patient to attack

engrams. The patient is in affinity with the auditor
because, with minimal work, that patient is going to get
better and—with persistence lent him by the auditor,
plus his own—will become a Release or a Clear. There
are even more affinities at work, a vast network of
them. This is a cooperative endeavor.

The engram bank is the target, not the patient. If the
patient swears and moans and weeps and pleads, those
are engrams talking. After a while the engrams that
make him swear and moan and weep and plead will be
discharged and refiled. The patient, in whatever state,

L. RON HUBBARD

knows full well that the action taken is necessary. If the auditor is so short of rationality that he mistakes this swearing or moaning as something directed at him personally, that auditor had better change places with the patient and undergo therapy.

The only thing which resists is the engram! When it is being restimulated it impinges against the patient's analyzer, tends to reduce analytical power, and the patient exhibits a modified dramatization. Any auditor with two brain cells to click together will never be in any slightest danger of his person at the hands of the

prerelease or preclear* If the auditor wants to use
hypnotism and try to run late physically painful en-
grams, such as operations, when early ones are avail-
able, he may find himself targeted. But then he has
done something very wrong. If the auditor suddenly
gets supermoral and lectures the patient, he may get
involved, but again he has done something very wrong.
If the auditor snarls and snaps at the patient, he may get
targeted, but once more a fundamental error has been
made.

The target is the engram bank. It is the auditor's job
to attack the preclear's engram bank. It is the pre-
clear's job to attack that bank. To attack the preclear is

to permit his engram bank to attack the preclear.

We know that there are five methods of handling

an engram. Four of them are wrong. To succumb to an

engram is apathy, to neglect one is carelessness, but to

avoid or flee from one is cowardice. Attack, and only

attack, resolves the problem. It is the duty of the auditor

to make very sure that the preclear keeps attacking

* The terms prerelease and preclear are used to designate an

individual entered into and undergoing Dianetic therapy. The

term preclear is used most commonly. The word patient is less

descriptive because it implies illness, but it is used inter-

changeably. —LRH

THE AUDITOR'S ROLE

engrams, not the auditor or the exterior world. If the auditor attacks the preclear, that's bad gunnery and very poor logic.

The engram bank is best attacked primarily by discharging its emotional charge anywhere it can be contacted. After that it is best attacked by finding out what the preclear, in reverie, thinks would happen to him if he got well, got better, found out, etc. And then it is most and always most important, in any way

possible, to contact the primary moment of pain or

unconsciousness in the patient's life. This is basic-

basic. Once an auditor has basic-basic, the case will

swiftly resolve. If the preclear's reactive mind is sup-

pressing basic-basic, then the auditor should discharge

more reactive emotion, discover the computation now in

force, and try again. He will eventually get basic-basic.

That's important. And that is all that is important in a

preclear.

In the prerelease (patient working toward Release

only), the task is to discharge emotion and as many

early engrams as will present themselves easily. The

reduction of locks may be included in prerelease; but

only when they lead to basic-basic should locks be

touched in a preclear.

There are three levels of healing. The first is getting

the job done efficiently. Below that is making the

patient comfortable. Below that is sympathy. In short, if

you can do nothing for a man with a broken back, you

can make him comfortable. If you can't even make him

comfortable, you can sympathize with him.

The second and third echelons above are entirely

unwarranted in Dianetics. The job can be done effi-

ciently. Making the patient comfortable is a waste of

time. Giving him sympathy may snarl up the entire case,

for his worst engrams will be sympathy engrams and

sympathy may restimulate them out of place. The auditor

251

L. RON HUBBARD

who indulges in "hand-patting," no matter how much it

seems to be indicated, is wasting time and slowing down

the case. Undue roughness is not indicated. A friendly,

cheerful, optimistic attitude will take care of everything.

A preclear sometimes needs a grin. But he has already

had more "hand-patting" than the analyzer has been able

to compute. His chronic psychosomatic illness contains

sympathy in its engram.

The next thing the auditor should know and live is

the Auditor's Code.*4 This may sound like something

from "When Knighthood Was in Flower" or the "Thir-

teen Rituals for Heavenly Bliss and Nirvana," but

unless it is employed by the auditor on his patients, the

auditor will have some heavy slogging. This code is not

for the comfort of the preclear; it is exclusively for the

protection of the auditor.

The Auditor's Code should never be violated. Prac-

tice in Dianetics has demonstrated that violation of the

Auditor's Code alone can interrupt cases.

The auditor should be courteous in his treatment of

all preclears.

The auditor should be kind, not giving way to any indulgence of cruelty toward preclears, nor surrendering to any desire to punish.

The auditor should be quiet during therapy, not given to talk beyond the absolute essentials of Dianetics during an actual session.

* It is interesting that the Auditor's Code outlines, save for its last clause, the survival conduct pattern of man. The Clear operates more or less automatically on this code. Dianetics is a parallel to thought, since it follows the natural laws of thought. What works in Dianetics works as well in life. — LRH

4. Auditor's Code: a collection of rules (do's and don'ts) that an auditor follows while auditing someone, which assures that the preclear will get the greatest possible gain out of the auditing he is having.

252

THE AUDITOR'S ROLE

The auditor should be trustworthy, keeping his word when given, keeping his appointments in schedules and his commitments to work, and never giving forth any commitment of any kind which he has any slightest reason to believe he cannot keep.

The auditor should be courageous, never giving ground

or violating the fundamentals of therapy because a pre-clear thinks he should.

The auditor should be patient in his working, never becoming restless or annoyed by the pre-clear, no matter what the pre-clear is doing or saying.

The auditor should be thorough, never permitting his plan of work to be swayed or a charge to be avoided.

The auditor should be persistent, never giving up until he has achieved results.

The auditor should be uncommunicative, never giving the patient any information whatsoever about his case, including evaluations of data or further estimates of time in therapy.

Various conditions ensue when any of the above are violated. All violations slow therapy and cause the auditor more work. All violations come back to the detriment of the auditor.

For instance, in the last, it is not part of the auditor's work to inform the preclear of anything. As soon as he starts doing so, the preclear promptly hooks the auditor into the circuit as the source of information and so avoids engrams.

The auditor will see in progress the most violent and disturbing human emotions. He may be moved to sympathy, but if he is, he has overlooked something and

hindered therapy: Whenever an emotion shows, it is an

emotion which will shortly be history. Whatever gyra-

tions⁵ the preclear may go through, however much he

5. gyrations: actions of turning round, wheeling or whirling.

253

L. RON HUBBARD

may move or wrestle around, the auditor must keep

firmly in mind that every moan or gyration is one step

closer to the goal. For why be frightened or waste

sympathy about something which, when it has been

recounted a few times, will leave a preclear happier?

If the auditor becomes frightened and pulls that

error of all errors when a preclear begins to shake,

"Come up to present time!" he can be sure that the

preclear will have a couple of bad days and that the next

time the auditor wants to enter that engram it will be

blocked.

If an auditor assumes the state of mind that he can

sit and whistle while Rome burns before him and be

prepared to grin about it, then he will do an optimum

job. The things at which he gazes, no matter how they

look, no matter how they sound, are solid gains. It's the

quiet, orderly patient who is making few gains. This

does not mean that the auditor is trying for nothing but

violence, but it does mean that when he gets it he can

be cheerful and content that one more engram has lost

its charge.

The task of auditing is rather much a shepherd's

task, herding the little sheep, the engrams, into the pen

for slaughter. The preclear isn't under the auditor's

orders but the preclear, if the case runs well, will do

whatever the auditor wants with these engrams because

the analytical mind and the dynamics of the preclear

want that job done. The mind knows how the mind

operates.

Diagnosis

One of the most important contributions of Diagnostics is the resolution of the problem of diagnosis in the field of aberration. Hitherto there have been almost unlimited classifications; further, there has been no optimum standard.* As one researches in the field of psychiatric texts, he finds wide disagreement in classification and continual complaint that classification is very complex and lacking in usefulness. Without an optimum goal of conduct or mental state and without knowledge of the cause of aberration, catalogs of descriptions alone were possible and these were so in-

volved and contradictory that it was nearly impossible

to sharply assign to a psychotic or neurotic any classifi-

cation which would lead to an understanding of his

case.** The main disability in this classification system

was that the classification did not lead to a cure, for

there was no standard treatment and there was no

optimum state to indicate when treatment was at end;

and as there was no cure for aberration or psycho-

somatic illness, there could be no classification which

* "Psychology has . . . no mental standards to set up. . . .

The psychologist does not occupy himself with the establish-

ment of norms." The Psychology of Abnormal People, by

John J. B. Morgan, Longmans, Green & Co., New York, 1928.

-LRH

** "The work of the psychiatrist was taken up mainly with

describing and classifying symptoms. This procedure has

been strongly criticized by some students on the ground that it

leads nowhere and encourages a false pretense of understand-

ing where there is none. Giving a name to something does not

increase our understanding of it." Ibid., Intro. —LRH

255

L. RON HUBBARD

would indicate the direction which was to be taken or

what could uniformly be expected of a case.

This is no criticism of past efforts surely, but it is a

source of relief to know that the classification of aberration is unnecessary along such complicated lines as have been used and that the cataloging of psychosomatic ills, while necessary to the physician, is unimportant to the auditor. In the evolution of the science of Dianetics there were several stages of classification until it finally became clear that the label on a pathological condition should only be whatever the auditor had to overcome to achieve cure. This system, as now evolved through practice, makes it possible for the auditor to "diagnose" without any more knowledge than is contained in this chapter and his own future experience.

The number of aberrations possible is the number of

combinations of words possible in a language as contained in engrams. In other words, if a psychotic thinks he is God, he has an engram which says he is God. If he is worried about poison in his hash, he has an engram which tells him he may get poison in his hash. If he is certain he may be "fired" from his job any moment, even though he is competent and well liked, he has an engram which tells him he is about to be "fired." If he thinks he is ugly, he has an engram about being ugly. If he is afraid of snakes or cats, he has engrams which tell him to fear snakes and cats. If he is sure he has to buy everything he sees, despite his income, he has an en-

gram which tells him to buy everything he sees. And in
view of the fact that anyone not released or cleared has
upwards of two or three hundred engrams and as these
engrams contain a most remarkable assortment of lan-
guage and as he may choose one of five ways of
handling any one of these engrams, the problem of
aberration is of no importance to the auditor except
where it slows therapy.

256

DIAGNOSIS

Most aberrated people talk in a large measure out of
their engrams. Whatever the chronic patten' of the indi-

vidual may be, his rage patter, his apathy patter, his

general attitude toward life, this patter is contained in

engrams wherever it departs even in the slightest degree

from complete rationality. The man who "cannot be

sure," who "does not know" and who is skeptical of

everything, is talking out of engrams. The man who is

certain "it cannot be true," that "it isn't possible," that

"authority must be contacted," is talking out of en-

grams. The woman who is so certain she needs a

divorce or that her husband is going to murder her some

night is talking out of either her own or his engrams.

The man who comes in and says he has a bad pain in his

stomach that feels "just like a #12 gauge2 copper wire

going straight through me," has quite possibly had a

#12 gauge copper wire through him in an attempted

abortion or talk of such a thing while he was in pain.

The man who says it "has to be cut out" is talking

straight out of an engram, either from some operation

of his own or his mother's or from an attempted

abortion. The man who "has to get rid of it" is again

possibly talking out of an attempted-abortion engram.

The man who "can't get rid of it" may be talking from

the same source but from another valence. People, in

short, especially when talking about Dianetics and en-

grams, give forth with engram talk in steady streams.

They have no awareness, ordinarily, that the things they

are saying are minor dramatizations of their engrams

and suppose that they have concluded these things

themselves or think these things: the supposition and

explanation is only justified thought—the analyzer

1. patter: the special vocabulary of a particular activity.

2. gauge: thickness or diameter, as of sheet metal or wire. A #12

gauge copper wire is approximately three thirty-secondths of an

inch thick.

performing its duty in guaranteeing that the organism is

right no matter how foolishly it is acting.

The auditor can be assured, particularly when he is

talking about Dianetics, that he is going to hear in

return a lot of engram content; for discussion of the

reactive mind generally takes place in language which it

itself holds.

Recall that the reactive mind can think only on this

equation— $A = A = A$, where the three A's may be re-

spectively a horse, a swear word and the verb to spit.

Spitting is the same as horses is the same as God. The

reactive mind is a very zealous Simple Simon, carefully

stepping in each pie. Thus, when a man is told he has to

delete the content of the reactive bank, he may say that

if he did, he is sure he would lose all his ambition. Be

assured—and how easily this proves up on therapy and

how red-eared some preclears become—that he has an

engram which may run something like this:

(Blow or bump, prenatal)

Father: Damn it, Agnes, you've got to get rid of that

goddamned baby. If you don't, we'll starve to death.

I can't afford it.

Mother: Oh, no, no, no. I can't get rid of it, I can't, I

can't, I can't! Honest, I will take care of it. I'll work

and slave and support it. Please don't make me get

rid of it. If I did I'd just die. I'd lose my mind! I

wouldn't have anything to hope for. I'd lose all my

interest in life. I'd lose my ambition. Please let me

keep it!

What a common one that engram is: and how sin-

cere and "rational" and earnest an aberree can be in

supporting his conclusion that he has just "thought up"

the "computation" that if he "gets rid of it," he'll lose

his mind and ambition, maybe even die!

As this work is written, most of the engrams that

will be found in adults come from the first quarter of

the twentieth century. This was the period of "Aha, Jack Dalton,³ at last I have you in my possession!" It was the period of Blood and Sand⁴ and Theda Bara.⁵ It was the period of bootleg⁶ whiskey and woman suffrage.⁷ It covered the days of "flaming youth" and "The Yanks are coming,"⁸ and bits of such color will be demanding action in the engram banks. Dianetic auditors have picked up whole passages of the great play Drunkard⁹ out of prenatal engrams, not as a piece of funny "corn"¹⁰ but as Mama's sincere and passionate effort to reform Papa. Superdrama, mellerdrammer." And not only that but also tragedy. The hangover of the Gay

Nineties,¹² when the "business girl" had just begun to

be "free" and Carry Nation¹³ was saving the world at

3. Jack Dalton: member of an outlaw gang in the nineteenth-

century American West; also a character in early westerns.

4. Blood and Sand: title of a silent movie featuring Rudolph

Valentine.

5. Theda Bara: stage name of Theodosia Goodman (1890-

1955), US actress who played parts of evil women in forty films

between 1915 and 1919.

6. bootleg: made, sold or transported unlawfully. The term arose

from the practice of hiding a liquor bottle in the leg of one's boot.

7. suffrage: the right to vote, especially in a political election.

8. "The Yanks are coining": line from the refrain of the song

"Over There" by George M. Cohan (1878-1942), American

actor, songwriter, playwright and producer. The song is about the

American troops sent to Europe to fight in World War I.

9. Drunkard: a play written by William H. Smith and "A Gentle-

man" in the late 1800s, a moral domestic drama of American life.

10. corn: (informal) old-fashioned, trite or mawkishly (weakly

emotional) sentimental material, as a joke, a story or music.

11. mellerdrammer: humorous spelling of melodrama, any sen-

sational writing, speech or action with exaggerated appeal to the

emotions.

12. Gay Nineties: the 1890s, a period of sudden affluence in the

US brought on by the industrial revolution.

13. Carry Nation: (1846-1911) American temperance agitator,

famous for her use of a hatchet to break up saloons.

259

L. RON HUBBARD

the expense of bartenders, will be common fare in

engrams found in today's adults. Yesterday's cliches

and absurdities become, tragically enough, today's en-

gramic commands. One very, very morose young man,

for instance, was found to have as the central motif¹⁴ of

his reactive mind Hamlet's¹⁵ historic vacillations¹⁶ about

whether "to be or not to be, that is the question." Mama

(who was what these colloquially minded auditors call a

"loop"17) had gotten it by contagion from an actor-

father whose failure to be a Barrymore18 had driven him

to drink and wife beating; and our young man would sit

for hours in a morose apathy wondering about life. To

classify his psychosis required nothing more than "apa-

thetic young fellow."

Most of engram content is merely cliches and common-

places and emotional crash dives by Mama or Papa. But

the auditor will have his moments. And when he suddenly

learns about them, the preclear will have his laughs.

In other words, aberration can be any combination

of words contained in an engram. Thus, to classify by

aberration is not only utterly impossible but completely

unnecessary. After an auditor has run one case, he will

be far more able to appreciate this.

14. motif: dominant idea or feature.

15. Hamlet: hero of the play Hamlet, a tragedy (first printed

1603) by William Shakespeare. Hamlet is a young prince who

avenges the murder of his father.

16. vacillation: a wavering in mind or opinion.

17. "loop": literally, a length of film or magnetic tape whose

ends have been joined to form an endless strip, so that continuous

repetition of the recording is made possible (e.g., in rehearsing

the synchronization required for dubbing a foreign-language

soundtrack). Used figuratively.

18. Barrymore: referring to the Barrymore family, American

actors of English-Irish descent, one of the most famous families

in the history of the American stage: Maurice Barrymore (1847-

1905) and his three children-Lionel (1878-1954), Ethel (1879-

1959) and John (1892-1942).

260

DIAGNOSIS

As for psychosomatic ills, as classified in an earlier

chapter, these depend also upon accidental or intentional

word combinations and all the variety of injury and unbal-

anced fluid and growth possible. It is very well to call an

obscure pain "tendinitis," but more probably and more

accurately it is a fall or injury before birth. Asthma comes

fairly constantly from birth, as do conjunctivitis and

sinusitis, but when these can occur in birth, there is

generally prenatal background. Thus it can be said that

wherever a man or woman aches is of minor importance

to the auditor beyond using the patient's chronic illness to

locate the chain of sympathy engrams, and all the auditor

needs to know of that illness is that some area of the body

hurts the patient. That, for the auditor, is enough for

psychosomatic diagnosis.

It happens that the extent of aberration and the

extent of psychosomatic illness are not the regulating

factors which establish how long a case may take. A

patient may be a screaming lunatic and yet require only
a hundred hours to clear. Another may be a "well-
balanced" and moderately successful person and yet
take five hundred hours to clear. Therefore, in the light of
the fact that the extent of aberration and illness has only a
minor influence on what the auditor is interested in—
therapy—classification by these is so much wasted time.

Oh, there are such things as a man being too sick
from heart trouble to be worked very hard, and such
things as a patient worrying so continuously as a mani-
festation of his usual life that the auditor finds his work
difficult, but these are rarities and again have little

bearing on the classification of a case.

The rule in diagnosis is that whatever the individual offers the auditor as a detrimental reaction to therapy is engramic and will prove so in the process. Whatever impedes the auditor in his work is identical to whatever is impeding the patient in his thinking and living. Think of it this way: the auditor is an analytical mind (his

261

L. RON HUBBARD

own) confronted with a reactive mind (the preclear's).

Therapy is a process of thinking. Whatever troubles the patient will also trouble the auditor; whatever troubles

the auditor has also troubled the patient's analytical
mind. The patient is not a whole analytical mind. The
auditor will find himself occasionally with a patient
who does nothing but swear at him and yet when the
appointment time arrives, there that patient is, anxious
to continue therapy; or the auditor may find a patient
who tells him how useless the entire procedure is and
how she hates to be worked upon and yet if he were to
tell her, "All right, we'll stop work," she would go into
a prompt decline. The analytical mind of the patient
wants to do the same thing the auditor is trying to do:
fight down into the reactive bank. Therefore, the audi-
tor, when he encounters opposition, adverse theory

about Dianetics, personal criticism, etc., is not listening to analytical data but reactive engrams and he should calmly proceed, secure in that knowledge; for the patient's dynamics, all that can be brought to bear, will help him so long as the auditor is an ally against the preclear 's reactive mind, rather than a critic or attacker of the preclear 's analytical mind.

This is an example:

(In reverie—prenatal basic area)

Preclear: (Believing he means Dianetics) I don't know.

I don't know. I just can't remember. It won't work. I

know it won't work.

Auditor: (Repeater technique, 19 described later) Go

over that. Say, "It won't work."

19. repeater technique: the repetition of a word or phrase in

order to produce movement on the time track into areas of

disturbed thought containing that word or phrase. After the audi-

tor has placed the patient in reverie, if he discovers the patient, for

instance, insists he "can't go anyplace," the auditor makes him

repeat the phrase. Repetition of such a phrase, over and over,

sucks the patient back down the track and into contact with an

engram which contains it.

Preclear: "It won't work. It won't work. It won't work.

. . ." etc., etc. Ouch, my stomach hurts! "It won't

work. It won't work. It won't work. . . ." (Laughter

of relief) That's my mother. Talking to herself.

Auditor: All right, let's pick up the entire engram.

Begin at the beginning.

Preclear: (Quoting recall with somatics [pains]) "I

don't know how to do it. I just can't remember what

Becky told me. I just can't remember it. Oh, I am so

discouraged. It won't work this way. It just won't

work. I wish I knew what Becky told me but I can't

remember. Oh, I wish . . ." Hey, what's she got in

here? Why, goddamn her, that's beginning to burn!

It's a douche. Say! Let me out of here. Bring me up

to present time! That really burns!

Auditor: Go back to the beginning and go over it again.

Pick up whatever additional data you can contact.

Preclear: Repeats engram, finding all the old phrases

and some new ones, plus some sounds. Recounts

four more times, "reexperiencing" everything. Be-

gins to yawn, almost falls asleep (unconsciousness

coming off), revives and repeats engram twice

more. Then begins to chuckle over it. Somatic is

gone. Suddenly engram is "gone" (refiled and he

cannot discover it again). He is much pleased.

Auditor: Go to the next earliest moment of pain or

discomfort.

Preclear: Uh. Mmmmm. I can't get in there. Say, I

can't get in there! I mean it. I wonder where . . .

Auditor: Go over the line, "Can't get in there."

Preclear: "Can't get in there. Can't . . ." My legs feel

funny. There's a sharp pain. Say, what the hell is she

doing? Why, damn her. Boy, I'd like to get my hands

on her just once. Just once!

Auditor: Begin at the beginning and recount it.

263

L. RON HUBBARD

Preclear: (Recounts engram several times, yawns off

"unconsciousness," chuckles when he can't find the engram anymore. Feels better.) Oh, well, I guess she had her troubles.

Auditor: (Carefully refraining from agreeing that Mama had her troubles, since that would make him an ally of Mama) Go to the next moment of pain or discomfort.

Preclear: (Uncomfortable) I can't. I'm not moving on the time track. I'm stuck. Oh, all right. "I'm stuck, I'm stuck." No. "It's stuck. It's stuck that time." No.

"I stuck it that time." Why damn her! That's my coronary trouble! That's it! That's the sharp pain I get!

Auditor: Begin at the beginning of the engram and

recount, etc.

Each time, it can be seen in this example, that the patient in reverie encountered analytically the engram in near proximity, the engram command impinged itself upon the patient himself, who gave it forth as an analytical opinion to the auditor. A preclear in reverie is close up against the source material of his aberrations. An aberree wide-awake may be giving forth highly complex opinions which he will battle to the death to defend as his own but which are, in reality, only his aberrations impinging against his analytical mind. Patients will go right on declaring that they know the auditor is dangerous, that he shouldn't ever have

started them in therapy, etc., and still keep working

well and efficiently. That's one of the reasons why the

Auditor's Code is so important: the patient is just as

eager to relieve himself of his engrams as could be

wished, but the engrams give the appearance of being a

long way from anxious to be relieved.

It will also be seen in the above example that the

auditor is not making any positive suggestion. If the

phrase is not engramic, the patient will very rapidly tell

him so in no uncertain terms and although it still may

be, the auditor has no great influence over the preclear

in reverie beyond helping him to attack engrams. If the preclear contradicted any of the above, it means that the engram containing the words suggested is not ready to be relieved and another paraphrase is in order.

Diagnosis, then, is something which takes care of itself on the aberration and psychosomatic plane. The auditor could have guessed—and kept it to himself—that a series of attempted abortions were coming up in the above example before he entered the area. He might have guessed that the indecisiveness of the patient was from his mother. The auditor, however, does not communicate his guesses. This would be suggestion and

might be seized upon by the patient. It is up to the
preclear to find out. The auditor, for instance, could not
have known where on the time track the preclear's
"coronary pain" was nor the nature of the injury.

Chasing up and down looking for a specific pain would
be just so much wasted time. All such things will
surrender in the course of therapy. The only interest in
them is whether or not the aberrations and illnesses go,
to return no more. At the end of therapy they will be
gone. At the beginning they are only complication.

Diagnosis of aberration and psychosomatic illness,
then, is not an essential part of Dianetic diagnosis.

What we are interested in is the mechanical operation of the mind. That is the sphere of diagnosis. What are the working mechanics of the analytical mind?

1. Perception: Sight, hearing, tactile and pain, etc.
2. Recall: Visio-color, tone-sonic,* tactile, etc.
3. Imagination: Visio-color, tone-sonic, tactile, etc.

These are the mechanical processes. Diagnosis deals primarily with these factors and with these factors can

* Visio means sight recall in Dianetics. Sonic means sound recall. Somatic means pain recall. A patient who can see, hear and feel pain stores them. "I," remembering, recalls them as visio, sonic and somatic. — LRH

L. RON HUBBARD

I

§ establish the length of time a case should take, how

I difficult the case will be, etc. And we need only a few of

I' these.

| This further simplifies into a code:

| 1. Perception (over or under optimum):

I a. Sight

|y b. Sound

| 2. Recall (under):

|: a. Sonic

t b. Visio

!&,

f 3. Imagination (over):

a. Sonic

b. Visio

In other words, when we examine a patient before

we make him a preclear (by starting him into therapy), we

are interested in three things only: too much or too little

perception, too little recall, too much imagination.

In perception, we mean how well or how poorly he

can hear, see and feel.

In recall, we want to know if he can recall by sonic

(hearing), visio (seeing) and somatic (feeling).

In imagination, we want to know if he "recalls"

sonics, visios or somatics too much.

Let us make this extremely clear: it is very simple, it is not complex, and it requires no great examination. But it is important and establishes the length of time in therapy.

There is nothing wrong with an active imagination so long as the person knows he is imagining. The kind of imagination we are interested in is that used for unknowing "dub-in"²⁰ and in that kind only. An active

20. dub-in: the manifestation of putting, unknowingly, percep-

tions which do not in actual fact exist, in the environment. (It is a

phrase taken from the motion picture industry, meaning to record

dialogue and various sounds and then integrate them into the film after it has been shot. This is done for scenes where the original recording is faulty, for scenes where it is simply more convenient to add dialogue and other sound later, and for films playing abroad which require new dialogue in the native language of the host country.)

266

DIAGNOSIS

imagination which the patient knows to be imagination is an extremely valuable asset to him. An imagination which substitutes itself for recall is very trying in therapy.

"Hysterical" blindness and deafness or extended

sight or hearing are useful in diagnosis. The first,

"hysterical" blindness, means the patient is afraid to

see; "hysterical" deafness means he is afraid to hear.

These will require considerable therapy. Likewise, ex-

tended sight and extended hearing, while not as bad as

blindness and deafness, are an index of how frightened

the patient really is and is often a straight index of the

prenatal content in terms of violence.

If the patient is afraid to see with his eyes or hear

with his ears in present time, be assured there is much

in his background to make him afraid, for these actual

perceptions do not "turn off" easily.

If the patient jumps at sounds and is startled by sights or is very disturbed by these things, his perceptions can be said to be extended, which means the reactive bank has a great deal in it labeled "death."

The recalls in which we are interested in diagnosis are those which are less than optimum only. When they are "overoptimum," they are actually imagination "dubbed in" for recall. Recall (under) and imagination (over) are actually, then, one group, but for simplicity and clarity we keep them apart.

If the patient cannot "hear" sounds or voices in past incidents he does not have sonic. If he does not "see" scenes of past experiences in motion-color pictures, he

does not have visio.

21. hysterical: (psychiatry) of or characteristic of hysteria, a

psychiatric condition variously characterized by emotional excit-

ability, excessive anxiety, sensory and motor disturbances, or the

unconscious simulation of organic disorders, such as blindness,

deafness, etc.

267

L. RON HUBBARD

If the patient hears voices which have not existed or

sees scenes which have not existed and yet supposes

that these voices really spoke and these scenes were

real, we have "overimagination." In Dianetics, imagi-

nary sound recall would be hypersonic, sight recall,

hypervisio (hyper = over).

Let us take specific examples of each one of these

three classes and demonstrate how they become funda-

mental in therapy and how their presence or absence

can make a case difficult.

A patient with a mild case of "hysterical" deafness

is one who has difficulty in hearing. The deafness can

be organic but, if organic, it will not vary from time to

time. This patient has something he is afraid to hear. He

plays the radio very loudly, makes people repeat contin-

ually and misses pieces of the conversation. Do not go

to an institution to find this degree of "hysterical"

deafness. Men and women are "hysterically" deaf

without any conscious knowledge of it. Their "hearing

just isn't so good." In Dianetics, this is being called

hypohearing (hypo = under).

The patient who is always losing something when it

lies in fair view before him, who misses signposts,

theater bills and people who are in plain sight, is

"hysterically" blind to some degree. He is afraid he

will see something. In Dianetics, this is being called,

since the word hysterical is a very inadequate and overly

dramatic one, hyposight.

Then there is the case of overperception. This is not

necessarily imagination, but it can go to the length of

seeing and hearing things which are not there at all,

which happens to be a common insanity. We are inter-

ested in a less dramatic grade in standard operation.

A girl, for instance, who sees something or thinks

she sees something but knows she doesn't and is very

startled, who jumps in fright when anyone silently

268

DIAGNOSIS

comes into a room, and can be so startled rather

habitually, is suffering from extended sight. She is

afraid she will encounter something. But instead of

being blind to it, she is too alive to it. This is hyper-

sight.

A person who is much alarmed by noises, by sounds

in general, by certain voices, who gets a headache or

gets angry when the people around are "noisy" or the

door slams or the dishes rattle, is a victim of extended

hearing. She hears sounds far louder than they actually

are. This is hyperhearing.

The actual quality of the seeing and hearing does

not need to be good. The actual organs of sight and

sound can be in poor condition. The only fact of

importance is the "nervousness" about reception.

This disposes of the two perceptions in which we are interested in Dianetics. As the auditor talks to people around him and gets their reactions to sights and sounds, he will find wide variety in quality of response.

Recall is the most directly important to therapy, for it is not a symptom, it is an actual tool of work. There are many ways to use recall. The Clear has vivid and accurate recall for every one of the senses. Few aberrations have. The auditor is not interested in other senses than sight and sound because the others will be cared for in the usual course of therapy. But if he has a patient who has no sonic, watch out. And if he has a patient with neither sonic nor visio, beware! This is the multi-

valent personality, the schizophrenic, the paranoid of
psychiatry with symptoms not acute enough to be so
classified in normal life. This does not mean-
emphatically does not mean—that people without sight
and sound recall are insane, but it does mean an
above-average case and it means a case which will take
some time. It does not mean the case is "incurable," for
nothing can be further from the truth: but such cases

269

L. RON HUBBARD

which are not present or bypass engrams which are
present and so on in a tangled hash.)

The optimurii preclear would be one who had average response to noises and sights, who had accurate sonic and visio and who could imagine and know that he was imagining, in color-visio and tone-sonic. This person, understand clearly, may have aberrations which make him climb every chimney in town, drink every drop in every bar every night (or try it anyway), beat his wife, drown his children and suppose himself to be a jub-jub bird.²⁶ In the psychosomatic line he may have arthritis, gallbladder trouble, dermatitis, migraine headaches and flat feet. Or he may have that much more horrible aberration—pride in being average and "adjusted." He is still a relatively easy case to clear.

In the case which has sonic and visio shut-off
without "dub-in," we are dealing with engrams which
have shut down some of the primary working mecha-
nisms of the mind. The auditor will have to slog
through hours and hours and hours of trying to contact
engrams when the patient cannot hear them or see
them. A case which merely has a shut-down sonic recall
still means that the auditor is going to do a lot more
work than on an average case. This case is very, very
far from impossible to resolve. That is not the idea
here, to frighten off any attempt on such a case. But this
case will only be resolved after a great deal of persis-

tent effort. Such a person may be apparently very
successful. He may be enormously intelligent. He may
have few or no psychosomatic ills. Yet he will prove to
have a crammed engram bank, any part of which may
come into restimulation at any time and swamp him.

Usually, however, this type of case is quite worried and

26. jub-jub bird: imaginary creature from the poem "Jabber-
wocky" by Lewis Carroll.

272

DIAGNOSIS

anxious about many things, and such worry and anxiety

may put a little more time on the worksheet.

In the case of the "dub-in" who doesn't know it,

where circuits are giving him back altered recall, we

have a case which may very likely prove to be very long

and require artful treatment. For there is a "lie fac-

tory" somewhere in that engram bank. This case may

be the soul of truthfulness in his everyday life. But

when he starts tackling his engrams, they have content

which makes him give out material which is not there.

Sharply and clearly, then, without further reserva-

tion or condition, this is Dianetic diagnosis: The aberr-

tion is the engram content; the psychosomatic illness is

the former injury. The perceptions of sight and sound,

underoptimum recall, overoptimum imagination regu-

late the length of the case.

If the auditor wants to be fancy, he can list the

general Tone Scale position of the individual mentally

and physically. The woman who is dull and apathetic is,

of course, around tone 0.5 in the zone 0 part of the

dynamic scale earlier in the book. If the man is angry

or hostile, the auditor can mark him down as a 1.5 or

somewhere generally in the zone 1 range of the survival

scale. These markings would apply to the probable

average tone of the aggregate engrams in the reactive

mind. This is interesting because it means that a zone 0

person is far more likely to be ill and is a slightly

harder case than a zone 1 person. And, as therapy raises

tone to zone 4, the 1.5 is closer to the goal.

It is difficult to estimate time in therapy. As men-

tioned before, it has several variables such as auditor

skill, restimulative elements in the patient's environ-

ment and sheer volume of engrams.

The auditor is advised, in his first case, to seek out

some member of the family or a friend who is as close

as possible to the optimum preclear, which is to say, a

person with visio and sonic recall and average percep-

tions. In clearing this one case he will learn at first

hand much of what can be expected in the engram

banks of any mind, and he will see clearly how en-

grams behave. If the auditor himself falls into one of the

harder brackets and if he means to work with somebody

in one of these brackets, that poses no great difficulty;

either case can be released in a hundredth the time of

any former mental healing technique and they can be

cleared, if any skill at all is used, in five hundred hours

of work per case. But if two cases are particularly

difficult, before they work on each other, each would be

wise to find and clear a nearly optimum preclear. That

way each will be a competent operator when the

rougher cases are approached.

Thus, diagnosis. The other perceptions, recalls and

imaginations are interesting but not vital in measuring

case time. IQ, unless it falls down into the feeble-

minded level, is no great factor. And even then the IQ

of any patient goes up like a skyrocket with clearing

and rises all the while during the work.

There are organic insanities. Iatrogenic psychoses

(caused by doctors) are equivocal²⁷ in Dianetics, for a

part of the machinery may have been wrecked. Never-

theless, with many organic psychoses a case can be

improved by Dianetics, even if an optimum cannot be

reached. And so all an auditor can do is try. Insanities

caused by missing parts of the nervous system have not

been extensively investigated by auditors at this time:

the reviving of corpses is not the end of Dianetics; the

bringing about an optimum mind in *he normal or

merely neurotic person has had the main emphasis.

Dianetics can be otherwise used, is being and will be.

But with so many potentially valuable people who can

27. equivocal: questionable; suspicious.

be made highly valuable to themselves and society,

emphasis has been placed on inorganic aberrations and

organic psychosomatic illnesses. Cases which have been

subjected to prefrontal lobotomy (which saws a section

out of the analytical mind), the topectomy (which re-

moves pieces of brain somewhat as an apple corer cores

apples), the transorbital leukotomy (which, while the

patient is being electrically shocked, thrusts an ordi-

nary dime-store²⁸ ice pick into each eye and reaches up

to rip the analyzer apart), and electric shock "therapy"

(which sears the brain with 110 volts), as well as insulin

shock²⁹ and other treatments, are considered by Dia-

netics to be equivocal. There are ordinary organic

insanities such as paresis,³⁰ but most of these, even so,

can be benefited by Dianetics.

28. dime-store: of or purchased at a dime store or five-and-ten-

cent store—a store that sells a wide variety of inexpensive

merchandise, originally with many articles priced at five or ten

cents.

29. insulin shock: a state of coma resulting from reduced blood

sugar when insulin (a substance which helps the body use sugar

and other carbohydrates) is present in excessive amounts. Insulin

shock is used by psychiatrists as one form of shock therapy in

"treating" mental illness.

30. paresis: a brain disease of syphilitic origin, characterized by

mental deterioration, speech disturbances and progressive mus-

cular weakness. See also syphilis in the glossary.

275

CHAPTER FIVE

Returning, the File Clerk1

and the Time Track

There is a method of "thinking" which man did not

know he had.

If you would like an illustration of this, ask a small

child if she would like to go sleigh-riding in memory.

She will try to remember the last time she rode her

sleigh. She will frown and pucker her brows perhaps.

Now tell her to go back to the last time she was

sleigh-riding. Coaxed, she will suddenly come forth

with a complete experience and, unless she is badly

aberrated, will be able to tell you about the snow

getting down her collar and so forth. She is right back

there sleigh-riding, swimming or whatever you choose.

Man, when and if he thought about this at all, must

have mistaken it for imagination. But it is not imagina-

tion. Anyone, unless he is very severely aberrated in-

deed, can be "sent back," wide-awake, to an experience

of the past. In initial tests one should use experiences not

long gone and experiences which are pleasant.

This is not memory in the way one "remembers

something." It is returning. Remembering is a far more

complicated process than returning. Just why people go

around seeking to remember some specific or complex

datum when they can return is something of a mystery

when one considers lost articles, things read, conversa-

tions had and so forth. Remembering, of course, has a

1. file clerk: Dianetic auditor's slang for the mechanism of the

mind which acts as a data monitor. Auditors can get instant or

"flash" answers direct from the file clerk to aid in contacting

incidents. Technically the name of the file clerk might be "bank

monitor unit" but that phrase is too unwieldy.

RETURNING, THE FILE CLERK AND THE TIME TRACK

very definite role and is an automatic process which

provides "I" with conclusions and data in a never-

ending stream. But when one wishes a very precise,

specific bit of information or when one seeks a past

pleasure to contemplate it, returning is more to the point.

The hypnotist, with much mumbo jumbo² and hand

passes, et al.,³ has something which he calls "regres-

sion." This is a very complicated business which re-

quires being hypnotized. True enough, regression has

research value since, by hypnosis, it bypasses occlu-

sions which are not otherwise easy to get around. And

regression served Dianetics well when the author was

checking his data on memory banks. But it evidently

had occurred to none that regression is an artificial use

of a natural process.

Undoubtedly some people use returning for some of

their mental work, and these people probably think that

"everybody else" does likewise, which is far from true.

But even those people who return naturally seldom

understand that this is a distinct process, much different

from remembering.

People also relive without being hypnotized or

drugged; this is a rarer thing. If a person sits in contem-

plation of some past glory for a while he will begin to

relive instead of simply return.

In Dianetics, we have had much to do with "spectrums." The spectrum of gradations is a much better mechanism for philosophy than Aristotle's pendulum which swung from one extreme to the other. We have the spectrum of the dynamics. We call them four dynamics, through which the command Survive! is expressed, and the four are actually a great number of

2. mumbo jumbo: senseless or pretentious language, usually designed to obscure an issue, confuse a listener or the like.

3. et al.: and others.

gradations from the cells of "I," through "I," through
family and children, through club and city and state,
through nation and race and hemisphere and finally all
mankind. That is a spectrum: gradations of something
which are really the same thing but which have wider
and wider scope or range.

In much the same way as the spectrum of Survive!
we have a spectrum of memory at work. First there is
memory in its most precise, present-time sense. Then
there is memory of the past. Then there is more
memory of the past. And so we move into a part of the

spectrum which has been overlooked: part of the "I"

returns into the past, then a greater part of "I" returns

into the past (at which point we have return) and finally,

at the extreme, all of "I" is back in the past. First there

is remembering. This is the furthest from exact data

(except in a Clear). Then there is returning, in which

part of the "I" is actually in the past and records

appear to be perceptions he is actually experiencing.

Then there is reliving, where a man is so thoroughly in

the past for the moment that, while he was recalling an

infant experience, if startled he would react just as he

would have when a baby.

There is a lot of aberrated notion in this present

society about the evils of living in the past. These stem

partially from an unwillingness of aberrated people to

face and understand yesterday.

One of the prime sources of "bad memory" is

Mother. Often enough, Mother has been sufficiently

panic-stricken at the thought of Junior's recalling just

what she did to Junior that a mankind-wide aberration

seems to have sprung up. The standard attempted abortion

case nearly always has an infancy and childhood full

of Mama assuring him that he cannot remember any-

thing when he was a baby. She doesn't want him to

recall how handy she was, if unsuccessful, in her efforts

RETURNING, THE FILE CLERK AND THE TIME TRACK

with various instruments. Possibly prenatal memory

itself would be just ordinary memory and in full recall

to the whole race if this guilty conscience in Mother had

not been rolling along lo! these millennia. In the nor-

mal course of work, the auditor will have his hands full

of Mama screaming objections about her grown son's

or daughter's entering into therapy because of what they

might find out: Mama has been known, by auditors, to

go into a complete nervous collapse at the thought of

her child's recalling prenatal incidents. Not all of this,

by the way, is based on attempted abortion. Mama often

has had a couple of more men than Papa that Papa never knew about; and Mama would very often rather condemn her child to illness or insanity or merely unhappiness than let a child pursue the course of the preclear even though Mother avowedly has no recollection whatever of anything bad ever happening to the child. Under therapy herself, she usually volunteers the truth. Here is the source of why good memory is discouraged in a society and infant and prenatal memory overlooked, to say nothing of the ability to return and relive.

The index system of the standard bank is a wonderful thing to behold. Everything is there, filed by subject,

filed by time and filed by conclusions. All perceptions are present.

With the time-file system we have what is called in Dianetics a time track. Going back along this track with part of "I" is returning. It is definitely present for both conscious and "unconscious" data. The time track is of vast and interesting concern to the auditor.

The mind is a well-built computer and it has various services. Auditors, backing off from Latin and complexity, call the source of one of these services the file clerk.* This is not a very dignified name and it is

* Technically, the name of the file clerk might be "bank monitor units" but the phrase is too unwieldy. —LRH

L. RON HUBBARD

certainly anthropomorphic. There is no small man or woman in there with a green eyeshade. But the action which takes place is a close approximation to what would happen if such an entity did dwell within the mind.

The file clerk is the bank monitor. "He" monitors for both the reactive engram bank and the standard banks. When he is asked for a datum by the auditor or "I," he will hand out a datum to the auditor via "I." He is a trifle moronic when he handles the reactive engram

bank, a contagion from the reactive mind, and he will

at times hand out puns and crazy dreams when he

should be delivering serious data.

The file clerk, if the auditor asks the preclear for the

last time he saw a movie, will hand out the movie, the

date it was seen, the age and physical being of the

person, all perceptics, the plot of the movie, the

weather—in short, he hands out everything that was

present and connected with the movie.

In ordinary living the file clerk feeds memory to "I"

at a rapid rate. A good memory gets its data in split

seconds. If the file clerk has to shove the memory

around various reactive occlusions, it may take minutes

or days for the data to arrive.

If we had a big computing machine of the most modern design, it would have a "memory bank" of punched cards or some such thing and it would have to have a selector and feeder device to thrust out the data the machine wants. The brain has one of these—it could not operate without it. This is the bank monitor—the file clerk.

Keep in mind these two parts of the mind: the time track and the/j'e clerk and keep in memory this mechanism of returning. These are the three things we use, with the reactive and standard banks, in the Dianetic

reverie.

280

RETURNING, THE FILE CLERK AND THE TIME TRACK

The file clerk is a very obliging fellow. If he has been having trouble getting to the "I" around the reactive occlusions and circuits in general, he is particularly obliging. He cooperates with the auditor.

The monitor system could be considered on the basis of attention units, where a man could be supposed to have a thousand. Thus a thousand possible attention units would be available to a dear's "I." In the aberree, probably fifty are available to "I," five or six

hundred absorbed in the reactive engrams, and the remainder variously used besides composing this mechanism we call the bank monitor, the file clerk.

It seems as if the file clerk in an aberree would rather work with the auditor than with the aberree. That may appear an astonishing fact, but it is a scientific fact. The file clerk works best, then, when he is selecting data out of a preclear's banks to present to the auditor. This is an aspect of the law of affinity. "It's" file clerk and the auditor are a team, and they work very often in close harmony without enough consent from the preclear's analyzer to notice.

The return is most easily effected, in the aberree, by

the auditor's addressing the file clerk, not the patient.

This can actually be done with the patient wide-awake.

The auditor asks him for information, tells him to go

back to it. "I" is suddenly in possession of the whole

file. Something inside the mind, then, works in close

harmony with the auditor and works better for the

auditor than it does for the person in whose mind it is.

That is the file clerk.

The object of the auditor is to take what the file

clerk hands forth and to keep the file clerk from getting

swamped by reactive data. Once the data has been given

out by the file clerk, it is the business of the auditor to

see that the preclear goes over it enough times to take

the charge out of it. The mechanism of doing this is

281

L. RON HUBBARD

extremely simple. In order to help matters and keep the

preclear from being distracted, the auditor goes through

a routine with every session which disposes the patient

to let the file clerk work.

The patient sits in a comfortable chair with arms, or

lies on a couch in a quiet room where perceptic distrac-

tions are minimal. The auditor tells him to look at the

ceiling. The auditor says: "When I count from one to

seven your eyes will close." The auditor then counts

from one to seven and keeps counting quietly and

pleasantly until the patient closes his eyes. A tremble of

the lashes will be noticed in optimum reverie.

This is the entire routine. Consider it more a signal

that proceedings are to begin and a means of con-

centrating the patient on his own concerns and the

auditor than anything else. This is not hypnotism. It is

vastly different. In the first place, the patient knows

everything which is going on around him. He is not

"asleep," and can bring himself out of it any time he

likes. He is free to move about, but, because it distracts

the patient, the auditor does not usually permit him to

smoke.

The auditor makes very sure that the patient is not hypnotized by telling him, before he begins to count, "You will know everything which goes on. You will be able to remember everything that happens. You can exercise your own control. If you do not like what is happening, you can instantly pull out of it. Now, one, two, three, four," etc.

To make doubly sure, for we want no hypnotism, even by accident, the auditor installs a canceller. This is an extremely important step and should not be omitted even when you may be entirely certain that he is in no way influenced by your words. The auditor may inadvertently

use restimulative language which will key in an engram:

he may, when he is especially new in Dianetics, use such

282

RETURNING, THE FILE CLERK AND THE TIME TRACK

a thing as a holder⁴ or a denier,⁵ telling the preclear to

"stay there," when he is returned on the track or telling

him, worst of all things, to "forget it," one of a class of

phrases of the forgetter mechanism which is most severe

in its aberrative effect, denying the data entirely to the

analyzer. To prevent such things from happening, the

canceller is vital. It is a contract with the patient that

whatever the auditor says will not become literally inter-

preted by the patient or used by him in any way. It is

installed immediately after the condition of reverie is

established. A canceller is worded more or less as follows:

"In the future, when I utter the word cancelled, everything

which I have said to you while you are in a therapy session

will be cancelled and will have no force with you. Any

suggestion I have made to you will be without force when

I say the word cancelled. Do you understand?"

The word cancelled is then said to the patient im-

mediately before he is permitted to open his eyes at the

end of the session. It is not further amplified. The

single word is used.

The canceller is vital. It prevents accidental positive suggestion. The patient may be suggestible or even in a permanent, light hypnotic trance (many people go through life in such a trance). An engram is actually a hypnotic suggestion. It could be said that the purpose of therapy is to awaken a person in every period of his life when he has been forced into "unconsciousness." Dianetics wakes people up. It is not hypnotism, which puts people to

4. holder: any engram command which makes an individual remain in an engram knowingly or unknowingly. These include such things as "Stay here," "Sit right there and think about it," "Come back and sit down," "I can't go," "I mustn't leave," etc.

5. denier: a species of command which, literally translated, means that the engram doesn't exist. "I'm not here," "This is getting nowhere," "I must not talk about it," "I can't remember," etc. A command which makes the preclear feel there is no incident present.

283

L. RON HUBBARD

sleep. Dianetic therapy wakes them up. Hypnotism puts them to sleep. Can you ask for a wider difference in polarity?6 Dianetic therapy removes engrams. Hypnotism installs engrams. Further, Dianetics is a science, an organized body of knowledge—hypnotism is a tool

and an art and is such a wild variable that man has

suspected it as a dangerous thing for centuries and

centuries, use it though he did.*

The auditor will inevitably get cases into his hands

which will drop into a hypnotic sleep for all he can do

to prevent it. Such cases have engrams which make

them do this, just as others have engrams which make

them stay awake. The auditor then mentions neither

"sleep" nor "wake." He takes his cases wherever they

drop into their own inversion⁷ level and works them

from there. Patients will plead to be drugged or put into

a trance. Let them plead! The reverie has a Clear at its

end—drugs and hypnotism have dependency on the

auditor and many other undesirable aspects. A case

takes longer in amnesia trance than in reverie. The

gains in reverie are certain. The patient gets more and

more well. When amnesia trance or hypnotism are used

instead of reverie, no matter how easily the data seems

to come up, the usual run of cases so treated experience

little relief until the case is nearly completed, when the

patient so long uncomfortable gets suddenly well. Hyp-

notism carries with it transference,⁸ enormous operator

* An additional difference is that a patient can be returned

with no counting whatever. —LRH

6. polarity: (figurative) the possession of two opposite or con-

trusted principles or tendencies.

7. inversion: acute awareness of self.

8. transference: (psychoanalysis) the process in and by which a

person's feelings, thoughts and wishes shift from one person to

another, especially this process in psychoanalysis with the ana-

lyst made the object of the shift.

284

RETURNING, THE FILE CLERK AND THE TIME TRACK

responsibility and other impedimenta⁹ with which Dia-

netics, in long practice, has done without. Hypnotism

was used for research, then abandoned.

Hence, install the canceller every time. Never ne-

glect to install it in every session. The patient may be

trancing, which is something we don't want, but some-

thing which we cannot always avoid, and which we

cannot always detect. Just install the canceller at the

beginning of the session, then after you bring the

patient to present time, use the canceller word.

This is a rehearsal, then, of the entire routine:

Auditor: Look at the ceiling. When I count from one to

seven your eyes will close. You will remain aware of

everything which goes on. You will be able to remem-

ber everything that happens here. You can pull yourself

out of anything which you get into if you don't like it.

All right (slowly, soothingly): One, two, three, four,

five, six, seven.* One, two, three, four, five, six,
seven. One, two, three (patient's eyes close and eyelids
flicker), four, five, six, seven. (Auditor pauses; installs
canceller.) All right, let us go back to your fifth
birthday . . . (work continues until the auditor has
worked the patient enough for the period) . . . Come to
present time. Are you in present time? (Yes.) (Use
canceller word.) When I count from five to one and
snap my fingers you will feel alert. Five, four, three,
two, one. (Snap!)

As it can be seen in this example, when work for the
day is concluded, the preclear, who may have been
returned into his past for two hours, must be brought

back to present time and startled with a finger snap to

* If the patient objects to numbers, use letters of the alphabet.

He may have been counted down in some past surgical

operation so that numbers make him nervous. —LRH

9. impedimenta: things which impede or encumber progress;

baggage.

285

L. RON HUBBARD

restore his awareness of his age and condition. Some-

times he is unable easily to come back to present, for

which there is quick remedy which we will cover later,

so the auditor must always assure himself that the

patient feels he actually is in present time.

This is the reverie. This is all one needs to know

about its actual mechanics. Experience will show him a

great deal. But these are the basic processes:

1. Assure patient he will know everything that

happens.

2. Count until he closes his eyes.

3. Install canceller.

4. Return him to a period in the past.

5. Work with file clerk to get data.

6. Reduce all engrams contacted so that no charge

remains.

7. Bring patient to present time.

8. Be sure he is in present time.

9. Give him canceller word.

10. Restore full awareness of his surroundings.

The patient's time track, in the lowest level of attention units, is always in excellent condition. It can be depended upon to reach any date and hour of his life and all the data in it. In the higher levels of awareness, this time track may appear to be in very foul condition.

The reactive mind engram circuits stand between these lower levels—right up against the banks—and the higher levels which contain "I." The lower levels contain only

a shadow of the force of "I" and appear to be another

"I" in a case of multivalent personality.

You can draw this on a piece of scratch paper and it

would be helpful if you would do so. Draw a tall

rectangle (the standard banks) to the left of the page.

Draw half a dozen circles up against the right side of

this rectangle for a representation of the file clerk—the

bank monitor units. Now draw, about the center of the

286

RETURNING, THE FILE CLERK AND THE TIME TRACK

sheet, a large rectangle. Black it in. This is the area of

the reactive engram circuits. It is not the reactive bank.

It is the circuit pattern from the reactive engram bank,

which borrows from the analyzer to make demons,

vocal thinking, etc. Now, to the right of the page, draw

a white rectangle. This is the portion of the analyzer

which is "consciousness" and "I."

The whole task of therapy is to get that black

rectangle, the reactive engram bank circuits, deleted so

that from the standard bank to the left of the sheet to

the analyzer portion to the right of the sheet is all

analyzer. It can't be done with a knife as some people

have supposed, evaluating the situation from their own

engrams, for that black area you have drawn is all

analyzer rendered useless by engrams, and when thera-

py is done, it will all be available for thinking. This

increases IQ to an enormous extent.

Now suppose that the bottom of your picture is

conception and the top is present time. The vertical

route up and down, then, is the time track. In this graph

it can be supposed that present time just keeps adding

up higher and higher, further and further from concep-

tion in the form of new construction (an analogy). For

"I" to get data from the standard banks to the left, "I"

would have to work through this black rectangle, the

reactive mind circuits. To a large extent "I" manages to

get data from around this black area. But to a much

larger extent it doesn't.

Now suppose that we draw a vertical line at the right of the picture. This line is "awareness." Consider that it can be moved, still vertical, to the left. As the line passes toward the left, we get deeper and deeper "trance." As the line moves into the reactive mind area, it becomes hypnotic trance. Now, as it moves even further left and into the circles we are calling "file clerk," it becomes the amnesia trance of hypnotism. Thus, anywhere we place

287

L. RON HUBBARD

this line we establish a "depth of trance." We want to

work over to the right of the reactive bank, nearest the
awake level, so that we can keep "I" in contact with his
surroundings and keep unwanted data from coming
through which will make the patient chronically uncom-
fortable. If the patient instantly slides from the right all
the way to the left so that the attention units, the circles, of
the file clerk itself are present, and does so the instant you
count from one to seven, he is a hypnotic subject. He may
not be aware, when he wakens, of what has taken place,
for "I" was out of contact. Work him there, for he will
have full sonic, etc., but be very, very careful to work
very early in his prenatal area. He might not be able to
recall what has taken place, and a late engram (which, if

tapped, will not reduce) may have its full force opened up

on "I" when the patient regains possession of himself.

Further, you might give him a positive suggestion by

accident. Work by preference with trance depth well to the

right of the reactive bank.

The characteristics of the units we label "file clerk"

are similar in desires to those of the basic individual

when he is cleared. Thus, in any patient, the basic

personality can be reached, for here is a sample of it.

But the auditor should be content to know it is there; as

the clearing goes forward, he will see more and more of

it. The individual is himself, his personality does not

alter, it simply becomes what he wanted it to be all the

time at his optimum moments.

The units up against the standard banks can be

considered the file clerk. But the file clerk has more

than just the standard bank which he can tap. He also

has the entire engram bank from which he can pull

forth data.

The time track may have several aspects to the

preclear. There is actually no track there except time

and time is invisible, but the awareness, the "I," can

return along it. The track is always there, stretched out.

But aberrated ideas of it continually occur and recur in

the same patient. It may get all bunched up. It may be

very long. It may be that he cannot get on it at all

(here's the schizophrenic—he is off his time track). But

it is there. It is the filing system by time and "I" can be

returned back along time by the simple request that he

do so. If he does not, he is stuck in the present or an

engram, which is easy to resolve. And so forth.

Now let us consider the engram bank. It was drawn

as a black rectangle in the above sketch. Let us alter

that a trifle and draw all this again, with the rectangles

represented as triangles with all their points downwards

and together but all else as before—the standard banks,

the analyzer (consciousness) and "I." This is a working

model now, an analogy, of what the auditor is trying to

contact. It is as if the engram bank itself existed in that

black triangle. Actually it doesn't, only its circuits, but

all we need to visualize is that it does. Therefore, there

is a thin point at the bottom. "I" and the file clerk can

get together here. This is the bottom of the time track.

This is immediately after conception. A little higher

up, let's say two and one-half months after conception,

it is a little harder for "I" and the file clerk to achieve

contact. There is more reactive circuit between them.

At seven months after conception, it is more difficult.

And at twenty years of age, it has approached impossibility in most cases without Dianetic technique.

Hence, the auditor will find it expedient to work in the prenatal area and as early in that as possible. If he can clear the time from conception to birth, including birth, his task is nine-tenths complete. To clear the entire reactive bank is his goal.

The reactive bank is like a pyramid which is fairly well armored everywhere but just under the point, and which becomes unarmored when the point is contacted.

This is taking the reactive bank in an exposed sector.

The effort is to get into the basic area, contact early

engrams, erase the basic-basic engram by recountings

and then progress upwards, erasing engrams. These

engrams apparently vanish. Actually, it takes a hard

search to discover them once they are really gone. They

exist as memory in the standard bank, but that memory

is so unimportant, having been integrated now as experi-

ence, that it cannot aberrate. Nothing in the standard

bank can aberrate. Only the contents of the reactive

bank can aberrate—moments of "unconsciousness" and

what was recorded within them—and locks. The audi-

tor, in his work, considers an engram erased when it vanishes, when the preclear can no longer contact any part of it, but only after the preclear has thoroughly reexperienced it, complete with somatics.*

This inverted pyramid, in its upper reaches, is effect. In the lower reaches, it is the primary cause of aberration. The cement that holds this inverted pyramid together is physical pain and painful emotion. All the physical pain ever recorded by the organism and all the painful emotion are parts of this inverted pyramid.

The auditor first discharges the painful emotion from later life as it was displayed in "conscious moments." He runs these periods as true engrams until the

preclear is no longer affected by them. Then he tries to

contact basic-basic, that first engram. He reduces all

engrams he contacts en route to that primary goal. In

* You can contact the file clerk by drugs or hypnotism and

gather and reduce engrams. But this is an oversimplified

solution. What we are doing in Dianetic therapy is more than

this—we are trying to get "I" in contact with the file clerk,

not just work the file clerk alone. Hypnoanalysis and narco-

synthesis failed because they knew nothing of the engram

bank and because they tried, without knowing what it was, to

work only the file clerk. The desire of the patient to be worked

in amnesia trance or any drugged state is an effort to spare

"I" and throw the burden on the file clerk. —LRH

RETURNING, THE FILE CLERK AND THE TIME TRACK

every session he tries to reach basic-basic until he is

certain he has it.

Basic-basic is the bottom point. Once it has been

gained, an erasure is begun during which engram after

engram is "reexperienced" with all somatics until it is

gone. Before basic-basic had been reached, the auditor

may have had to run engrams twenty times before they

reduced. Later he may have found they reduced in five

runs. Then he contacts and erases basic-basic. If the pa-

tient has sonic by this time—or if he has had it all

along—the engrams start erasing with one or two re-

countings.

The file clerk is smart. The auditor who does not

credit the ability of these attention units will involve the

case beyond necessity and will lengthen it. The file

clerk may hand things out by phrases, by somatics, by

time. Whatever he hands out ordinarily will reduce on

recountings. By working with, not trying to command

the file clerk, the auditor will find the case steadily

improving until it is released or fully cleared. The only

time the auditor disregards this is when he uses the

repeater system, which will be described.

We have "I" in a reverie; we return him to a period

in his life along his time track; the file clerk gives

incidents forth which the preclear reexperiences; the

auditor makes the preclear recount the engram until it is

relieved or has "vanished"* (all engrams will even-

tually "vanish" after basic-basic is erased); anything

new the file clerk offers, even during the recounting, is

addressed by the auditor to make the preclear reexperi-

ence it. That is the total sum of activity in Dianetics.

There are, as accessories, the repeater technique and a

* The words vanished or erased, when applied to an engram

which has been treated, mean that the engram has disap-

peared from the engram bank. It cannot be found afterwards

except by search of the standard memory. — LRH

291

L. RON HUBBARD

few shortcuts. This is therapy. Amplification is needed,

of course, and will be found in the ensuing pages to

give the auditor all the data he needs. But this is the

entire outline of Dianetic therapy.

292

CHAPTER Six

The Laws of Returning

The engram has the aspect of—and is not—a live

entity which protects itself in various ways. Any and all

phrases in it can be considered commands. These commands react on the analytical mind in such a way as to cause the analytical mind to behave erratically.

Dianetic therapy is parallel to the methods of thought and thinking itself. Anything which reacts against Dianetics and the auditor can uniformly and without exception be found to react in just that way on the patient's analytical mind. Conversely, the patient's problems of thinking in his usual activities are the auditor's problems in therapy.

The bulk of these "commands" the engrams contain are not computable in any way, since they are contradic-

tory or demand unreasonable acts. It is the impossibility of computing them and reconciling them to thought and existence which makes the patient aberrated.

Let us take an engram which comes from one of Mother's bowel movements. She is straining, which causes compression, which brings about "unconsciousness" in the unborn child. Then, if she habitually talks to herself (a monologist), as an enormous number of aberrated women do, she may say, "Oh, this is hell. I am all jammed up inside. I feel so stuffy I can't think. This is too terrible to be borne."

This may be in the basic area. The dream mechanism of the mind (which thinks in puns mostly, symbol-

ogists to the contrary) may bring forth a dream about

hellfire as the engram is approached. The preclear may

293

L. RON HUBBARD

be sure that he is going to descend into fire if he goes

on his time track toward this engram. Further, he may

think his time track is all jammed up. This will mean,

perhaps, that the incidents are all in one place on it. So

much for "This is hell," and "all jammed up inside."

Now let us take a look at what happens with "I'm so

stuffy I can't think." The preclear snuffles because he

thinks this means a cold in his nose. And as for "This is

too terrible to be borne," he is filled with an emotion of

terror at the thought of touching the engram, for this

command says it is too painful to bear. Additionally,

engrams being literal in their action, he may think that

he was too terrible to be born.

The emotional reaction to hell, from some other place

on the track—as contained in some other engram—may

say that "going to hell" is loud sobbing. Hence, he does

not "want" to recount this engram. Further, he is

terrified of it because it is "too terrible to be borne."

That Mother was only discussing with her ambivalent

self the necessity of laxatives is! never entered into the

computation. For the reactive mind does not reason, it

thinks in identities, seeking to command the analytical

mind.

There is only as much data as is in the engram and

the analytical reaction to this unthinking thing is utterly

literal.

Let us look at another. This is a coitus experience. It

has, as its somatic, varying pressure. It is not painful —

and by the way, no matter how painful these engrams

may be in present time when restimulated, no matter

how forceful, when they are actually contacted, their

reexperienced pain is very mild, no matter what it was

when received. So this is a shaking up of the unborn

child, that is all. But it says, "Oh, darling, I'm afraid
you'll come in me. I'll just die if you come in me. Oh,
please, don't come in me!"

294

THE LAWS OF RETURNING

What does the analytical mind do with this? Does it
think about coitus? Does it worry about pregnancy? No,
emphatically not. The engram that would make one
think about coitus would say, "Think about coitus!"
and the engram that contained a worry about pregnancy
would say, "I am worried about pregnancy." The pain
is not severe in this coitus experience but it specifically

states that the engram is not to be entered: "Do not come in me!" He would die if he did, wouldn't he? It says so right there. And the patient finds himself wandering around the track until the auditor uses repeater technique (as will be covered).

How about another type of engram? Let us suppose that our poor patient has been unlucky enough to get a Junior tagged on him. Let us suppose his name is Ralph and his father's name is Ralph. (Be careful of these Junior cases, they are unusually complex sometimes.)

Mother (see the Kinsey¹ report, if you've any doubts) is having a quiet affair on the side with Jim. This coitus somatic is no more painful than being gently sat upon,

but the patient has a terrible time with it. Mother: "Oh,
honey, you are so wonderful. I wish Ralph were more
like you but he isn't. He just doesn't seem to be able to
excite a girl at all." Lover: "Oh, Ralph isn't so bad. I
like him." Mother: "You don't know his pride. If Ralph
found out about this, it would kill him. He would just
die, I know." Lover: "Don't worry, Ralph'll never
hear."

This little gem of an engram is more common than

1. Kinsey: Alfred Charles Kinsey (1894-1956), American scien-
tist who investigated the sexual behavior of men and women. In
1947 and 1948, he published books on his findings—*Sexual
Behavior in the Human Male* and *Sexual Behavior in the Human*

Female—popularly known as the Kinsey Reports, which shattered existing conceptions of the nature and extent of American sexual practices.

295

L. RON HUBBARD

one would suppose before he begins to get an embryo-eye view of Mother. This won't compute in the analyzer as data. Therefore it is a worry. (A worry is contradictory engram commands which cannot be computed.)

Ralph, Junior, finds that he is very shy sexually. That is the aberrative pattern. Approaching it in therapy, we

find we have a sympathy computation with the lover.

After all, he said Ralph wasn't so bad, that he liked

Ralph. Well, the only Ralph is, of course, to the

reactive mind, Junior. This keeps our patient from

approaching this engram because he thinks he will lose

a friend if he touches it. Further, on the aberrative side,

Junior has always worried about people's pride. As we

contact this in therapy, he shies violently from it. After

all, if he found out about it it would "kill him dead

right where he lies." And there is another thing here, a

sonic shut-off. It says right there that Ralph will never

hear. This is survival stuff. That is what the cells

believe. Therefore Ralph never hears in recall. There

will be more sonic shut-offs. Mother is promiscuous2

and that generally means blockage on the second dy-

namic. Blockage on the second dynamic often means

she dislikes children. In short, this would be an

attempted-abortion case which stabbed Junior full of

enough holes to supply a cheese factory for some time.

Junior, now a man, may have extended hearing because

he is frightened in general of "life." But his sonic

recall is zero. This engram, then, would have to be

sorted out through the demon circuits as "impressions"

which come to the mind. The auditor, taking what the

patient says about this, may very soon guess its content

and explode it by repeater technique.

Now take the case of the mother who, a soul of

propriety (if a little on the whiny side), discovers she is

2. promiscuous: having sexual relations with many people.

296

THE LAWS OF RETURNING

pregnant and goes to the doctor. Mother: "I think I'm

pregnant. I'm afraid I am." Doctor punches her around

for a while, knocking the unborn child, who is our

preclear thirty years later, into an "unconscious" state.

Doctor: "I don't think so." Mother: "I'm really afraid I

am. I'm sure I'm caught. I just know it." Doctor (more

punching): "Well, it's hard to tell this early."

It says right there that this man patient of ours is

pregnant. If we look, we'll see he has a paunch. That's

good survival, that is. And in therapy we find he is

afraid he exists: "I am afraid I am." And suddenly he

isn't moving on the time track. Why? He's caught. That

doesn't mean he's pregnant, that means he is caught.

Further, he won't be able to recount it. Why? Because

it is "hard to tell this early." Consequently, he doesn't

speak about it. We free him on the track with repeater

technique.

Oh, this language of ours which says everything it

doesn't mean! Put into the hands of the moronic reactive mind, what havoc it wreaks!3 Literal interpretation of everything! Part of the aberrative pattern of the person who had the above engram was great cautiousness about advancing any opinion. After all, it was hard to tell, this early.

Now let us take an engram from a girl patient whose father was badly aberrated. He strikes Mother because he is afraid Mother is pregnant and Father is blocked on dynamics one, two, three and four. Father: "Get out! Get out! I know you haven't been true to me! You were no virgin when I married you. I should have killed you long ago! Now you're pregnant. Get out!"

The girl, some five weeks after conception, is

knocked "unconscious" by the blow to Mother's abdo-

men. She has a severe engram here because it has

3. wreaks: inflicts; causes.

297

L. RON HUBBARD

painful emotional value which she will never be able to

dramatize satisfactorily. The aberrative pattern here

demonstrates itself in hysterics whenever a man might

accuse her of not being true. She was a virgin when she

was married twenty-one years after this engram was

received, but she was sure she was not. She has had a

"childhood delusion" that her father was likely to kill

her. And she is always afraid of being pregnant because

it says now she is pregnant, which means always, since

time is a march of "nows." In therapy, we try to get

near this engram. We return the patient to basic area

and suddenly find her talking about something which

happened when she was five years of age. We return her

again and now she is talking about something which

happened when she was ten years of age. The auditor,

observing any such reaction as this, knows he is han-

dling a bouncer.⁴ It says, "Get out!" and the patient

gets out. The auditor recognizes what is wrong, uses

repeater technique and reduces or erases the engram.

Always and invariably, the analytical mind reacts to these engrams as though commanded. It performs on the track as these engrams state. And it computes about the case or about life as these engrams dictate. Healthy things to have around, engrams! Real, good survival!

Survival good enough to lay any man in his grave.

The auditor is not much worried by the phrases which assist therapy. An engram received from Father beating Mother which says: "Take that! Take it, I tell you. You've got to take it!" means that our patient has possibly had tendencies as a kleptomaniac.⁵ (Such

things are the whole source of the impulses of a thief,

4. bouncer: an engramic command (such as "Can't stay here" or

"Get out!") which sends the preclear up the track toward present

time.

5. kleptomaniac: a person suffering from an uncontrollable

tendency to steal things, with no desire to use or profit by them.

298

THE LAWS OF RETURNING

the test being that when an auditor erases all such

engrams in a patient, the patient no longer steals.) The

auditor will find it eagerly recounted because its content

offers it to the analytical mind.

The whole species of engrams which say, "Come back here! Now stay here!" as fathers are so fond of saying, accounts for a snap back to an engram when therapy is entered. The patient goes straight back to it the moment it is exposed. When recounted the command is no longer effective. But while that engram existed, unentered, it was fully capable of sending people to an institution to lie in a fetal position. Anyone left in institutions who has not been given shocks or prefrontal lobotomy and who suffers from this type of insanity can be released from such an engram and restored to present time simply by use of repeater

technique. It sometimes takes only half an hour.

Traveling on the track, then, and wandering through the computations the analyzer is compelled by these engrams to attempt is something like playing a child's game which has a number of squares, along which one is supposed to move a "man." A game could actually be composed on the basis of this time track and engram commands. It would be similar to Parcheesi.⁶ Move so many squares, land on one which says, "Get out!" which means one would go back to present time or toward it. Move so many squares and then lose a move because this square on which we now land says, "Stay here!" and the "man" would stay until the auditor let

him out by technique (but because this is struck by
therapy, it would have no power to hold long). Then
move so many squares to one which said, "Go to
sleep," at which the "man" would have to go to sleep.

6. Parcheesi: a trademark for a board game in which the moves
of pieces on a board are determined by the throwing of dice.

299

L. RON HUBBARD

Move so many squares until one was hit which said,
"Nobody must find out," and so there would be no
square. Move so many until one was reached which

said, "I'm afraid," at which the "man" would be
afraid. Move again to a square which said, "I must go
away," so the "man" would go away. Move once more
to a square which says, "I'm not here," and the square
would be missing. And so forth and so forth.

The classes of commands which particularly trouble
the auditor are only a few. Because the mind actually
does some part of its thinking, especially when remem-
bering, by return, even when the individual is not
returning, all these commands also impede the thought
processes of the mind. In therapy they are particularly
irksome and are the constant target of attention of the
auditor.

First is the patient-ejector species of command.

These are colloquially called bouncers. They include

such things as "Get out!" "Don't ever come back,"

"I've got to stay away," etc., etc., including any combi-

nation of words which literally mean ejection.

Second is the patient-holder species of command.

These include such things as "Stay here," "Sit right

there and think about it," "Come back and sit down,"

"I can't go," "I mustn't leave," etc.

Third is the engram-denyer species of command

which, literally translated, means that the engram

doesn't exist: "I'm not here," "This is getting no-

where," "I must not talk about it," "I can't remem-

ber," etc.

Fourth is the engram-grouper species of command

which, literally translated, means that all incidents are

in one place on the time track: "I'm jammed up,"

"Everything happens at once," "Everything comes in

on me at once," "I'll get even with you," etc.

300

THE LAWS OF RETURNING

Fifth is the patient-misdirector which sends the pre-

clear in the wrong direction, makes him go earlier when

he should be going later, go later when he should go

earlier, etc. "You can't go back at this point," "You're

turned around," etc.

The bouncer sends the preclear soaring back toward

present time. The holder keeps him right where he is.

The denyer makes him feel that there is no incident

present. The fourth, the grouper, foreshortens his time

track so that there is no time track. The misdirector

reverses the necessary direction of travel.

Contacting any engram causes the preclear to react

"analytically." Just as in the case of an engram being

restimulated, the commands are impinged upon his

analyzer, and although the analyzer may firmly believe

it has just computed the reaction all of its own accord, it

is actually speaking straight out of the content of an

engram or engrams.

This is the method of repeater technique.

As he goes back along the track contacting engrams,

the preclear runs into areas of "unconsciousness"

which are occluded by "unconsciousness" or emotion.

In most early engrams the preclear can be expected to

yawn and yawn. It is not the command "to sleep"

which is responsible for this: the "unconsciousness" is

releasing (boiling off, the auditors call it). A preclear

may, for a space of two hours, fumble around, drop off

into "unconsciousness," appear doped, start to go to

sleep, without any such command being present.

Part of the engram bundle of data is the analyzer

shut-off. When he is returned and an engram is con-

tacted, the preclear then experiences an analyzer attenu-

ation, which means he is much less able to think in the

area. Boiling off "unconsciousness" is a process very

necessary to therapy, for this "unconsciousness" could

be restimulated in the everyday life of the individual

301

L. RON HUBBARD

and, when restimulated, make his wits shut off just a

little or a very great deal, slowing down his thought

processes.

The aspect of "unconsciousness," then, reduces the preclear's awareness whenever it is contacted. He has dreams, he mumbles foolish things, he flounders. His analyzer is penetrating the veil which kept him from the engram. But it is also highly susceptible, when in this state, to an engram command.

When urged by the auditor to go through the engram and recount it (although the auditor knows it may take minutes for this "unconsciousness" to boil off enough to let the patient through), the preclear may complain that "I can't go back at this point." The auditor promptly takes note of this. It is an engram command coming through. He does not apprise the patient of this

knowledge; the patient usually doesn't know what he's

saying. If the patient then continues to have trouble, the

auditor tells him, "Say, 'I can't go back at this point.' "

The patient then repeats this, the auditor making him go

over it and over it. Suddenly the somatic turns on and

the engram is contacted.

In interviewing a patient, the auditor notes carefully,

without appearing to do so, what phrases the patient

chooses and repeats about his ills or about Dianetics.

After he has placed the patient in reverie, if he discovers

the patient, for instance, insists he "can't go anyplace,"

the auditor makes him repeat the phrase.

Repetition of such a phrase, over and over, sucks the patient back down the track and into contact with an engram which contains it. It may happen that this engram will not release—having too many before it—but it will not release only in case it has that same phrase in an earlier engram. So the repeater technique is continued with the auditor making the patient go earlier and earlier for it. If all goes on schedule the

302

THE LAWS OF RETURNING

patient will very often let out a chuckle or a laugh of relief. The phrase has been sprung. The engram has not

been erased, but that much of it will not thereafter

influence therapy.

Anything the patient does about engrams and any

words he uses to describe the action are contained,

usually, in those engrams. Repeater technique takes the

charge off the phrases so that the engrams can be

approached.

This technique, of course, can very occasionally

land the patient in trouble, but the kind of trouble into

which one can get in Dianetics is not very severe. The

engram, restimulated in everyday life, can be and is

violent. Murders, rapes and arsons, attempted abor-

tions, backwardness in school—any aberrated aspect of

life—stem from these engrams. But the act of approaching them in Dianetic therapy goes on another channel, a channel closer to the source of the engram. Ordinarily, acting on an unsuspecting individual, the engram has enormous motor and speech power, ties up great numbers of circuits in the mind which should be used for rationality, and generally effects havoc: its contacts are "soldered in" and cannot be thrown out by the analyzer. In therapy, the patient is headed toward the engram: that act alone begins to disconnect some of its "permanent leads."⁷ A patient can be gotten into an engram which, unless approached on the therapy route, might have made him curl up like a fetus and get

shipped off to the nearest institution. On the therapy

route, which is a return down the time track, the most

powerful holder has its force limited: a patient can get

into a holder which in normal life might be a psychosis:

his only manifestation, perhaps, is that when he is told

7. leads: electrical conductors (usually wires) conveying current

from a source to a place of use.

303

L. RON HUBBARD

to "Come up to present time," he simply opens his eyes

without actually traversing the interval up the track to

present time. He does not suspect he is in a holder until

the auditor, watchful for such a manifestation, feeds

him repeater technique.

Auditor: Are you in present time?

Preclear: Sure.

Auditor: How do you feel?

Preclear: Oh, I've got a slight headache.

Auditor: Close your eyes. Now say, "Stay here."

Preclear: All right. "Stay here. Stay here. Stay here."

(Several times)

Auditor: Are you moving?

Preclear: No.

Auditor: Say, "I'm caught. I'm caught."

Preclear: "I'm caught." (Several times)

Auditor: Are you moving on the track?

Preclear: Nope.

Auditor: Say, "I'm trapped."

Preclear: "I'm trapped. I ————" Ouch, my head!

Auditor: Keep going over it.

Preclear: "I'm trapped. I'm trapped. I'm trapped."

Ouch! That's worse! (His somatic is getting stronger

as he approaches the engram holding him on the

other side of the "unconsciousness" veil.)

Auditor: Keep going over it.

Preclear: "I'm trapped—oh, God, I'm trapped. I'll

never get out of this place. I'll never get out. I'm

trapped!"

Auditor: Contact it closely. Make sure there is nothing

more in it. (A trick to keep the preclear from

replaying what he himself has just said and keep

running the engram.)

Preclear: My head hurts! Let me come up to present

time!

Auditor: Go through it again. (If the preclear comes up

304

THE LAWS OF RETURNING

with this much charge, he'll be unhappy and the

incident may be hard to enter next time.)

Preclear: "Oh, God, I'm trapped. I'm afraid I'm
trapped." (New word showed up.) "I'll never get out
of this place as long as I live. I'm trapped. I'll never
get out. I'm trapped." (aside) She's crying. "Oh,
why did I ever have to marry such a man!"

Auditor: How's your head?

Preclear: Hurts less. Say, that's a dirty trick. She's
pounding herself on the stomach. That's mean!

Why, confound her!

Auditor: Reexperience it again. Let's make sure there
isn't more in it. (Same mechanism to keep the
preclear from replaying what he said before rather

than what he now gets from the engram. If he

replays rather than reexperiences, the engram won't

lift.)

Preclear: (Does so, getting some new words and sev-

eral sounds including the thud of the blows on her

abdomen and an auto horn [bulb type] in the street

outside.) Don't tell me I have to run this thing again.

Auditor: Recount it, please.

Preclear: Well, so this dame tries to bust my head in

and get rid of me. And so I jumped out and beat hell

out of her.

Auditor: Please reexperience the engram.

Preclear: (Starts to do so, suddenly finds out that, like

a piece of string with a loop in it, this engram has

straightened out and contains more data where the

loops were.) "I've got to think of something to tell

Harry. He'll jump all over me." (This was the source

of his joking—"jumped out," etc.)

Auditor: Please go over it again. There may be more

in it.

Preclear: (Does so, old parts of it reduce, two new

sounds appear, her footsteps and running water.

305

L. RON HUBBARD

Then he is happy and laughs at it. This engram is

released because it may not have entirely vanished.

Such an engram is in this shape only when it is

contacted prior to basic-basic.)

This is both repeater technique and an engram

talked into recession. This engram may appear again

with a very faint additional charge after basic-basic is

contacted, but it has lost all power to aberrate or give

out a psychosomatic headache or other illness. Yet this

engram, not contacted by therapy, was quite enough to

make this patient, when a boy, scream with terror every

time he found he could not get out of some closed space

(claustrophobia).

The repeater technique is the one particular phase of

Dianetics which requires cleverness from the auditor.

Given persistency and patience, any auditor can suc-

ceed in the other phases of the science with minimal

intelligence. In the repeater technique he must learn

how to think—for therapy purposes—like an engram.

And he will have to observe how the subject is conduct-

ing himself along the time track. And he will have to

observe the type of reaction the subject has and draw

from this the conclusion as to what sort of command is

troubling the subject when the subject himself either

does not cooperate or does not know.

This is not to say that the repeater technique is hard:

it is not. But the ability of the auditor to use it is the principal reason why a case takes longer with one auditor than another. It is a definite ability. It is playing the game mentioned earlier with cleverness. Where is the preclear stuck and with what command? Why has the preclear suddenly stopped cooperating? Where is the emotional charge which is holding up the case?

With the repeater technique the auditor can resolve all these problems and a clever auditor resolves them much faster than an unclever one.

How does one think like an engram? Ronald Ross, discovering that insects carried germs, considered it necessary to think like a mosquito. Here is a similar menace, the engram. One has to learn to think, for therapy purposes, like an engram.

The auditor could not and does not have to be able to look into a patient's eyes and guess why the patient won't eat anything but cauliflower on Wednesdays. That is an aberration and the auditor does not have to guess at either aberrations or psychosomatic illness sources: they all come out in time and he will learn much about them as he goes. But the auditor must be able to keep his patient straightened out on the track, moving earlier

into the basic area, moving upwards from there for a reduction. The current answer to this is the repeater technique. Understand that a whole new art of practice, or many arts of practice, could be evolved for Diagnostics: one would be unhappy with his fellow man if such evolution and betterment did not take place. Just now, the best that has come forward—and the criterion of best is that it works uniformly in all cases—is the repeater technique. The auditor must be able to use it if he expects anything like results from a case at this time.

When the auditor—or some auditor—has run a few cases and knows the nature of this beast, the engram, he may—and better had—come forward with improved

techniques of his own. The real drawback which re-
peater technique has is that it requires the auditor to be
clever.

Being clever does not mean talking a lot. In Dia-
netics, when one is auditing, that is being very unclever.

Indeed, auditors, when they begin to work cases, al-
most invariably so love the sound of their own voices
and the feel of their skill that the poor preclear hardly
gets a chance to get a word in reactivewise—and it is
the preclear who is to be cleared, who has the only

accurate information, who can make the only evaluations.

Being clever in the sense of the repeater technique is being able to pick out, from the subject's conversation or action, just what the engrams contain which will prevent his reaching them, progressing through them and so forth. The repeater technique is addressed only to action, not to aberration.

Here is a case, for instance, which was so "sealed in" that thirty hours of almost continual repeater technique were necessary to break the walls between the analytical mind and the engrams. It is important to

know that an engram would not be an engram if the
preclear could contact it easily. Any engram which can
be easily contacted and has no emotional charge is
about as aberrative as a glass of soda water.

A young girl, with sonic recall, but with extended
hearing and such a complete imbalance of the endo-
crine system that she had become an old woman at
twenty-two, was worked for seventy-five hours before
she contacted anything in the basic area. This is almost
incredible but it happened. In a patient with sonic
shut-off and off his time track, seventy-five hours of
work would just about get the wheels greased. But this
girl, having sonic recall, should have been well on the

road to being Clear and she had yet to touch basic-

basic.

By repeater technique and repeater alone the case

was finally resolved. It contained practically no holders

or bouncers. It simply appeared that the whole prenatal

area was a blank.

Now, it happens that an engram, being not a

memory with reason in it, is just a set of waves or some

other type of recording which impinges itself on the

analytical mind and the somatic mind and runs the

voice and muscles and other parts of the body. The

analytical mind, to justify what it finds going forward,

and cut down by the engram in dramatization, may be

interjecting data to make this action seem reasonable

—to justify it. But this does not make an engram

sentient. When an engram is first approached in therapy

it appears to be absent entirely. It may be that three

sessions will be required to "develop" this engram. As

many are worked, this does not mean three blank

sessions, but it means that the "I," in returning, must

pass over an engram a few times for the engram to

"develop." This is important to know. Just as you ask

the mind for a datum one week and don't find it (in an aberree) and ask it again the next week and find it, so with engrams. A cardinal principle in therapy is that if you keep asking for it, you will eventually get the engram. Returning over and over the prenatal area will, of itself alone, eventually develop the engrams in it so that the analytical mind can attack them and reduce them. This is slow freight. The repeater technique—although the engram is still in need of development by several sessions—speeds the process immensely.

In the case of this young girl it probably would have taken another fifty or sixty hours of work to contact the engrams unless a technique like repeater had been

used. Repeater technique resolved it when the auditor noted that she kept saying, "I'm sure there's a good reason why I feel bad up in my childhood. After all, my brother raped me when I was five. I'm sure it's up in my childhood, much later. My mother was terribly jealous of me. I'm sure it's later."

This young lady, as might be imagined, had studied some school of mental healing in college which thought sex or eating vitamins caused aberrations of the mind and she had often held forth on the fact that, while she was not averse to what she called "analysis," she did think it dull to expect a fetus to hear anything. She

L. RON HUBBARD

would go into the area before birth and declare she was

quite comfortable. But birth was not in sight. That is

important. The basic engram or engrams in the basic

area—around the embryo period—cannot vanish and

will not vanish short of therapy, and when birth cannot

even be contacted by so much as one somatic, it is

certain that something lies before it. If birth were the

first engram, everybody could be cleared in five hours.

Birth can even be in sight and there may still remain

half a hundred severe prenatal experiences. In her case,

nothing was in sight. Her educational pattern had

slowed the case: she was always trying to sit in present

time and "remember" with a memory so full of occlu-

sions that she couldn't have recalled her mother's right

name. (She had acquired this from being in the hands of

mental practitioners for ten years who had asked her to

do nothing but "remember.") As has been said, she was

quite comfortable before birth, sensed the amniotic

fluid and was certain that life in the womb was a joyous

life for all. The incongruity that she could experience

the sensations of this amniotic fluid and floating com-

fort and warmth and a continued belief that there was

no prenatal memory escaped her utterly. The auditor

made no slightest effort to convince her. Knowing his

business, he merely kept sending her back and forth,

trying this mechanism or that.

She finally wanted to know if there had to be

prenatal experience and was told that what was there

was there, that if there was no prenatal memory then

she wouldn't recall any but that if there was, she might.

This is a good, equivocal attitude for an auditor. Dia-

netics, after all, as one auditor put it, "just shows the

yard goods" and makes no sales effort at all.

The auditor had been using repeater technique on

varieties of phrases. She was moving on the track so

there must be a denier present. And he had utterly run

THE LAWS OF RETURNING

out of ideas when he realized, suddenly, that she was

very handy with that phrase, "much later."

Auditor: Say "much later" and return into the prenatal

area.

Girl: "Much later. Much later," etc. (very bored and

uncooperative).

Auditor: Continue please. (Never say "Go ahead," for

that means to do just that. Say "Continue" when you

want them to keep on progressing along an engram

or repeating, and "Return over it" when rerunning

an engram already run once.)

Girl: "Much later. Much ..." I have a somatic in my

face! It feels like I am being pushed. (This was good

news, for the auditor knew she had a midprenatal

pain shut-off which prevented later somatics from

appearing.)

Auditor: Contact it more closely and continue to re-

peat.

Girl: "Much later. Much later." It's getting stronger.

(Naturally. On repeater technique, the somatic gets

stronger until the phrase appears, exactly right. On a

nonsonic case it impinges itself indirectly on "I"; in

a sonic, the sound comes through as sound.)

Auditor: Continue.

Girl: "Much ..." I hear a voice! There. That's it.

Why, that's my father's voice!

Auditor: Listen to the words and repeat them, please.

Girl: He's talking to my mother. Say, this face pressure

is uncomfortable. It keeps going up and down on

me. It hurts!

Auditor: Repeat his words, please.

Girl: He's saying, "Oh honey, I won't come in you

now. It's better to wait until much later to have one."

And there's my mother's voice. Say, this pressure is

hurting me. No, it's eased up considerably. Funny,

the minute I contacted his voice, it got less.

311

L. RON HUBBARD

Auditor: What is your mother saying, please, if you

hear her?

Girl: She's saying, "I don't want you in there at all

then!" She's mad! Say, the somatic stopped. (Coitus

had ended at this point.)

Auditor: Please return to the start of this and recount.

Girl: (Regains the beginning, somatic returns.) I wonder

what they're doing? (then a pause) I hear a squishing

sound! (then a pause and embarrassment) Oh!

Auditor: Recount the engram, please.

Girl: There's a sort of faint rhythm at first and then it

gets faster. I can hear breathing. Now it's beginning

to bear down harder but a lot less than it did the first

time. Then it eases up and I hear my father's voice:

"Oh, honey I won't come in you now. It's better to

wait until much later to have one. I'm not too sure I

like children that well. Besides, my job . . ." And

my mother must shove at him" because there's a

sharper somatic here. "I don't want you in there at

all then. You cold fish!"

Auditor: Return to the beginning and recount it again,

please.

Girl: (Recounts it several times, somatic finally van-

ishes. She feels quite cheerful about it but doesn't

think to mention that she doubted prenatals existed.)

This is repeater technique at work. This particular

case had had about two hundred phrases thrown at her

for repeater technique without finding one of them that

would fit. In the first place, there were only a few lower

engrams which the file clerk was willing to give out and

the auditor was guessing at the whole gamut of denyers.

A later incident might have contained—and did, but no

somatic appeared—numbers of the phrases he used. But

the file clerk was willing to settle for this one for it was

early and could be erased.

The file clerk rarely hands out something in a badly

312

THE LAWS OF RETURNING

occluded case which cannot be reduced to recession.

And an auditor never leaves an engram so offered until

he has made every effort with many recountings to

reduce it. The file clerk, in this case, by the by, would

have let down the auditor by putting forth such an

engram as birth, which would not have lifted and which

would have caused a lot of lost work and given the

patient a headache for a few days. The auditor would

have let the file clerk down if he had not reduced the
engram offered by making the girl go over it several
times until the somatic was gone and the voice faded
out.

The reason this engram stayed hidden was because
its content said so. Actually it was a coitus. As an
engram it seemed to say that the incidents would be
found later on in life. Further, as an engram, it said that
it was not to be entered.

Repeater technique will sometimes embroil a patient
in trouble of a minor sort by getting him "sucked into"
incidents which will not lift. This is not common but
the file clerk occasionally hands out a late incident,

rather than an early one. However, this is not an error
on the part of the file clerk. Remember, he has these
engrams filed by subject, somatic and time, and the
auditor can use any one of these. When the file clerk
responds and hands out a somatic on a repeater phrase
the auditor has gleaned from the preclear's chatter or
has guessed himself and yet that somatic will not lift or
no voice appears with it (in a sonic case, or merely
won't lift with a nonsonic), the file clerk had to unstack
a pile of material. Therefore, the auditor, realizing this,
finding that a voice does not appear or that the somatic
will not lift, has the preclear repeat the same phrase
and tells him to go earlier and earlier. Another somatic

may turn up in a different place in the body. The file

clerk has gotten an even earlier one loose, now that a

313

L. RON HUBBARD

small amount of trouble has been taken from what he

could first get. Now this earlier one is addressed simi-

larly. It may get mediumly strong as a somatic, the

preclear repeating the phrase all the while, and still no

voice may appear. The auditor then sends the preclear

earlier. The file clerk again has managed to get out an

even earlier one, now that something has been taken

from the second. This time again, an even earlier

somatic turns on, probably down around the basic area

in a case which has not previously contacted this area,

and this time a voice can be heard. The engram re-

duces. The file clerk, in short, was willing to risk

trouble in order to get several somatics unstacked and

let the auditor get a basic incident.

There are variations on this sort of thing. As the

filing system is by subject, somatic and time, the audi-

tor can use other things than phrases. He can send a

preclear to the "highest intensity of a somatic," and

often results may be obtained, though this is not as

reliable as by subject nor as foolproof. The preclear,

incidentally, does not mind going to any "highest intensity" of somatic because somatics are about a thousandth part as strong as the original agony, though they are quite strong enough. In present time with the pre-clear not in therapy, the intensity of one of these somatics can be a drastic affair, as witness the migraine headache. Taking the migraine, a pre-clear can be returned to the very moment of its reception when one would think its intensity would be the highest and yet find a mild, dull ache such as one would get with a hangover. This is part of the principle that any entrance of a case is better than a case not entered at all. For, by return with standard reverie technique, the source is

approached, and if the source is contacted at all, the

power of the engram to aberrate has become reduced in

314

THE LAWS OF RETURNING

strength no matter how many mistakes the auditor

makes.

Returning to "maximum intensity" of a somatic,

then, is nothing very painful. Actual maximum intensity

is when the preclear is awake before the contact with

the incident is made. But in returning to "maximum

intensity" the incident may often be contacted and

reduced. If "maximum intensity" however, contains in

its engram the phrases, "I can't stand it!" "It's killing me," or "I'm terrified," then expect our preclear to respond to it in some such way. If he does not respond, then he has an emotional shut-off, which is another problem which will be taken up later.

Similarly, the auditor can handle his preclear in time. There exists a very accurate clock in the mind. The file clerk is very well acquainted with this clock and wherever possible will comply. The auditor who wants the patient to go "six minutes before this phrase is uttered" will generally find that his preclear is now six minutes before it, even though the incident is pre-natal. The auditor can bring his preclear forward, then,

minute by minute as he desires. He can take a preclear straight through an incident by announcing, "It is one minute later. It is two minutes later. Three minutes have gone by," and so forth. The auditor does not have to wait for those minutes to elapse; he just announces them. He can make a preclear go through time at five-minute intervals or hour intervals or day intervals, and unless there is engramic material which holds him or otherwise affects the operation, the auditor can move the preclear on the time track at will. It would be very nice if the auditor could send the preclear to conception and then tell him it is one hour later, two hours later and

so forth, to pick up the first engram. However, there are more factors involved than time, and the plan, though pretty, is not feasible. The time shift is generally used

315

L. RON HUBBARD

when the auditor is trying to get the preclear ahead of an incident to make sure that he really has a beginning.

By returning the preclear by five- or ten-minute inter-

vals, the auditor may sometimes discover that he is

running backwards into a very long and complicated

incident and that the headache he has been seeking to

alleviate on the preclear was received, actually, hours

before the period in which he thought it had initially
been received. In such a case there is a second engram
appended to an earlier engram and the auditor cannot
lift the second one until he has the first one.

Actually, time shift is of limited use. The auditor
who tries to go chasing backwards through time will
find that he will have on his hands an artificially
restimulated case and that the work is much impeded.

Repeater technique works best and is most easily han-
dled by the file clerk. The auditor uses a time shift to
get the preclear as close to basic area (early prenatal) as
possible and then generally, if the file clerk doesn't
simply go to work handing out engrams which can be

washed, one after the other, the auditor uses repeater

technique. Time shift and "running down a somatic"

have some limited use. Some experimentation will show

about how much use they have.

The laws of returning are these:

1. A returned patient reacts more, theoretically, to

those commands which are earlier than he is on

the time track and less to those commands

which are later than his point in time.

2. A preclear reacts to those engramic commands

which are: (a) in chronic restimulation, or (b) to

which he is nearest on the time track. Thus, if

an engram says, "I'm afraid," he is. If it says,

"I'd rather die than face this," he would. If the

command to which he is near says, "I'm

sleepy," he will be. If it says, "Forget it," he

316

THE LAWS OF RETURNING

will. Commands in chronic restimulation give a

false color to the personality: "I can never be

sure of anything," "I don't know," "I can't

hear anything" are all possibly in chronic re-

stimulation. If the file clerk won't give them up,

then keep working the case anyway around

these. They will give up after a while.

3. The action of the preclear on the time track and

the condition of the track are regulated exclu-

sively by engramic commands classifiable as

bouncers, holders, denyers and groupers and

misdirectors. (These conditions, it is repeated,

are quite variable, as variable as language: "I

don't know whether I am coming or going," for

instance, in an engram makes it very confusing.

"I can't go back at this point" makes the pre-

clear keep progressing later and later.)

4. The engramic command manifests itself either

in the awake speech of the preclear before a

session of therapy or is inadvertently announced

as a supposedly "analytical" thought when he

nears the vicinity of the command.

5. The engram is not a sentient, rationalized

memory, but a collection of unanalyzed percep-

tions, and it will develop into contact simply by

the process of returning through it, to it, over it

or asking for it.

6. The file clerk will give the auditor whatever can

be extracted from the engram bank. The auditor

must aid the file clerk by reducing in charge or

severity everything the file clerk offers. This is

done by making the patient recount it. (Other-

wise the file clerk gets so much material piled

around that, with this in restimulation, he can

no longer get at the files. The auditor who

bucks the file clerk is not rare. The file clerk

317

L. RON HUBBARD

who will buck an auditor, except by withholding

data which will not reduce, has yet to be found.)

The techniques available to the auditor are as fol-

lows:

1. Returning, in which the preclear is sent as early

as possible on his track before therapy itself is

engaged upon.

2. Repeater technique, by which the file clerk is

asked for data on certain subjects, particularly

those affecting the return and travel on the time

track, and which aid the ability of the preclear

to contact engrams.

3. Time shift, by which a preclear can be moved

short or long distances on the track by specific

announcement of the amount of time forward

the preclear is to go or time backwards, or

return or progression through intervals of time.

(It is also useful to find out if the preclear is

moving or which direction he is moving on the

time track in order to discover the action some

I engram may be having upon him.)

f 4. Somatic location, by which the moment of re-

| ception of the somatic is located, in an effort to

I discover whether it is received in this engram or

{ to find an engram containing it.

CHAPTER SEVEN

Emotion and the Life Force

One of the largest roles in therapy is played by

emotion. In the second book we covered this subject

and divided it tentatively as a theory only into three

divisions: (a) the emotions contained in the command of

engrams whereby physical pain became confused with

emotions; (b) the emotions contained as endocrine reac-

tions subject to the analytical mind of the Clear and the

analytical mind and reactive mind of the aberree; and

(c) the emotions contained in engrams which bound up

free units of life force.

Further work and research on emotion will undoubt-

edly bring about an even closer understanding of it. But

we have a workable knowledge of emotion now. We can

use what we know and produce results with it. When we

know more, we shall be able to produce much better

results but just now we can produce the Release and the

Clear. If we treat emotion as bound-up life force and if we follow these general precepts to release it, we shall obtain a very large gain in any preclear; indeed, we shall produce our largest single gains by so releasing emotion.

In an engineering science like Dianetics, we can work on a push-button basis. We know that throwing a switch will stop a motor, that closing it again will start it and that no matter how many times we open or close that switch our motor will stop or start. We are using here a force which is still as mysterious to us as electricity was to James Clerk Maxwell. Much earlier Benjamin Franklin had observed that electricity existed and had done some interesting things with it: but he

had not used it much and he could not control it. A

319

L. RON HUBBARD

philosopher like Bergson' selected out a thing he called

elan vital, a life force. Man is alive, there must be a

force or flow of something which keeps him alive; when

man is dead there is no force or flow. This is life force

in the Benjamin Franklin stage. As he considered elec-

tricity, so did Bergson consider life force. Now we are

up, in Dianetics, to the James Clerk Maxwell stage, or

very nearly. We know that certain equations can be

made about life force and we can use those equations.

And we can theorize that "life force" and what has

been called a certain kind of "emotion" are either

similar or the same thing. We may have the wrong

theory, but so might James Clerk Maxwell. Indeed,

Maxwell's theories may still be wrong: at least we have

electric lights. In Dianetics, we are pretty certain that

the majority of tenets are parallels of natural law: these

are the big computations. We are not certain that we have

emotion properly bracketed, but then we shall not be sure

until we have actually taken a dead man and pumped him

up with life force again. Short of this extreme, we are on

solid ground with emotion as life force.

We can, for instance, take a girl, examine something of her background with, let us say, an electroencephalograph* (an instrument for measuring nervous

* The electroencephalograph, hypnoscopes, intelligence charts, tests for various dynamics and so forth are all mechanical aids to Dianetics. They are primarily used in research. They can be used in practice where available and the skill of the auditor permits, but they have not been generally in such practical use and at this time and with this therapy are not needed. Some chemist, one of these days, is going to invent a perfect "trance gas," I hope, which will speed the clearing of a schizophrenic; and some engineer, I trust, will make something to measure nerve impulses cheap enough to be used in general practice.

Right now, we can get along without them, no matter how

desirable they may be to the future. — LRH

1. Bergson: Henri Bergson (1859-1941), French philosopher.

Awarded Nobel Prize for literature (1927).

320

EMOTION AND THE LIFE FORCE

impulses and reactions) and then proceed on the basis

of the information so obtained to do one of two things.

The first is inhuman and would not be done, of course,

but she could be made sick or insane merely by using

this data, so obtained. (If the data is obtained in ther-

apy, it is obtained by actual contact with engrams and

an engram contacted in reverie has lost its power to

aberrate: Dianetic therapy thus makes such an eventual-

ity utterly impossible.) The second and far more impor-

tant fact to us is that she can be made to recover, with

this same data, all the force, interest, persistence and

tenacity to life and all the physical and mental well-

being possible. If it could not be made to work both

ways, we would not have the answer, at least in work-

able form. (Some fiction writer, by the way, if tempted

to horrify on the first fact, must please recall that the

data was obtained with apparatus which would have

staggered Doctor Frankenstein for intricacy and skill in

use and that Dianetic therapy contacts the data at

source; the apparatus is necessary to keep from touch-

ing the source, for the instant the source is touched by

therapy its power vanishes like yesterday's headlines.

So let's have no Gaslight² plays about Dianetics, please;

they'd be technically inaccurate.)

This is not as simple as electricity in that the switch

cannot be turned off and on. So far as Dianetics is con-

cerned, it can only be turned on. We have a rheostat,³

then, which will not drop back but which, when pressed

forward, releases more and more dynamic force into the

individual and gives him more and more control over its use.

Man is intended to be a self-determined organism.

That is to say that as long as he can make evaluations of

2. Gaslight: a play by Patrick Hamilton (later called Angel Street)

in which a man tries to drive his wife insane.

3. rheostat: an electrical instrument used to control current by

varying resistance.

321

L. RON HUBBARD

his data without artificial compulsions or repressions

(held-down sevens in an adding machine) he can oper-

ate to maximum efficiency. When man becomes exteri-

orly determined, which is to say compelled to do or

repressed from doing without his own rational consent,

he becomes a push-button animal. This push-button factor is so sharply defined that an auditor, in therapy, who discovers a key phrase in an engram (and does not release it) can use that phrase for a little while to make a patient cough or laugh or stop coughing or stop laughing at the auditor's will. In the case of the auditor, because he got the data at source—contacted the engram itself, which robbed it of some power—the push button will not last very long, certainly less than two or three hundred pushes. The whole pain-drive effort at handling human beings, and most of the data accumulated in the past by various schools, has been, unwittingly, this push-button material. If the engram is not

touched at source it is good for endless use, its power

never diminishing. Touched at source, however, the

original recording has been reached and so it loses its

power. The "handling of human beings" and what

people have been calling, roughly, "psychology" have

been actually push-button handling of a person's aber-

rational phrases and sounds. Children discover them in

their parents and use them with a vengeance. The clerk

discovers that his boss can't stand a full wastebasket

and so always has one full. The bosun⁴ on a ship finds

out one of his sailors cringes every time he hears the

phrase, "fancy pants" and so uses the words to intimi-

date the man. This is push-button warfare amongst

aberrees. Wives may find that certain words make the

husband wince or make him angry or make him refrain

4. bosun: a ship's petty officer in charge of rigging, boats, an-

chors, etc.

322

EMOTION AND THE LIFE FORCE

from doing something and so they use these "push

buttons." And husbands find their wives' push buttons

and keep them from buying clothes or using the car.

This defensive and offensive dueling amongst aberrees

is occasioned by push buttons reacting against push

buttons. Whole populaces are handled by their push-button responses. Advertising learns about push buttons and uses them in such things as "body odor" or constipation. And in the entertainment field and the songwriting field push buttons are pushed in whole racks and batteries to produce aberrated responses. Pornography appeals to people who have pornographic push buttons. Corn-and-games⁵ government appeals to people who have "care for me" push buttons and others. It might be said that there is no necessity to appeal to reason when there are so many push buttons around.

These same push buttons, because they are sevens held down by pain and emotion (false data forced into

the computer by engrams—and every society has its

own special patterns of engrams), also happen to drive

people insane, make them ill and generally raise havoc.

The only push button the Clear has is whatever his own

computer, evaluating on his experience which itself has

been evaluated by the computer, tells him is survival

conduct along his four dynamics. And so, being no

marionette in the hands of careless or designing

people, he remains well and sane.

It is not true, however, that a Clear is not emotional,

that his reason is cold, and that he is a self-conscious

puppet to his own computations. His computer works so

rapidly and on so many levels with so many of his

5. corn-and-games: reference to the practice in ancient Rome of feeding people and providing official public amusement (circuses in the arena) in an attempt to prevent unrest.

6. designing: crafty, conniving.

323

L. RON HUBBARD

computations going on simultaneously but out of the

sight of "I" (though "I" can examine any one of them

he chooses) that his inversion or acute awareness of self

is minimal. Inversion is the condition of the aberree

whose poor computer is wrestling with heavy impon-

derables⁷ and held-down sevens in his engrams such as

"I must do it. I just have to do it. But no, I'd better

change my mind."

The computational difference between the Clear and

the aberree is very wide. But there is a much grander

difference: life force. The dynamics have, evidently, so

much potential force. This force manifests itself as

tenacity to life, persistence in endeavor, vigor of

thought and act and ability to experience pleasure. The

dynamics in a man's cells may be no stronger than

those in a cat's cells. But the dynamics in the whole

man are easily greater than those in any other animal.

Assign this as one will, the man is basically more alive

in that he has a more volatile response. By more alive is

meant that his sentient, emotional urge to live is greater

than those found in other life forms. If this were not

true, he would not now command the other kingdoms.

Regardless of what a shark or a beaver does when

threatened with final extinction, the shark and the

beaver get short shrift when they encounter the dy-

namics of man: the shark gets worn as leather or eaten

as vitamins and the beaver decks a lady's back.

The fundamental aspect of this is seen in a single

reaction. Animals are content to survive in their

environments and seek to adjust themselves to those

environments. That very dangerous animal—or god—

7. imponderables: things that cannot be conclusively determined

or explained.

8. volatile: moving suddenly and often from one idea, interest,

feeling, etc., to another; changeable.

9. decks: decorates; dresses up.

324

EMOTION AND THE LIFE FORCE

man has a slightly different idea. Ancient schools were

fond of telling the poor demented aberree that he must

face reality. This was optimum conduct: facing reality.

Only it isn't man's optimum conduct. Just as these

schools made the fundamental error of supposing that the aberree was unwilling to face his environment when he was actually, because of engrams, unable to face it, they supposed that the mere facing of reality would lead to sanity. Perhaps it does, but it does not lead to a victory of man over the elements and other forms. Man has something more: some people call it creative imagination, some call it this or some call it that; but whatever it is called, it adds up to the interesting fact that man is not content merely to "face reality" as most other life forms are. Man makes reality face him. Propaganda about "the necessity of facing reality," like

propaganda to the effect that a man could be driven

mad by a "childhood delusion" (whatever that is), does

not face the reality that where the beaver down his ages

of evolution built mud dams and keeps on building mud

dams, man graduates in half a century from a stone and

wood dam to make a mill-wheel pond to structures like

Grand Coulee Dam,¹⁰ and changes the whole and entire

aspect of a respectable portion of nature's real estate

from a desert to productive soil, from a flow of water to

lightning bolts. It may not be as poetic as Rousseau

desired, it may not be as pretty as some "nature lover"

would desire, but it's a new reality. Two thousand years

ago the Chinese built a wall which would have been

visible from the moon had anybody been up there to

look; three thousand years ago he had North Africa

green and fertile; ten thousand years ago he was

engaged upon some other project; but always he

has been shaping things up pretty well to suit man.

10. Grand Coulee Dam: a large, concrete dam located on the

Columbia River in central Washington.

325

L. RON HUBBARD

There's an extra quality at work or perhaps just

more of it, so much more of it that it looks like a new

thing entirely.

Now, all this is not any great digression from therapy; it is stated here as an aspect of life force. Where the individual finds himself "possessed of less and less life force," he is losing some of the free units somewhere. And the free units of this life force, in a society or an individual, are the extra surge that is needed to tame North Africa, divide an atom or reach the stars.

The mechanical theory here—and recall it is but theory and Dianetics can stand without it—is that there are so many units of force per individual. These units may be held in common by a group and may build to higher and higher numbers as "enthusiasm" increases;

but for our purposes, we can consider that man, as an

individual or a society—both are organisms—has a

ready number to hand for use in any given hour or day.

He may manufacture these life units as required and he

may simply have a given supply: that is beside the

point. What is to the point is that he can be considered,

at any hour or day, as just so much alive. Consider this

as his dynamic potential as we can see on our descriptic

earlier.

What happens, then, to this dynamic potential in the

aberrée? He has a large quantity of engrams in his

bank. We know that these engrams can sleep for his

entire life without being "keyed in," and we know that

any or all of them can be keyed in and thereafter wait

for restimulators in the environment to set them into

action. We know that his necessity level can suddenly

rise and surmount all these keyed-in engrams, and we

know that a high survival activity can bring him such a

chance of pleasure that the engrams can stay unestim-

ulated, though keyed in. And we can suppose that

these engrams, from one period of life to another, can

326

EMOTION AND THE LIFE FORCE

actually key out again and stay out because of some vast

change of environment or survival chances.

The usual case, however, is that a few engrams stay keyed in continually and are-restimulated rather chronically by the environment of the individual, and that if he changes environment the old may key out but eventually new ones will key in.

Most aberrees are in a state of chronic restimulation which, on the average, starts the spiral dwindling down rather rapidly.

As this pertains to life force, the mechanical action of an engram, on being keyed in, is to capture so many of these units of life force. Sudden and sweeping re-stimulation of the engram permits it to capture a great

many more units of life force. In the average case, every restimulation captures a greater residue of life force and holds it. When enthusiasm or impetus aligns the purpose of the individual toward a true survival goal (as opposed to a pseudogoal in the engrams) he recaptures some of these units. But the spiral is dwindling: he cannot capture back, except in very unusual circumstances, as many as he has lost into the engram bank.

Thus it can be said, for purposes of this theory of life force action, that more and more life force units out of an individual's supply are captured and held in the engram bank. Here they are perverted in use to counterfeit themselves as dynamic (as in the manic and the

high euphoria case) and force action upon the somatic

and analytical mind. In this engram bank, the life force

units are not available as free feeling or for free action

but are used against the individual from within.

An observation here tends to demonstrate this action:

The more restimulated an aberree is, the less free feeling

he may possess. If caught in a manic (highly complimen-

tary prosurvival engram), his life force is channel-

ing straight through the engram and his behavior, no

matter how enthusiastic or euphoric, is actually very aberrated. If he has this much life force to be so channeled, then he can be shown to have even more life force, sentiently directed, when Clear. (This has been done.)

We have demonstrated the parasitic quality of the "demon circuits" which use pieces of the analytical mind and its processes. This parasitic quality is common to engrams in other ways. If a man has, arbitrarily, 1,000 units of life force, he has an ability to channel them, when Clear, into highly zestful existence: in a manic state, with a prosurvival engram in full restimulation, the life force is directed through an aberrated

command and gives him, let us say, 500 units of

pseudodynamic thrust.

In other words, the power is out of the same battery:

such an engram has, at best, less power than the whole

organism, cleared, would have. (This aspect of the manic

or superpersonality neurotic has misled some of the old

schools of mental healing into the thoroughly aberrated

and poorly observed belief that insanities alone were

responsible for man's ability to survive, a concept which

can be disproven in the laboratory simply by clearing one

of these manics or any other aberration.)

The engram uses the same current but perverts it,

just as it uses the same analytical mind but usurps" it.

Not only does the engram have no life of its own, but it is wasteful, as are so many parasites, of the life force of the host. It is thoroughly inefficient. If a comparable device were fitted into an electronic circuit, it would merely lead off and make "unalterable" some of the functions of the equipment which should be left variable and would, in addition, consume, simply by

11. usurps: appropriates wrongly to itself (a right, prerogative, etc.).

lengthened leads and bad condensers¹² and tubes, power

supply vital to the machine.

In the human mind, the engram assumes its most

forceful "assist" aspect in the manic, channeling and

commanding the organism into some activity of wild

violence and monomaniac¹³ concentration. The "super-

salesman," the violently buoyant¹⁴ "glad-hander,"¹⁵ the

fanatical and apparently unkillable religious zealot are

classifiable as manics. The abundance of "power" in

these people, even when it is as grim as Torquemada's¹⁶

or as destructive as Genghis Khan's,¹⁷ is an object of

admiration in many quarters. The manic, as will be

later covered, is a "prosurvival," "assist" command in

an engram which yet fixes the individual on some

certain course. But an engram is capable only of as

much "power" as is present in the host, just as it is

capable of tying up only as much analyzer as is present.

Let us take a forceful manic who is displaying and

functioning on 500 arbitrary units of life force. Let us

12. condenser: a device storing a charge of electricity. Also

called a capacitor.

13. monomaniac: one who suffers from an obsession with one

idea or interest.

14. buoyant: lighthearted, cheerful.

15. glad-hander: one who is demonstrative in his personal con-

tacts; one who acts more friendly or more optimistic than neces-

sary; one, as a politician, who pretends friendliness.

16. Torquemada: Tomas de Torquemada (1420-1498), first

Grand Inquisitor of Spain. The Spanish Inquisition, established

under Ferdinand and Isabella in 1478, was centralized by Torque-

mada after his appointment in 1483 as Grand Inquisitor. He

gained the reputation, partly deserved, partly exaggerated, of

great cruelty in his conduct of the Spanish Inquisition, which

reportedly was responsible for the burning of some two thousand

persons between 1481 and 1504.

17. Genghis Khan: (1162-1227) Mongol conqueror of much of

Asia and eastern Europe. He and his armies were totally ruthless

in their actions and were said to have killed over a million people

in one city alone.

329

L. RON HUBBARD

assume that the entire being is possessed of 1,000

arbitrary units of life force. Suppose we have here an

Alexander.¹⁸ The dynamics of the average person are

unassisted by manics in most cases but are dispersed as

a stream of electrons might be dispersed by a block

before them. Here are scattered activity, scattered

thoughts, uncomputable problems, lack of alignment.

In such a person, with 1,000 units present, 950 of those

units could be so captured in the engram banks and yet

so thoroughly counteractive that the person displays a

functioning capacity of only 50 units. In the case of

Alexander, it could be assumed, the manic must have

been an alignment in a general direction of his own

basic purposes. His basic purpose is a strong regulator:

the manic happens to align with it: a person of great

ability and personal prowess becomes possessed of 500

units via a manic engram, believes he is a god and goes

out and conquers the known world. He was educated to

believe he was a god, his manic engram said he was a

god and had a holder in it. Alexander conquered the

world and died at thirty-three. He could hold in his

manic only so long as it could be obeyed: when it could

no longer be obeyed, it changed his valence, became no

more a manic and drove him, with pain, into dispersed

activities. The engram, received from his mother,

Olympias, can almost be read even at this late date. It

must have said he would be a joyous god who would

conquer all the world and must keep on conquering,

that he must always strive to rise higher and higher. It

was probably a ritual chant of some sort from his

mother, who was a high priestess of Lesbos⁹ and who

must have received some injury just before the ritual.

18. Alexander: Alexander III, known as Alexander the Great:

(356-323 B.C.) king of Macedonia (ancient kingdom located in

what is now Greece and Yugoslavia).

19. Lesbos: Greek island in the Aegean Sea. The word lesbian

derives from the ancient Greek name of this island, from the

eroticism and homosexuality attributed to Sappho (ancient Greek

poetess) and her followers.

330

EMOTION AND THE LIFE FORCE

She hated her husband, Philip.²⁰ A son who would

conquer all was the answer. Alexander may well have

had fifty or a hundred such "assist" engrams, the

violent praying of a woman aberrated enough to mur-

der. Thus, he could be assumed to have conquered until

he could no longer stretch a line of supply for conquer-

ing, at which time he, of course, would no longer be

able to obey the engram and its force of pain would turn

on him. The engrams dictated attack to conquer, and

they enforced the command with pain: once conquering

could no longer be accomplished, the pain attacked

Alexander. He realized one day he was dying: within

the week he was dead, and at the height of his power.

Such, on a very large scale, is a manic phrase in an

engram at work.

Now let us suppose that Alexander, with only educa-

tion to turn him against his father, with only prayers to

ask him to conquer the world, not engrams, had been

cleared. Answer: given a sufficient and rational reason,

he would most certainly have been able to conquer the

world and at eighty might well have been alive to enjoy

it. How can we assume this?

The manic with 500 units of directed purpose has been

cleared. He now has 1,000 units of sentiently directed

purpose. He is exactly twice as forceful as he was when he

was in a forceful manic and his basic purpose may be

similar but now can be realized and will not turn on him

the moment he has reached a goal or failed.

This is clinical, the theory behind life force. It was

formulated in an effort to explain observed phenomena.

The theory may be wrong, the observed data is not.

But the theory must be somewhere close to right be-

cause with it could be predicted considerable phenom-

ena which had not been known to exist before: in other

20. Philip: Philip II: (382-336 B.C.) king of Macedonia, father

of Alexander the Great.

331

L. RON HUBBARD

words, it is a profitable theory. It followed after Dia-

netics was well formulated, for a strange fact, vital to

the therapist, turned up: the preclear advanced in ther-

apy In exact ratio to the amount of emotional charge

released from his reactive bank.

The purpose and persistency of the aberree was

hindered in ratio to the amount of emotional charge

within his engram bank. His recovery of survival poten-

tial increased in ratio to the amount of energy freed

from the engram bank. His health increased in ratio to

the amount of energy freed from the engram bank.

The engrams which contained the greatest discharge

were those which centered around loss of imagined

survival factors.

Hence, this theory of life force was formulated. Any

manic, cleared, seemed to demonstrate far more actual

power and energy than before he was cleared. And any

"normal," cleared, increased in accessible life force

units to compare with any manic cleared.

Undoubtedly further work and observation will re-

fine this theory. At the present moment, however, it

serves. It is one of those "scientific theories" thrown in

to explain an operation or a long series of observations.

In this case, it happens to be squarely aligned with the

basic tenets of Dianetics, for it predicts data which can

then be found and does not throw out former data

predicted by the basic mathematics and philosophy of

Dianetics.

Here we are speaking, actually, not of this slippery

term, emotion, but, we believe, life force. This life

force is considerably enhanced by success and pleasure

in general and is, according to this theory, augmented,

in terms of arbitrary units, by pleasure. In other words,

pleasure is a thing which recharges the batteries

or permits them to be recharged; and in a Clear, far

332

EMOTION AND THE LIFE FORCE

from leading to softness, leads to renewed activity since

indolence²¹ is engramic.

Pleasure is a vitally important factor: creative and

constructive endeavor, the overcoming of not unknow-
able obstacles toward some goal, the contemplation of
past goals reached: all combine to recharge life force.

The person, for instance, who has been an enormous
success and then loses that success and so becomes ill is

following no rational cycle but an engramic command

cycle. In a way, he has disobeyed an engramic com-

mand and having disobeyed, suffers pain. The "child

wonder" who early "burns out" is actually, via therapy,

about as burned out as a banked²² furnace. Any "child

wonder" is a forced affair: think of the dreams Mama

must have poured through his engrams. She's hurt:

"Oh, I'll never forgive myself! If I have ruined my

child, I will never forgive myself. My child, that's to be

the world's greatest violinist!" or "Oh, you brute! You

have struck me! You have injured our child. I'll show

you. I'll make him the greatest child pianist in all

Brooklyn! He's to be a beautiful child, a wonder child!

And you've struck him, you brute. Oh, I am going to sit

right here until you go away!" (Actual engrams.) The

last computes that the way to get even with Papa is to be

the greatest pianist in all Brooklyn. The child is a great

success—musical ear, practice and great "purpose."

He gets this engram restimulated constantly by his

mother. But then, one day he loses a contest, he knows

suddenly he is no longer a child, that he has failed. His

purpose wavers. He gets headaches (Papa's blow) and is

at last "neurotic" and "burned out." Cleared, he went

21. indolence: the quality or state of disliking or avoiding work;

idleness; laziness.

22. banked: (of a fire) covered with ashes or fuel to make it burn

long and slowly.

333

L. RON HUBBARD

back to being a pianist, not as an "adjusted" person but

one of the best-paid concert pianists in Hollywood.

Music aligned with basic purpose.

Again, in another manic example, a patient who had

been some time in therapy—not the first to do this by

far—raved that he had been "turned on" by Dianetics.

He was walking about a foot off the Earth, chest

punched out and so forth. His glasses suddenly would

not fit him; his eyes were too good. He was a beaming,

powerful case of euphoria. Artificial restimulation had

touched a manic engram, had brought it into key for the

first time in his life. He felt wonderful. The auditor

knew that he was due for a complete comedown within

thirty-six hours to three days (the usual time) because

an artificial restimulation, by therapy, had tapped the

engram. It happened that his grandmother had told her

daughter that she must not abort the child because

someday it might become a "fine upstanding man or

beautiful woman." He was upstanding all right: it al-

most strained his back muscles. Another glance at the

engram in therapy and the manic phase was gone.

This manic, then, as in the case of the boy wonder,

can be assumed to have gathered up available life force

and suddenly channeled it along basic purpose lines,

making a high level of concentration of life force. In the

case of the pianist, his cleared force was well above the

manic force. In the other case, currently in process, a

level has been reached which is approaching the former

level and will surpass it by far.

In the same way, an enthusiasm for a project will channel life force along some purpose line and necessity will suddenly rob back from engrams enough power to carry an individual far, although he has no active manics whatever.

Now we come to the heart of this matter: the prosurvival engram. It is pseudosurvival like all engramic

334

EMOTION AND THE LIFE FORCE

"assists," a mirage which dissolves and leaves burning sands.

Formerly, we spoke mainly of contrasurvival en-

grams. These lie across the dynamics of the individual

and his basic purpose.*

The contrasurvival engram is to the dynamics like a

logjam which dams a necessary river. The dynamic is

blocked in some degree. Any blockage to any one of the

four dynamics (or any section of that spectrum) causes

a dispersal of the flow. It does not make less dynamic,

particularly, but it does misdirect it in the same order

that the river, blocked in its natural flow, might become

five streams going in various directions or flood a

fertile pasture it should merely have watered.

The prosurvival engram alleges to assist (but does

not actually assist) the dynamic on its way. It pretends it

is the dynamic. In the analogy of the river, the prosur-

vival engram would be a canal which took the river's

force and sent it off in some unintended direction. The

prosurvival engram is not a manic; it can and does

contain at times manic phrases.

A contrasurvival engram says, "He's worthless,

damn him, let's kill him."

The prosurvival engram says, "I am saving him." If

* It happens that there is an additional specialization of the

dynamics in everyone, a sort of built-in personal dynamic. It

is a clinical fact that the basic purpose is apparently known to

the individual before he is two years of age: talent and

inherent personality and basic purpose go together as a package. They seem to be part of the genetic pattern. Anyone, by Dianetic reliving, can be sent to the age of two years and consulted about his purpose in life, and he will come forth with a very specific desire as to what he wishes to accomplish in life (and two-year-old activity as reviewed confirmed it). It will be discovered that his later life has followed this general pattern wherever he succeeded. Of fifteen persons examined, the basic purpose was found formed at two years of age, and when cleared these persons used and pursued the basic purpose. —LRH

it added, "He is a darling and a very wonder with the ladies," it would then be a prosurvival with a manic.

In terms of the descriptic which defines the survival dynamic and the suppressor earlier in this book, the contrasurvival engram would be part of the suppressor (an aberrated part) and the prosurvival engram would be part of the dynamic thrust (an aberrated part).

Neither one of these things is actually a sentient and computable portion of survival dynamic or suppressor.

The engram (delirium from illness, perhaps) which says, "I will stay with you, darling, so long as you are sick" is an apparent but wholly shadow-stuff part of the

survival dynamic. But the reactive mind has no sense of

time when restimulated, and this engram, keyed in and

constantly restimulated by some concept in it such as an

odor or a person's voice who may or may not be the

original person, demands that the person who has it be

ill just as he was ill when it was said. This way,

according to our moron, the reactive mind, lies sur-

vival: "I had someone taking care of me when I was ill.

I need someone to take care of me. I must be ill." Here

is the basic pattern of all sympathy engrams. Here is the

basic pattern of the engram which will contain the

chronic psychosomatic illness in any patient. The vari-

ety is, of course, very large but all insist that the

individual who has them be ill in order to survive.

The suppressor-type engram, always contrasurvival,
can be cut into restimulation in exactly the same way as
the prosurvival engram. An engram is an engram and
all the mechanics are the same. The fact that the
analytical mind cannot time the engram can make any
engram seem omnipresent.²³ Time can "heal" the expe-
riences of the analytical mind, perhaps, but not the
reactive mind, which has no time; a fact which makes

23. omnipresent: present everywhere at the same time.

EMOTION AND THE LIFE FORCE

time not the great healer but the great charlatan.²⁴ There

may be no actuality at all in this suppressor data. It is

false data. Such engrams let an individual, for instance,

see a butterfly and then tell him it is dangerous: he then

comes to detest spring because that is the time he sees

butterflies. This engram may say, "You're all against

me. You're against everything I do," which was actually

Mama making a stand against her husband and mother-

in-law. It contains a concept, a recording of the sound

of a sewing machine as well. The individual possessing

this engram hears a sewing machine (if this engram has

at some time been keyed in) at a moment when he is
weary and dull and, looking toward the machine (he
never identifies the actual sound: these engrams protect
themselves), sees his wife. She is the associative restim-
ulator, something his analytical mind, told to scent
danger, picks up as the cause. So he searches around
and finds something he is angry about (something
almost "rational") and begins to tell her she is against
him. Or it can be an engram of such low emotional tone
that it is an apathy, and so he sits down and weeps and
moans that she is against him. If, during "unconscious-
ness" at birth, the doctor said he'd have to spank him,
the individual possessing this engram howls and gets

headaches when he is spanked and, when grown,
spans his children as the strongest suppressor he can
think of.

There is a difference, then, between the pro- and
contra-engrams, particularly the real sympathy pro-
engram and the contra-engram. And it is a difference,
even if we have been long on the road in this chapter,
which is of vital interest to the auditor.

All the real reluctance he will see in preclears

24. charlatan: an assuming empty pretender to knowledge or
skill; a pretentious impostor.

L. RON HUBBARD

during therapy will come from these sympathy prosur-

vival engrams. These add up into some very weird

computations. They tell the patient that he had better

not "get rid of it" and so the patient struggles to retain

his engrams. Such an engram is very common. A

typical case is Mama pushing off Papa, who insists he

cannot afford a child. The struggle injures the child and

in the "unconsciousness" he receives, of course, an

engram: Mama is refusing to get rid of it, Mama is on

baby's side, therefore baby had better do exactly as

Mama says and "not get rid of it." This aligns with purpose, the deepest purpose, to survive. If he gets rid of his engrams, he will die because getting rid of it means death, for Mama said she would die if she got rid of it. Further, on up through life, Mama may have the nasty habit of telling him when he is ill that she will "take care of her baby and protect him from his father," and this makes a new force in the old computation.

Thus we come to the ally computation. This will be the chief and number one struggle of the auditor, the thing which will most elusively resist him, the thing which lies down close to the core of a person.

The ally computation is severe enough that an auditor once said that a man is not victimized by his enemies, he is murdered by his friends. Engrammatically speaking, that is quite true.

The only aberration and psychosomatic ill the patient will continually hold to is a prosurvival engram which is part of an ally computation. That could be written fifty times here without being stressed enough.

It is most important, it is the first thing which the auditor is going to buck when he enters a case, the first thing he must discharge if he wishes therapy to go swiftly. He may have to touch and reduce many contrasurvival engrams, for they come swiftly enough when

EMOTION AND THE LIFE FORCE

called, before he can even get an idea of what the ally

computation is. But when he gets an ally computation

he had better run it out and discharge all its emotion or

the case will hang fire.

The ally computation is the reactive mind level

moronism that survival depends on Grandma or Aunt

Sue or some serving maid thirty years dead. The attend-

ants of the individual when he was ill, the people who

begged his pregnant mother to stop trying to abort him,

or fed him or otherwise tried to keep him from being

hurt: these are the allies.

The reactive mind operates wholly on two-valued

logic. Things are life or they are death, they are right or

they are wrong, just as the engram wording states. And

the personnel of engrams are friends or enemies. The

friends, the allies, mean life! The enemies mean death!

There is no middle ground. Any restimulator or associ-

ated restimulator for the prosurvival engram means life:

and any restimulator or associated restimulator for a

contrasurvival engram means death!

The auditor, of course, may be a really restimulative

person (one who is a pseudofather, a pseudolover of

Mother before birth, etc.) but he is always an associative restimulator, the person who may take away these terribly, horribly vital things, the pro-survival engrams.

The contra-survival engrams outbalance this factor and, of course, the analytical mind of the pre-clear is always all for the auditor and the therapy.

The trouble comes when the analytical mind is shut down by re-stimulation and the auditor is seeking the ally computation. Then the pre-clear's reactive mind dodges and avoids.

The ally computation, however, is simple to trace.

And it is very vital to trace it, for this computation may contain the bulk of all the emotional discharge of the

case. Freeing the complete ally computation wholly

339

L. RON HUBBARD

before basic-basic is reached is wholly impossible. But

as much life force as possible must be restored to the

preclear to make the case work well.

For the ally computation, above all things, encysts

the life force of the individual. Here is caught and held

the free feeling, the very heartbeat of life itself. A

preclear is only placed in apathy by ally computations.

The body can be almost dead in the presence of antag-

onism and still rally and fight. But it cannot fight its

friends. The law of affinity has been aberrated into an
entrance into the reactive engram bank. And that law,
even when twisted with the murky shadows of unreason
in the reactive mind, still works. It is a good law. It is
too good when the auditor is trying to find and reduce
engrams which are making the preclear ache with
arthritis or bleed internally with stomach ulcers. Why
can't he "get rid of" his arthritis? Mama said, when
she gracefully fell over a pig, "Oh, I can't get up!
Oh, my poor, poor baby. Oh, my baby! I wonder if I
hurt my poor, poor baby. Oh, I hope my baby is still
alive! Please, God, let him live. Please, God, let me
keep my baby. Please!" Only the god to which she

prayed was the reactive mind, which makes one of its

idiot computations on the basis of everything is equal

to everything. A holder, a prayer for life, a thor-

oughly bruised baby's spine, Mama's sympathy, a pig

grunt, a prayer to God: all these things are equal to

the reactive mind and so we have a fine case of

arthritis, particularly since our patient sought "sur-

vival" by marrying a girl with a voice just like

Mama's sounded when he was in the womb. Ask him to

get rid of his arthritis? The reactive mind says "NO!"

Arthritis is a baby is a pig grunt is a prayer to God is

wife's sympathy is being poor is Mama's voice and all

these things are desirable. He's kept himself poor and

he's kept his arthritis and he married a wife who

340

EMOTION AND THE LIFE FORCE

would make a harlot²⁵ blush and this is pro-survival:

wonderful stuff, survival, when the reactive mind com-

putes it! And in the case of the ulcers, here was baby

poked full of holes (Mama is having a terrible time

trying to abort him so she can pretend a miscarriage,

and she uses assorted household instruments thrust into

the cervix²⁶ to do it) and some of the holes are through

and through this baby's abdomen and stomach: he will

live because he is surrounded by protein and has a food

supply and because the sac is like one of these

puncture-proof inner tubes that seals up every hole.

(Nature has been smart about attempted abortion for a

long, long time.) It so happens that Mama in this case

was not a monologist, although most of Mama's activ-

ity on this line is a dramatization and has conversation

with it; but it also so happens that Grandma lives next

door and she comes over unexpectedly, shortly after the

latest effort to make baby meet oblivion. Grandma may

have been an attempted abortionist in her day but now

she is old and highly moral and besides, this baby is not

giving her any morning sickness; she therefore finds

much to censure²⁷ when she sees a bloody orangewood

stick in the bathroom. Baby is still "unconscious."

Grandma berates Mama: "Any daughter of mine who

would do such a horrible thing should be punished by

the vengeance of God" (the principle of, "don't do as I

do, do as I say," for who gave Mama this dramatization

in the first place?) "and driven through the streets. Your

baby has a perfect right to live: if you don't think you

can take care of him, / certainly will. Now you go right

on through with your pregnancy, Eloisia, and when that

25. harlot: a prostitute.

26. cervix: a neck-shaped, anatomical structure, as the narrow

outer end of the uterus.

27. censure: criticize severely.

341

L. RON HUBBARD

baby is born, if you don't want him, you bring him to

me! The idea of trying to hurt that poor thing!" And so,

when our bleeding ulcer case gets born, there is

Grandma and there is security and safety. Grandma is

here the ally (and she can become an ally in a thousand

different ways, any of them based on the principle that

she talks sympathetically to baby when he is out like a

flounder,28 and fights Mama in his favor when he is

"unconscious"), and when he grows to boyhood he can

be found placing a large dependency on Grandma,

much to the parental wonder (for they never did any-

thing to little Roger, not they). And Roger will, when

Grandma is dead, develop bleeding ulcers to get her back.

Whoever is a friend is to be clasped to the bosom

with bonds of steel, says this great genius, the reactive

mind, even though it kills the organism.

The ally computation is a little more than the mere

idiot calculation that anyone who is a friend can be kept

a friend only by approximating the conditions wherein

the friendship was realized. It is a computation on the

basis that one can only be safe in the vicinity of certain

people and that one can only be in the vicinity of

certain people by being sick or crazy or poor and

generally disabled.

Show an auditor a child who was easily frightened

by punishment, who was not at ease around home and

who had allies who seemed more important to him than

the parents (grandparents, aunts, boarders,²⁹ doctors,

nurses, etc.) and who was sickly, and the auditor can

usually spring into view an attempted abortion back-

ground because, more often than not, it is there. Show

an auditor a child who showed enormous attachment for

28. out like a flounder: in a faint; unconscious. (Flounder is a slang term for the corpse of a drowned man.)

29. boarders: people who regularly get meals, or room and meals, at another's home for pay.

342

EMOTION AND THE LIFE FORCE

one parent and detestation for the other and the auditor

can bring out a background wherein one person wanted to

get rid of or hurt the child and the other parent did not.

The ally computation, then, is important. And it is

also very secret. Trying to get the real allies in a case is

often a great struggle. It may be that a patient had eight

or ten of these allies in some cases and tried desperately

to hold to them, and when he could not, searched and

found mates and friends who were approximations of

his allies. A wife, around whom A is continually ill but

whom he will not leave under any circumstances, is

usually a pseudoally, which is to say she approximates

some mannerism of the actual ally, has a similar voice

or even a similar first name. B, who will not leave a job

and yet who is working far below his ability level in

life, may be there because his boss is a pseudoally;

further, he may be working at this job because an ally

had a similar station in life and he is being the ally.

Anything which can so far corrupt a person's life is naturally going to be difficult to some degree in therapy, for when he is asked to get rid of his ally computation, it is as likely that he will give any clue to it as it is that he would have spit in his ally's face.

These prosurvival engrams containing the ally computation can be described as those which contain personnel who defended the patient's existence in moments when the patient conceived that his existence was under attack. This need not be an actual, rational defense: it may only be that the content of the engram seems to indicate it; but it can safely be assumed that the worst ally computations are those when the life of the patient

was defended against attackers by the ally. Most ally

computations have their genesis³⁰ in the prenatal area.

30. genesis: the way in which something comes to be; beginning;

origin.

343

L. RON HUBBARD

The ally computation is sought as the first action in

any case and new ally computations are sought through-

out a case. ^

These sympathy prosurvival engrams, which make

up the ally computations, vary only in intensity from

the standard prosurvival engram. A standard prosurvival engram is bad only because someone has expressed friendship for the patient or another person when he was "unconscious": it is difficult to discover and clear even when it actually has been entirely misread—which is to say that the prosurvival content was intended for another person than the patient but is only misconstrued by the patient. If the patient is "unconscious" and somebody says, "He is a good guy," actually meaning another person entirely, the egocentric" reactive mind takes the phrase to have been meant for oneself. In the sympathy prosurvival engram (the ally computation is composed only of these) there

is an actual defense of the person from danger by some

ally: this can vary from a dramatic scene wherein

somebody has been bent on killing the patient and the

ally has arrived, like the cavalry, in the nick of time, to

the incident wherein the patient was simply saved (or

assumed he was being saved) from destruction such as

drowning, being run over, etc. And the sympathy pro-

survival engram is only as good as its content in words,

for it does not rationalize the action. Engrams have

been discovered where the patient was actually being

murdered but the content was such that he was

convinced he was being saved: such a case would

include what auditors call a "mutual A A"—a father

and mother together attempting an abortion, A A mean-

ing "attempted abortion" —wherein Mama was in utter

31. egocentric: viewing everything in relation to oneself; self-

centered.

344

EMOTION AND THE LIFE FORCE

agreement and disposed herself for the operation but

became frightened and began to scream about "her

precious baby" in an effort to save herself from being

injured: patients with this sort of sympathy prosurvival

engram can get pretty confused about Mother.

The insidious³² aspects of the sympathy pro-survival

engrams are several: (1) they are aligned with the

fundamental dynamic of survival in the most literal

sense and are therefore aligned with the purpose of the

individual; (2) they are like cysts round which centra-

survival engrams serve as the outer shell; (3) they most

sharply affect the health of the individual and are

always the basic factor beneath the psychosomatic ill-

ness which the individual displays; (4) they cause the

reactive mind (but not the analytical mind) to resist

therapy; and (5) they are the largest drain upon the life

force units.

In (3) above, the pro-survival sympathy engram does

more than just carry forward the injury which becomes
the psychosomatic illness. Any engram is a bundle of
data which includes not only all perceptics and speech
present but also metering for emotion and state of
physical being. The last, the state of physical being,
would be serious enough. This metering says that struc-
ture was so and such at the moment this sympathy
prosurvival engram was received. In the case of an
embryo engram, then, the reactive mind, in forcing the
engram back into action, may also force the structural
pattern back upon the body: this occasionally results in
retarded development, embryo-like skin, embryo-type
back curvature, and so forth. The glands themselves,

being physical organs, are also sometimes so sup-

pressed in the reactive mind's effort to approximate all

32. insidious: spreading or developing or acting inconspicuously

but with harmful effect.

345

L. RON HUBBARD

conditions. The underdeveloped gonads,³³ the sublevel

thyroid, the wasted limb: all these things often come

from sympathy pro-survival engrams. This is so observ-

ably the case that when an individual is being cleared,

growth process begins to bring the body up to genetic blueprint even before the case is completed: the change which takes place in the physical being of the patient is sometimes so remarkable and so marked that it is far more startling than the mere disappearance of a catalog of psychosomatic ills such as coronary, ulcers, arthritis, allergies, and so on.

It would be supposed that anything powerful enough to twist the physical blueprint and keep the body from developing or make it keep on growing where it should have stopped would resist any therapy. This is true only in a most limited sense. Once one is aware of what suppresses a case, one can go about vanquishing the

suppressors, because a pro-survival engram, unlike a

contra-survival engram, has an Achilles' heel.³⁴

The most workable answer now known to Dianetics

lies in the principle of life force units and a technique

for throwing them back into circulation. The pro-sur-

vival engram collects and holds such units, according to

this theory, and collapses when its power to hold units

is broken.

Entering a case, then, where one has a chronic

psychosomatic illness (and what case doesn't have, even

though it is as slight as an occasional fit of sneezing or

33. gonads: bodily organs that produce gametes (mature sperm

or eggs capable of participating in fertilization).

34. Achilles' heel: a portion, spot, area or the like, that is especially or solely vulnerable. In Greek mythology, Achilles was an illustrious Greek warrior. He had been dipped in the river Styx (one of the mythological rivers of hell) by his mother, which rendered him invulnerable except in the heel by which she held him. He was fatally wounded by an arrow in that heel.

346

EMOTION AND THE LIFE FORCE

hiccups), the auditor first scouts it, going through a returning routine to find out how early he can get for material, how the state of the sonic recall is, how occluded is the youth of the person and so forth. When

he has made this survey, he begins to make his compu-

tation on the case: first, was the child happy with both

Father and Mother, and if not, where was the child

happiest? (There will be where the allies live.) Was

either parent an unreasonably powerful factor in shap-

ing the thinking powers of the child? Here again may be

an ally, even if a poor one. Did the patient have

grandparents or other relatives; how did he feel toward

them? All this data will be more or less occluded and

warped by demon circuits and is about as reliable as the

data this patient will inevitably try to get from "loopy"

parents or relatives, who not only do not know what

happened to him but might be most anxious not to have anything discovered.

What really did happen? Don't let patients ask relatives or parents anything if you can help it, for these are restimulators in the extreme and never have any data you can use; the patient is just trying to use them as bypass circuits to avoid the pain of recalling things himself. When the case is finished he will no longer want to hound³⁵ these people, and if you want a check for research reasons, get one of the relatives and put him through therapy.

The auditor now has some slight idea of who the allies may be. And here comes the Achilles' heel of the

ally computation:

Any ally computation may have included the loss of

the ally. And the loss of the ally may be the trigger

35. hound: hunt or chase with or as with hounds; chase or follow

continually; nag.

347

L. RON HUBBARD

which will start chain fission.³⁶ For what we are going

to try to do is blow off or discharge as many life force

units as possible from the reactive engram bank and

weaken it. Every charge we get from the bank will

reinforce the ability of the patient to carry on in existence and will aid his analytical mind to get into the engram bank. Hence, discharging these frozen units is a vital and important part of therapy and the condition of the case will improve in direct ratio to the number of these units so discharged.

Consider these life units as free life energy: an engram capturing them can set itself up, for all intent, as a life force. It is then an entity and only then. The demon circuits, the valence walls³⁷ (which compartment the analyzer, so to speak, and bring about multivalence), the force and power of the engram itself are all dependent, according to theory and as observed in

practice, upon usurped life units.

To free these units is the primary task of therapy; to relieve pain from the engrams is the secondary task; to make the patient comfortable during therapy does not even rank, though there is no need he should be uncomfortable. The dual character of therapy, then, is actually two sections of the same thing: relieving engrams.

There is this dual nature in engrams, however, that they have painful emotion (where that means usurped life force) and physical pain (where that means pain of injury, illness, etc.).

36. chain fission: (fission means a splitting apart, dividing)

larger atoms such as atoms of uranium can fission (split) into

smaller atoms such as atoms of iodine and bromine. This process

can be designed so that each fission will cause another fission,

thereby setting off a chain reaction. The atomic bomb is an

example of a chain fission. Used figuratively.

37. valence wall: a sort of protective mechanism by which the

charge of the case is compartmented to permit the individual to

work at least some of the time.

EMOTION AND THE LIFE FORCE

To get as early as possible as fast as possible and

find basic-basic is the direction and intent of therapy in

its first stages: to accomplish this (when it cannot be

done immediately merely by returning and finding

basic-basic which can and always should be tried) one

relieves the case and robs the engram bank by releasing

life units (painful emotion captured them) from the ally

computations.

In brief, the entire intent and act of therapy is to find

the earliest engram and erase it and then proceed to

erase all other engrams as engrams so they can no

longer be discovered (they refile in the standard bank

but it takes a genius to find them there and a search of

hours and hours: hence, to the auditor they can be said

to have "erased," for they are no longer engrams and
are now experience). The first, last and only job of the
auditor is to find the earliest engrams available and
erase them. That cannot be said too often or too
strongly.

The various ways to accomplish this are the tech-
niques and arts of therapy. Anything which brings
about this erasure of engrams in place and their refiling
as experience is useful and legitimate whatever it in-
cludes. An engineer intends to remove a mountain
which is in the way of a river: his intent and all his effort
is directed toward moving that mountain. The ways and
means employed by him to move that mountain—by steam

shovel, hydraulic rams³⁸ or dynamite—are the art and

techniques applied to do the job.

There are three degrees of knowledge in our task:

(1) in Dianetics, we know the goal: we know the results

which come about when that goal is attained; (2) we

38. hydraulic rams: devices by which the energy of descending

water is utilized to raise a part of the water to a height greater

than that of the source.

349

L. RON HUBBARD

know the character of the obstructions between us and

the goal, but of the exact character of the obstruction

we can never learn too much; (3) the art and technique

of removing the obstruction between us and the goal are

legitimate only by the test of whether or not they

remove the obstruction.

The method of attack on the problem can always be

improved by learning more about the character of the

factors in the problem, and by learning new arts and

techniques which can be applied to the problem, and by

studying to improve our skill in practicing existing arts

and techniques. The currently existing art and tech-

nique is not to be considered optimum merely because it

does the job. The time and ease of work could be

shortened by new techniques or advancing skills for old

techniques.

All this is interjected so that Dianetics, unlike Aris-

totelian logic³⁹ and natural history, will be recognized

as an advancing, changing science. It is interjected at

this place because no auditor should just sit back with

this routine and never try to improve the routine.

Very well. This is the routine. It works but it can

never be made to work too quickly or too well.

1. Place the patient in reverie and scout into the

prenatal area to see if engrams are available for

lifting without further work. If they are there

and can be found, take the charge out of them

and erase them if possible. Do not try to erase

anything as remote from basic-basic as birth

unless the file clerk insists on presenting birth.

39. Aristotelian logic: Aristotle's method of logic, characterized

by the syllogism, an argument or form of reasoning in which two

statements or premises are made and a logical conclusion is

drawn from them. Example: All mammals are warmblooded

(major premise); whales are mammals (minor premise); there-

fore, whales are warmblooded (conclusion).

In other words, get the subject into the prenatal

area and look for the earliest engrams. Do not

ask for specific instances, particularly for

something like birth; just take whatever is pre-

sented. If you can't get back early, take step 2.

2. Scout the patient's life while he is in reverie (do

this in any event sooner or later if the case slows

down but only if it slows down to a point where

early engrams are either not reducing or are

without any emotion). Establish in this scout

whoever may have been depended upon by the

patient, and be suspicious always that he has not

told you the really important allies, but do not

tell him you are suspicious.

3. Find out when the patient lost any ally through

death or departure. Approach this moment and

one way or another, by getting earlier material

and this incident or getting just this incident,

discharge the sorrow of loss out of the inci-

dents. Treat any incident in which the ally

departs or the patient is separated from the ally

as an engram and erase it accordingly or run it

until it has no "charge" of sorrow on it. If the

"charge" holds, suspect an early moment of

sorrow about this ally and find that and treat it

as an engram.

4. First, last and always, the job is to get basic-

basic and then ever afterwards the currently

existing earliest moment of pain or sorrow, and

to erase every incident as it is advanced by the

file clerk or found by repeater technique.

5. Any incident that hangs fire always has a simi-

lar incident earlier, and the patient should be

taken earlier for the prior incident when an

engram will not "reduce" on recounting.

6. At any time the engrams start to become emo-

tionless in tone, even though they reduce, sus-

pect another ally computation and, early or late

in the patient's life, get it and reduce it at least

until the emotional discharge is gone. Do not

get everything in a case restimulated by chang-

ing from an unreduced incident to something

which looks more fruitful, but reduce every-

thing in view before you go looking for a new

sorrow charge.

7. It is better to reduce an emotionless early en-

gram than it is to upset the case by hounding

him for an ally computation when a cunning

search fails to reveal one in sight. Erasing early

emotionless engrams will eventually bring a

new ally computation into sight if you occasion-

ally look for it.

8. Consider that any holdup on a case, any unwill-

ingness to cooperate, stems from ally computa-

tion.

9. Treat all demon circuits as things held in place

by life force units absorbed into the bank and

address the problem of demon circuits by re-

leasing charges of sorrow.

10. Consider that loss by death or departure of an

ally is identical with a death of some part of the

patient and that the reduction of a death or

departure of an ally will restore that much life

back to the patient. And remember that great

sorrow charges are not always death or depar-

ture but merely may be a sudden reversal of

stand by the ally.

Always keep in mind that that person who most

nearly identifies himself with the person of the patient,

such as a sympathetic mother or father or grandparent

or relative or friend, is considered by the reactive mind

to be a part of the person himself and that anything happening to this sympathetic character can be considered to have happened to the patient. In such a case, where an ally has been found to have died of cancer, you may occasionally find the patient to have a sore or scaly place where he supposed the ally's cancer to have been.

The reactive mind thinks in identities only. The sympathetic prosurvival engram identifies the patient with another individual. The death or loss (by departure or denial) of the other individual is therefore a reactive mind conviction that the patient has suffered some

portion of death.

Emotional charges may be contained in any engram:

the emotion communicates, in the same tone level, from

the personnel around the "unconscious" person into his

reactive mind. Anger goes into an engram as anger,

apathy as apathy, shame as shame. Whatever people

have felt emotionally around an "unconscious" person

should be found in the engram which resulted from the

incident. When the emotional tone of personnel in an

engram is obviously angry or apathetic from the word

content and yet the patient, recounting, does not feel it,

there is something somewhere which has a valence wall

between the patient and the emotional tone, and that

valence wall is nearly always broken down by the
discovery of an engram with a sorrow charge sometime
earlier or later in a patient's life.

The only legitimate reason for entering later por-
tions of a person's life before the prenatal area has been
well exhausted is to search for sorrow discharges occa-
sioned by the death, loss or denial by an ally. And by
"denial," we mean that the ally turned into an active
enemy (real or imaginary) of the patient. The counter-
part of the ally, the pseudoally, is a person whom the
reactive mind has confused with the real ally. The

L. RON HUBBARD

death, loss or denial by a pseudoally can contain a
sorrow charge.

According to theory, the only thing which can lock
up life units is this emotion of loss. If some method
existed of doing nothing but freeing all life units, the
physical pain could be neglected.

A Release is brought about, one way or another, by
freeing as many life units as possible from periods of
loss with minimal address to actual engrams.

The loss of an ally or pseudoally need contain no
other physical pain or "unconsciousness" than the loss

itself occasions. This is serious enough. It makes an

engram.

Any person who is suddenly discovered to be occluded in a patient's life can, with some reliability, be considered an ally or pseudoally. If, either while remembering or returning, large sections of a patient's association with another person are missing, that person can be called an occluded person. It is a better guarantee of ally status if the occlusion surrounds the death of the person or a departure from or a denial by that person. It is possible for occlusion to take place, also, for punishment reasons; which is to say, the occluded person may also be an archenemy. In such a

case, however, any memory present will concern the death or defeat or illness of the occluded person. Occlusion of a person's funeral in the memory of a patient would theoretically label that person an ally or pseudoally. Recollection of the funeral of a person but occlusion of pleasant association might tend to mean that the person was an enemy. Such rules are tentative. But it is certain that any occlusion means that a person had a vast and unrevealed significance in a patient's life which should be explained.

It may be remarked at this point that the recovery of the patient will depend in large measure on the life units

EMOTION AND THE LIFE FORCE

freed from his reactive bank. This is a discharge of
sorrow and may be quite violent. The usual practice is
to "forget" such things and the "sooner forgotten, the
sooner healed." Unfortunately this does not work: it
would be a happy thing if it did. Anything forgotten is a
festering sore when it has despair connected with it.

The auditor will find that every time he locates that
archdenyer, "forget it," he will get the engram it
suppressed; when he can't locate the engram and yet
has found a somatic, a "forget it" or "don't think about

it" or "can't remember it" or "don't remember it" or
some other denier will be sitting there in the context of
the engram. Forgetting is such unhealthy business that
when a thing has been "put out of mind," it has been
put straight into the reactive engram bank and in there
it can absorb life units. This "loopy" computation, that
forgetting things makes them bearable, is incredible in
view of the fact that the hypnotist, for instance, gets
results with a positive suggestion when he puts one of
these deniers on the end of it. That has been known
now for a great many eons: it was one of the first things
the author was taught when he studied Asiatic practices.
From India it long ago filtered to Greece and Rome and

it has come to us via Anton Mesmer;⁴⁰ it is a fundamen-

tal principle in several mystic arts; its mechanics were

known even to the Sioux⁴¹ medicine man. Yet people at

large, hitherto unguided about it, and perhaps because

they lacked any real remedy, believed that the thing to

do with sorrow was to "forget it." Even Hippocrates⁴²

40. Anton Mesmer: (1734-1815) Austrian physician who devel-

oped the practice of mesmerism—hypnotism.

41. Sioux: of or having to do with a member of a tribe of

American Indians living on the plains of northern United States

and southern Canada.

42. Hippocrates: (460?-370? B.C.) Greek physician, known as

"the father of medicine."

355

L. RON HUBBARD

remarks that the whole of an operation is not finished

until the patient has recounted the incident to all of his

friends in turn, and while this is inadequate therapy, it

has been, like the confessional, a part of popular

knowledge for lo, these many ages; yet people persist in

suppressing sorrow.

The auditor will many times in his activity be

begged by a patient "not to talk to me about so-and-

so's death." If he is foolish enough to heed this tearful

plea when the patient is in reverie, then the auditor is

actively blocking a release. That is the first incident he

should get!

Perhaps it would be bad, without Dianetic tech-

nique, to approach such things; but with our art it is

easy not only to enter the actual moment of the incident

but to then recount it until the tears and wailings are but

echoes in the casebook. Treating that loss like an

engram, recounting it until it is no longer painful

emotionally, is to give back to the patient vitality he has

not had since the incident took place. And if the inci-

dent does not ease on a dozen recountings, slide back

down its sorrow track, just as you would with any other engram, and find earlier and earlier moments. A patient starting to discharge sorrow at the age of fifty may find himself, two hours later, down in the basic area recounting the primary moment of sorrow, at the moment when the lost ally first became an ally. If the auditor can get the whole chain on any one ally, exhausting sorrow from it from later to earlier, taking all the sorrow he can get from every incident and stripping the entire series of engrams of their charge, he may, in a few hours' work, rid the case of enough emotional charge to then begin an orderly erasure.

Please observe this difference: the Achilles' heel of

the ally computation can be considered late on the chain

of incidents which concern that ally, which is to say that

356

EMOTION AND THE LIFE FORCE

we have a funnel here, upright in time, which can be

entered late and followed early: the Achilles' heel of the

contrasurvival engram chain is in the earliest incidents,

exactly the reverse of the emotionally painful engrams.

To regain, out of the engram bank, life units so that

enough free emotion is available to release or clear a

case, start with late ally or pseudoally losses and work

back earlier.

To release the physical pain of the individual from the engram bank, start early (as close to conception as you can get) and work through to late.

Physical pain in the contrasurvival chain can suppress painful emotion in the prosurvival chain.

Painful emotion in the prosurvival chain can suppress physical pain in the contrasurvival engrams.

If you were to draw a picture of the prenatal area of the reactive engram bank, it would appear somewhat as follows: a long line drawn horizontally, representing time, would have dark blots on it representing engrams; one end of the line would represent conception, the other end birth. Above this line would lie a dark area,

like a heavy mist, extending from one end of the line to the other and dropping down almost to it. Above this dark mist would lie another horizontal line, the apparent time track along which the patient returns. The first long line is the actual time track; the mist is painful emotion; the uppermost dark line is what the patient mistakes and uses for his time track.

The painful emotion is, of course, occasionally tapped in the prenatal area itself, and the opportunity of dispersing it by so discovering prenatal emotional charges should never be overlooked by the auditor: indeed, once much of the later-life painful emotion is

discharged, a great deal of painful emotion can be
found amongst the early engrams. The better part of
this mist, and the first part the auditor often contacts, is

357

L. RON HUBBARD

in late life: although it originates, as charge, in late life,
it can be said to lie on this prenatal area.

Moments of loss, the loss by death or departure of
any of the patient's allies, and the loss of an ally
because he turns against the patient, trap these emotional
charges and intervene them between the patient and
actuality. Although the moment of loss was postbirth,

in infancy, childhood, adolescence, adulthood, it

was retroactive in suppressing early engrams.

This aspect of painful emotion is a key-in of the

early incidents by the moment of loss. In other words, a

moment of great loss suppresses the individual on the

Tone Scale to a point where he approximates the level

of early engrams and these, keyed in, hold the units of

charge thereafter.

Life units so seized are held and are the life of

engrams. As in electricity, a positive charge glances

away from a positive charge: like charges repel each

other. The analyzer, operating, it can be said for anal-

ogy, on the same kind of charge as that contained in the

engram, glances away from the engram, which remains

thereby unknown and intact.

As the individual returns into the area of the early

engrams—which are held keyed in by virtue of the

seized charges from late incidents—he can quite com-

fortably pass by enormous quantities of aberrative ma-

terial without even suspecting it is present. However,

when the late moments of painful emotion are released,

the auditor can go immediately into the early area and

find engrams of physical pain which he had not hitherto

been able to uncover.

Actually the late moments and the early moments

are both engrams: The news or observation of loss shuts

down the analyzer, and everything which then enters it

is engramic and is filed in the reactive mind. Because

of sight and a memory of activity which is connected to

358

EMOTION AND THE LIFE FORCE

the present, all of which serves to keep an individual

oriented, a person can often recall the moment of loss,

whereas he cannot recall prenatal material, for he

lacked in that area any connection with orienting factors

which would impinge themselves on the analyzer.

While the prenatal infant definitely, especially in the

late stages, has an analyzer, experience and memory
are not coordinated and the existence of engrams is not
then suspected by the analytical mind. This is not true
of the later periods of life, particularly those after
speech has been learned and is being used. The fact of
the matter is that this later-life ability to recall sur-
rounding circumstances without feeling any extremity
of pain also serves to hide here the existence of an
actual engram: a person feels that he knows all about
such a moment of loss analytically: actually he has no
contact with the engram itself, which contains a mo-
ment of "unconsciousness" of a lesser depth than that,
for instance, of the anesthetic variety. Childhood losses

of allies, however, can be so entirely occluded that the

allies themselves are not remembered.

The auditor will find very late engrams easy to

contact. And he will also discover something else. The

patient may not be, as he is returning to such a moment

of loss, occupying his own body. This "phenomenon"

has been known for several thousand years and even the

latest mention of it merely said that it was "interesting"

without making any further effort to find out why a

person, returned to an area in hypnotic regression,

sometimes could be found within himself (which is to

say, seeing things as though he were himself) and

sometimes saw things there and himself included as part

of the scenery (as though he had a detached view).

Because we have discovered that a natural function of

the mind is to return in an awake state to past incidents

does not alter the fact that we encounter aspects hitherto

359

L. RON HUBBARD

known as mysterious "phenomena" of drug dreams

and hypnotism. We are not by any means practicing

hypnotism. So, this means that hypnotism and Dia-

netics use similar abilities of the mind—it does not

mean that such abilities belong in the field of hypno-

tism. And one of the various aspects of the return is that

it occasionally—or, in some patients, continually—
encounters areas where the patient is "outside" his
body. These exteriorized views of self have two explanations. One of them is valence, whereby the patient has taken unto himself the identity of another person and sees the scene through that other person's eyes; the other is exteriorization, in which painful emotion is present in such quantity that the patient cannot occupy himself. That painful emotion may stem from past or future incidents to the moment when the patient is witnessing a scene to which he has been Dianetically returned. On several recountings of the scene, the pa-

tient will come nearer and nearer to an occupation of

his body until at last he sees the scene from within his

body. At times no emotional discharge (tears, etc.)

takes place until the patient has gone over the incident

several times and until he is within his own body. It is as

though, returned, he had to scout the ground to find out

if it was safe to occupy himself. If, after a few recount-

ings, no discharge such as tears takes place, then the

emotion is suspended elsewhere, earlier or later but

usually much later. Exteriorization because of emotion

is the same as exteriorization because of physical pain

to all intents and purposes of the auditor. When he

encounters a case which, all the way up and down the

track, is continually exterior, he should address his skill

to the release of moments of painful emotion.

All patients seem to have the idea that time heals

and that some incident of ten or twenty years ago no

longer has any effect upon them. Time is a great

360

EMOTION AND THE LIFE FORCE

charlatan, not a great healer, as has been remarked.

Time, by the processes of growth and decay, alters, and

environment introduces new faces and activities and

thus alters the restimulators: a moment of painful emo-

tion in the past has, like any other engram, its own

restimulators and is, in addition, holding keyed in all

the early engrams which relate to it so that their restim-

ulators also work: every restimulator has a set of restim-

ulators which are associated to it by the analytical

mind, which cannot see the real restimulator. All this

makes a complex pattern, but complex in therapy only

if one does not know the source of aberration. If the

auditor returns the patient to any moment of painful

emotion in the past and runs it as an engram, he will

discover that all its original charge is present and will

discharge.

He will usually find the patient shying away from

any thought of going into the actual engram: the pre-

clear may attempt to detail all manner of bric-a-brac,

his own thoughts, the reasons why it no longer is

painful to him, and so forth. These thoughts and data

before the fact or after it are about as much use in

running an engram as a dissertation about "childhood

illusions" was to the problem of removing aberrations

from the human mind. The auditor who will listen to

these "reasons" and "I remembers" in lieu of running

the engram itself will not get his patient well and will

waste valuable hours of therapy. An auditor who will do

this belongs to the hand-patting school of thought which

believes sympathy has value. He does not belong in an

auditor's chair. It is wasted time, wasted valuable time,

to listen to anything the patient thought or said or did or

believed when the patient should be going into the

engram and running it as an engram. Certainly there is

a necessity to find out, from the patient's talk, where

361

L. RON HUBBARD

that engram is, but once it is located, all else is dross.⁴³

Take a moment when a child is notified of his

parents' deaths. The auditor learns that the parents died

when the child was two years of age. He can then

deduce, without further trouble or questions, that some-

body must have told his patient about the death of the
parents, that there was a precise moment when the
patient, then an infant, learned about that death. Re-
counting the matter in present time—without being
returned—the patient is using all the intervening years
as buffers against the painful emotion. The auditor
returns the patient, without further preamble than the
usual routine of putting the patient into reverie, to the
moment when the patient learned of the death of the
parents. The patient may do a little fumbling to orient
himself in the past, but shortly he will have a contact
with the instant somebody informed him. Be assured, if
that child loved his parents at all, that an engram exists

here. The engram starts at the first moment the child is

informed, when the analyzer can be expected to have

shut down. The end of the engram is a moment, an

hour, a day or even a week later when the analyzer

again turned on. Between the first moment of analytical

attenuation and a regain of analytical power is the

engram. The first minutes of it are the most severe.

Running an hour of it (an hour of incident, not of

therapy) should be more than ample. Most auditors run

only the first few minutes several times to get a test of

whether or not there is going to be any emotional

discharge. Run such a period of loss which must con-

tain painful emotion exactly as you would run a period

of physical pain and "unconsciousness" with another

source. For the period of painful emotion is an "uncon-

scious" period just as certainly as if the patient had

43. dross: inferior, trivial or worthless matter.

362

EMOTION AND THE LIFE FORCE

been struck with a club. If the emotion in this period

can be contacted with four or five recountings (each

time starting at the beginning, making sure the patient

is returned and in contact with all perceptics of the

incident, and running it for what it is, an engram), then

the engram should be recounted until the emotion in it

is gone, until the patient is bored with it or even

cheerful about it. If, after four or five recountings the

patient is still well exteriorized, still has not contacted

any emotion, then the charge is suspended elsewhere,

either earlier or later, and tries should be made in terms

of other losses, no matter how many years from the

unyielding incident, to get a discharge. After a dis-

charge is blown off elsewhere, the incident first ad-

dressed, as in the case of the two-year-old who lost his

parents, may discharge. It is certain that sooner or later

such an incident will discharge and it is also certain

that the case will not make much progress in getting

any bulk of physically painful engrams until such a

severe incident is well discharged.

Discharges are contacted, often, in very unlikely

places. Somewhere they contact the surface enough so

that a touch by the returned patient will permit the units

to free, permit engrams to key out and come into view

on the time track in their proper places.

The engram bank becomes severely distorted by

painful emotion and the areas of painful emotion be-

come severely distorted by physical pain elsewhere. The

filing system of the reactive mind is bad. The file clerk

is able to recover and deliver to the auditor only so

many painful emotion engrams or physical pain engrams at a time. They may be disordered in their positions on the track, which is to say, the auditor may contact an early physically painful engram (always his most important job), then contact one in midprenatal, then one postbirth, and thereafter no other engrams of

363

L. RON HUBBARD

the physical pain variety seem to be present (engrams of the physical variety which contain knockouts by accidents, illnesses, surgery or injury). This does not mean that the case is stalemated or that the patient is cleared.

It more likely means that there are incidents of the other engram variety (painful emotion, stemming from loss by death, departure or reversal of allies) which can now be contacted. The auditor then looks for and exhausts the emotional discharge from the loss engrams, usually later in life. These, with the units freed back in circulation, allow earlier physical pain engrams to appear and the auditor reduces each one of these he can contact. As soon as he can no longer find physically painful engrams, he goes back to a search for painful emotion engrams and so forth alternately as necessary. The mind, being a self-protecting mechanism, will sooner

or later block the patient from physical pain engrams if

painful emotion engrams are ready; and it will block

him from painful emotion engrams as soon as physical

pain engrams are ready.

Start late to get painful emotion and work back

early. Start early to get physical pain engrams and work

toward late. And whenever any engram is contacted,

run it until it is no longer troublesome in any way to the

patient or is entirely gone (refiled, but gone for all the

auditor and patient will be able to tell at the moment). If

an incident, after many recountings, shows no signs of

lightening (somatic decreasing or emotion either not

expressed or not decreasing), only then should the

auditor seek another incident. In a painful emotion

engram the charge is often later. In a physical pain

engram the suspension is invariably caused by the

existence of the same phrase in an earlier physical pain

engram which can be contacted, and in such case the

auditor should go back over the phrases which brought

364

EMOTION AND THE LIFE FORCE

him to the somatic until he finds a contact and a lift of

the engram.

It should be extremely clear by this time that ration-

alization⁴⁴ about action or conduct or conditions does

not advance therapy and is of no use beyond occasional

aid in locating engrams. It should be equally clear that

no amount of explanation or hand-patting or evaluation

by the auditor is going to advance the erasure of the

engrams themselves. It should be plain that what a

person thought at the time of the incident was not

aberrative. It should be clear that painful emotion puts

the compartments and demon circuits into the mind and

that the physical engrams hold the aberration and physi-

cal pain in the body.

This entire operation is mechanical. It has nothing

to do with justified thought or shame or reasons. It has

only to do with exhausting the engram bank. When the

bulk of painful emotion is gone, the person is released;

when the engram bank is exhausted of content, the

person is cleared.

The mind is like a fine piece of equipment: as itself

and as a mechanism it is almost impossible to destroy

except by removing some of its parts: engrams do not

remove parts of the mind, they add unnecessary things

to it. Envision a beautiful, streamlined machine, oper-

ating perfectly—that would be the mind without the

additions of pain and painful emotion. Now envision

this beautiful machine in the hands of a crew of mo-

ronic mechanics: they start to work around it and do not

know that what they do affects the machine at all. Now

they see that something is wrong with the machine and

are all unwitting that they have placed various assorted

monkey wrenches, hatpins, old cigar butts and yester-

day's garbage into it and around it. Their first thought

44. rationalization: justified thought—the excuses one makes to

explain his irrational behavior.

365

L. RON HUBBARD

is to put something new on or in the machine to correct

its operation and they add arbitrary gadgets to it in

order to patch up the machine's operation. Some of

these gadgets appear to help the machine (sympathy engrams) and can be used, in the presence of the remaining bric-a-brac, by the machine itself to help its stability. The morons interrupt the fuel supply (painful emotional engrams) or, like the Japanese captain who beat the car with a switch when it would not go, try to goad the machine (punishment drive) and so add more trouble. At last this machine appears to be a hopeless wreck, being almost hidden beneath everything added to it and thrust into it, and the moron mechanics shake their heads and say, "Let's put something else on it or it will stop!" They do and the machine appears to stop (goes insane).

In Dianetics, a workmanlike job of clearing away the debris in and around the machine is performed. It is not done by adding any more debris. The moron mechanics (the content of the reactive mind) seem dismayed at this action, but the machine itself, suddenly aware that something is being done for it which will actually bring it into good running operation again, begins to help. The more debris which is cleared, the better it runs and the less force the moron mechanics have. The course of improvement should be, and is, rapid. We can stop when the machine is running at least as well as the "normal" machine (a Release) or we can stop when we have all the debris out of the machine (a

Clear). When we have effected a Clear, we behold

something which has never been beheld before because

it never before existed in a debris-free state: a perfect

machine, streamlined, powerful, shining, able to adjust

and care for all its own operations without further

therapeutic assistance of any kind.

366

CHAPTER EIGHT

Some Types of Engrams

Two examples of each kind of engram are given so

that the auditor can clearly understand their differences:

Contrasurvival Engram

This is any kind of engram which lies across the dynamics and has no alignment with purpose: fight between Mother and Father shortly after conception. Father strikes Mother in stomach. She screams (first percepts are pain, pressure, sound of blow and scream) and he says, "Goddamn you, I hate you! You are no good. I'm going to kill you!" Mother says, "Please don't hit me again. Please don't. I'm hurt. I'm hurt. I'm frantic with pain!" Father says, "Lie there and rot, damn you! Goodbye!"

In this engram we have a severe aberrative situation:

first, because it is early; second, because its content

says the person who has it is hurt and frantic; third, because it has a holder and is therefore apt to become chronic ("Lie there"); fourth, because it can produce disease ("and rot"); fifth, because it has religious connotation about God and being damned; sixth, because it gives the individual a feeling other people are no good ("you" applies to other people, ordinarily); seventh, because it has an emotional tone, by content, of hostility ("I hate you"); and eighth, because the individual, postbirth, has to live with these restimulative persons, his father and mother. It has other additional effects, giving, like all engrams, two additional and unnecessary valences to the individual, one of

L. RON HUBBARD

which, the mother's, is a coward valence and the other,
the father's, a bully valence. The individual may drama-
tize this in several ways: if he does not dramatize it, he
feels the pain (as he would then be in his own valence)
whenever it is restimulated; if he dramatizes the mother,
he will feel the pain she received, which is a blow in the
stomach (whereas his own was on his head and heart);
if he dramatizes the father, he will be in trouble with
society, to say nothing of his own wife and children.

There is no winning with any engram of any kind, but

so long as a person has engrams, some kinds, the sympathy engram particularly, serve to hold away antagonistic engrams.

The second contrasurvival example is a morning sickness engram where the mother is vomiting so violently that the compression on the child is severe and renders it "unconscious." The mother is vomiting and gasping and saying to herself between spasms, "Oh, why was I ever born! I knew I shouldn't have let him come in me. I knew it, I knew it. It was wrong but he had to do it anyway. Ugh, how nasty. Sex is nasty. It's horrible. I hate sex. I hate men. I hate them. Oh, ugh, it

won't come up, it won't come up. I am so sick at my

stomach and it won't come up."

In this engram we have something a woman might

dramatize if she were pregnant but which a man could

never dramatize as pregnancy but only by being sick at

his stomach. Much morning sickness seems to be an

aberration stemming from engrams: somewhere back in

time some mother may have vomited from food poison-

ing and started the whole thing—perhaps in the days

when man was still in trees. Now note that the mother is

throwing up, that the content of her stomach is being

regurgitated: the engram, however, says that it won't

come up: when this is dramatized with the individual in

his own valence, he experiences pressure on him and

368

SOME TYPES OF ENGRAMS

"unconsciousness" and thus such a dramatization is impossible; when this is dramatized it must be dramatized as the mother, but the action is not dramatized so much as the command and we get a condition where the individual with such an engram, when he is sick, cannot vomit. The command of the engram is more important than the action people take in it. On a reactive level there is no rationality. If this were on a conscious level, where it would not be aberrative, of

course, the action could be mimicked and then would

contain actual vomiting, the action on the conscious

level being more important than the word content.

In therapy, when we encounter this engram, we may

have difficulty entering it because it says that "I

shouldn't have let him come in me," which is a denier.

We also find, with the "It won't come up," a holder.

The engram will most certainly lift the moment these

words and the somatic lift, and these words could not

interrupt the engram. If the engram does not lift, it is

because there is a previous engram with much the same

content (the aberree has a pattern of dramatization

which he repeats over and over and over, giving people

around him many incidents which are more or less alike

except in their point in time). This could be restimu-

lated in the environment (but not in therapy) to a point

where it would cause madness, for "it" may also refer

to the child, who, identifying himself with the word

"it," then cannot rise to present time. In therapy the

engram is somewhat drained of power just by being

touched with the returned analytical mind; further, the

auditor discovers the patient is not moving on the track

and a scout of the situation soon discovers the holder,

for the patient will sooner or later say he "can't come

up" even if the auditor has not guessed it.

In the aberrative sphere, this engram would prob-

ably put a heavy block across the second dynamic and

369

L. RON HUBBARD

we would find the person in whose reactive mind it was

being frigid,' prudish and sharp with children (all of

which go together in various combinations). Further,

we would find an apprehension that "he" was going to

have to do something when he found out it was wrong.

In the psychosomatic sphere it might cause headaches

during or because of coitus or a tendency to nausea

whenever coitus was performed. Any of the phrases of

this engram, like any other phrases in any other en-
gram, would tend to give him both the somatic and the
aberration, providing, of course, the individual was in a
state of low analytical power as found in weariness or
slight illness. Thus, this one is waiting until somebody
says during a future "unconsciousness" period, prefer-
ably in a voice like the mother's would sound through
the walls of the abdomen and womb, "Ugh, how
nasty!" or some other phrase to key it in. "Nastier," by
the way, would not key it in. "Ugly," despite a similar
syllable to "Ugh," would not key it in. The sound of
vomiting itself probably would key it in.

Prosurvival Engram

This could be any engram which, by content only, not by any real aid to the individual containing it, pretended to assist survival. Let us take a coitus engram: Mother and Father are engaged in intercourse which, by pressure, is painful to the unborn child and which renders him "unconscious" (common occurrence, like morning sickness, usually present in any engram bank). Mother is saying, "Oh, I can't live without it. It's wonderful. It's wonderful. Oh, how nice. Oh, do it again!" and Father is saying, "Come!

1. frigid: habitually failing to become sexually aroused, or abnormally repelled by sexual activity: said of a woman.

SOME TYPES OF ENGRAMS

Come! Oh, you're so good. You're so wonderful!

Ahhhh!" Mother's orgasm puts the finishing touch on

the "unconsciousness" in the child. Mother says, "It's

beautiful." Father, finished now, says, "Get up," mean-

ing she should take a douche (they do not know she is

pregnant) and then begins to snore.

Obviously, this is a valuable incident because one

"cannot live without it." Furthermore, "it's beautiful,"

also, "it's wonderful." But it is also extremely painful.

It cannot be followed because it has first something

which beckons part of the mind back, "Come!" and

then, later, tells it to "Get up." Things that are "beau-

tiful" and "wonderful" can cause our patient, not in

therapy, to have an orgasm when she looks at beautiful

and wonderful things, providing they have been so

labeled.

Dramatization of this can be in either the father

valence or the mother valence: to dramatize it in the

personal valence would mean physical pain. Thus, the

individual holding this will be found, varied only by his

other coitus engrams, to be, as Father, disgusted after

the act and telling his partner to "Get up." The emotion

is contained in how the words "Get up" were spoken:

this is a telegraphed emotion out of voice tones, not

word content: engrams always contain both.

In therapy, we find the reactive mind very chary² of

letting this one come to view because, after all, one

"cannot live without it." There are whole classes of

these favorable evaluation phrases in engrams, and

wherever he comes upon one, the auditor will find the

preclear's reactive mind holding out on him. "I don't

want to lose you," "Hold on to this," "I can't let go of

this, I'd fall," and so forth. But this is, after all, just

another engram and "pleasant" or not is aberrative.

2. chary: cautious, wary.

371

L. RON HUBBARD

Masochistic³ and sadistic impulses often stem from
coital engrams which contain those specific things, so
the auditor is not to infer that merely because this coitus
is painful to the child, it will make the child a masochist
or a sadist. If masochism or sadism is present in the
patient, it is caused by engrams which contain rapes,
beating for sexual gratification, enjoyment of pain,
etc., and engrams which homonymically seem to state
that sex and pain are alike, such as a "normal" coitus

which says, "It hurts so good! Hurt me again, Bill.

Hurt me again! Oh, shove it in me, way up! Make it hurt

so I can come." Dramatized by a boy, this might very

well bring about sodomy because the engram is not an

observed action but a series of commands, literally

taken.

Thus, our prosurvival coitus engram, as the first

example of one here, is relatively innocent in a person's

aberrative pattern. But by an accident of words, it could

be very different in its aberrative effect.

The second prosurvival example concerns another

prenatal engram. (One auditor commented, while he

was being cleared, that he "had thought of my life

BD—before Dianetics—as a graph of years, in which

the time from conception to birth occupied one-fiftieth

of the linear distance between conception and present

time, but now think of the prenatal period as occupying

two-thirds of the distance between the beginning and

now." The prenatal area, cleared, at last went back to

being one-fiftieth.)

The mother, subject to high blood pressure, continu-

ally brought about a condition of great pain in the

unborn infant, particularly when she was agitated.

3. masochistic: of, concerning or pertaining to the getting of

sexual pleasure from being dominated, mistreated or hurt physi-

cally or otherwise by one's partner.

372

SOME TYPES OF ENGRAMS

(This is a prime source of migraine headache.) What-

ever it was which agitated her into high blood pressure

at the moment this engram was received was un-

known—and much of the "plot" of prenatal life may

remain unknown for the explanatory data may come

before the pain and the engram, and a complete record-

ing only happens after the instant of pain when some

degree of "unconsciousness" comes about. The

mother, at the beginning of the engram, when pressure

began to build up and stiffen out the unborn child, was weeping. She was by herself. "Oh, how am I ever going to get out of it? Everything looks so drab and colorless to me. Oh, why did I ever start it; I can't possibly go through with it. But I have to, I have to. I would be sick if I didn't. Oh, Lord, everything comes in on me at once. I am utterly trapped. But there, I will go through with it, I'll feel better. I'll be brave and do it. I've got to be brave. I am brave. I am the bravest person in the world. I have to be and I am." The pressure receded.

Exactly what this was about will remain a mystery to the auditor who reduced it, the patient who had it, the author and the reader: such is often the case with an

engram. They are conceived in misunderstanding and they aren't to be understood, save mechanically, and only deleted from the engram bank.

This is a particularly dangerous engram to have for it contains a manic in the words "bravest person in the world." "I," of course, is ordinarily used by the unborn child to be himself when the engram is at last able to affect an analyzer in which there is speech. Before that moment, of course, there is just a recording without word meaning, although even before the words are given meaning, the engram can be aberrative. This is further dangerous because it says, "I'm trapped," and

because it says, "Everything comes in on me at once."

"Trapped" is our enemy, the holder. But "Everything

373

L. RON HUBBARD

comes in on me at once" is a grouper. Further, the

remainder of the content, as an engram, will not com-

pute in the analyzer. It says one "must go through with

it," but that one "cannot go through with it," that one

"would get sick if I didn't go through with it" but that

"it is impossible." Everything being equal to every-

thing, as our moronic enemy, the reactive mind, com-

putes, this engram both repels and attracts therapy: it

brings about a condition of indecision in the analytical

mind which is insufferable.

The individual holding this engram might find him

self—as it acted as aberration—first in the manic por-

tion of being the bravest person in the world and then,

regressed a trifle by a slight change of restimulators

such as his migraine headache getting bad, find himself

utterly undecided about any course of action and with

the telegraphed emotion, contained in the tears, of

being very depressed. But this is prosurvival because it

apparently dictates a way out of a situation. As an

additional factor, it brings, with its phrase about "every-

thing being drab and colorless," colorblindness, at least

in recall, so that the recalled images of the past are "seen" in the mind as having no color. It can bring about, if added to by enough subsequent dramatizations, actual perceptic colorblindness. The whole engram is very likely, when combined with other factors, to place the individual in an institution with all of his somatic turned on (migraine) and, because of the grouper, all other pain he felt in his life turned on as well. This grouper bunches the track of the engram bank all into one place and then puts the individual squarely in that place.

In therapy, when this was contacted, a case which had been classified as "insane" came into a release state of "normal." The patient had been institutional-

ized, was in the fetal position and had regressed physically. That she kept screaming these exact words and

374

SOME TYPES OF ENGRAMS

weeping had been placed on her record as the manifestation of a childhood delusion. The case was opened by repeater technique, using the words she kept screaming, after she had had her attention fixed upon the auditor by loud, monotonous noise. There were some former incidents containing these words which had to be reached before the incident in dramatization would ease. How-

ever, engrams like this are commonly contacted in more

or less "normal" people and are relieved as routine. A

very high degree of restimulation had been experienced

by this patient and several severe "loss" engrams had

occurred which had kept earlier content keyed in.

It might also be remarked in re4 all these "trapped,"

"caught," "can't get out of it" cases (which is to say,

where there are several holders and also a high quantity

of painful emotion) that certain fetal aspects are visible

even when the case is "normal." A shiny skin, a spinal

curvature, only partial development of the gonads: all

are common and one or many such signs may be

present.

Sympathy Engram

The first example is an illness suffered by a patient when he was a small boy. At two years and a half, he was taken ill with pneumonia. He had a considerable background of attempted abortion and the usual engram cargo received from aberrated parents. He was extremely worried about the quarrels and upsets of his own home; numbers of his engrams had been keyed in and amongst them was his pneumonia. His grandmother came and took him to her home because, whenever he was ill, his mother would go away and leave him. The incident was extremely occluded and was only reached

after several late-life painful emotion engrams had been

4. in re: in regard to.

375

L. RON HUBBARD

discharged and after almost a hundred prenatal physical

pain engrams had been released. The grandmother,

when he was crying in delirium, mistook his activity as

demonstrating that he was "conscious," which he was

not, and she sought to reason with him. She said,

"Those people don't really mean to be so bad to you,

honey. I know they have good hearts really. You just do

what they say and believe what they tell you and you'll

be all right. Now promise you'll do that, won't you,

honey." The child, in the last depths of reaction, re-

sponded and promised her he would believe them and

do what they said. "I love you very much," the grand-

mother continued, "and I will take care of you. Now,

don't worry, honey. Forget it now. Just get a little rest."

The phrases contained in this engram, because they

were on a trance level and because they could be held in

place by his fever and pain, produced a very profound

effect on the child. He had to believe whatever was

said. This means literal belief and cost him, for one

thing, much of his sense of humor. Because he wanted

to be all right, he had to believe what his parents said;

the things they had said, prenatally, contained every

kind of a bad datum possible about who was the boss

and how much fun it was to beat the mother and so

forth. All this, then, was made into "true data" which,

because his sympathy engram said so, he had to believe.

No more horrible curse could ever be laid on anyone

than those in sympathy engrams which say, "Believe

what is said," "Believe what is read," "Believe

people," because that engram means literally that the

poor old analyzer will now never be able to evaluate its

own data unless, by utter rebellion, the individual ne-

gates against the whole world, which can occasionally

be done. Let this individual, however, as this one did,

marry a woman who has characteristics similar to his

grandmother's (a pseudograndmother) and he becomes

376

SOME TYPES OF ENGRAMS

prey to (a) the pain and illness, chronic, which he

experienced in his grandmother sympathy engrams

(necessary to get and keep her sympathy); and (b) all his

prenatals, since the pseudograndmother throws him into

his own valence: This makes him quarrel, which makes

his wife fight back, and suddenly this woman is not

pseudograndmother but pseudomother. Exit sanity.

In therapy, when we encounter this sympathy en-

gram at last, it is discovered to have been buried in two

ways: (a) it was aligned with purpose; and (b) it had a

forge tier mechanism on it.

Because of (a), the self-protection of the mind per-

mitted it to give up the engram only when enough

tension was taken off the case to permit the mind to get

along without this engram.

In (b) we have a device which is common in en-

grams. Whenever we try to run an engram which has

somatics enough even to make the preclear roll around

on the couch but which contains no word content, we

suspect a forgetter mechanism. There are evidently people in this world who think that the panacea for all mental discomfort is to forget. "Put it out of my mind," "If I remembered it I would go mad," "Junior, you never remember a thing I tell you," "Nobody can remember anything," "Can't remember," and just plain "I don't know," as well as the master of the family of phrases, "Forget it!": all bar information from the analyzer. A whole case, freshly opened, may keep answering everything with one of these deniers (there are many other kinds of deniers, if you recall). Repeater technique will eventually begin to release the

phrase from various engrams and begin to show up

incidents. To have a grandmother who says, "Forget it"

continually every time a child gets hurt is to be cursed

5. panacea: a remedy for all kinds of diseases or troubles.

377

L. RON HUBBARD

beyond Macbeth.⁶ A forgetter, used by an ally, all by

itself and with practically no pain or emotion present

will submerge data which, in recall, would not be

aberrative but which, so buried—by a forgetter—makes

things said just before it aberrative and literal.

Hence, this engram remained utterly out of sight until the case was almost finished and as soon as it was contacted, the already deintensified reactive bank collapsed and the patient was cleared.

The second example of the sympathy engram concerns a childhood experience of a patient who, at the beginning of therapy, was a remarkably confused individual. Here is an example of a sympathy engram which is not uncommon. (It will not be primary in any ally computation but, because it is often repeated in the same case, becomes aberrative.) This incident occurred when the child had been badly hurt in an accident. He had received a fractured skull and concussion and was

for many days in a coma. He had never learned that such an incident happened to him although examination afterwards disclosed evidence of the fracture and disclosed also that while he had known there was a ridge in his skull he had never wondered about it for an instant. His father and mother were, at the time, on the verge of divorce and, in the presence of the only partly conscious child, quarreled several times in these few days, evidently upset by his accident and recriminative⁷ as to whose fault it was. The first part of the series of engrams within this one large engram are unimportant as an example save that they brought about a condition where the mother put herself forward as a defender of

the child who was not under attack by the father. The

it'

|i 6. Macbeth: title character of a play by Shakespeare, tortured by

his guilt for murders he committed rising to power in Scotland.

7. recriminative: accusing in return.

378

SOME TYPES OF ENGRAMS

mother's conversation aberratively indicated that the

father was attacking the child, and the words in an engram

rather than the action are important as aberrative factors.

Finally the father left the house and home. The mother sat

down by the boy's trundle bed⁸ and, weeping, told him she

would keep him from dying, that she would "work and

slave and wear her fingers to the bone" to keep him

alive and "I am the only reason you are alive. I have

defended you against that beast and monster. If it were

not for me, you would have died long ago and I am

going to care for you and protect you. So don't pay any

attention to anything people tell you. I am a good

mother. I have always been a good mother. Don't listen

to them. Please, baby, stay here and get well, please!"

This remarkable piece of nonsense came, of course,

straight out of her reactive mind. She did not feel guilty

about the way she was taking care of the baby, though

she had done her cyclic worst for this child since

conception. (There is no such thing as guilt nor a guilt

complex that is not straight out of an engram that says,

"I am guilty" or some such similar phrase.)

Here is ambivalence at work. By ambivalent is

meant power on two sides. It had better be called

multivalence, for it is demonstrable that people have

many valences, twenty or thirty not being unusual for a

"normal." This mother, with her wild pleas and her

mawkish⁹ sentimentality, shifted around in valences like

a whirling dervish.¹⁰ She was capable of being viciously

8. trundle bed: a low bed moving on small wheels. It can be

pushed under a regular bed when not in use.

9. mawkish: sentimental in a tearful way, so as to be sickening.

10. dervish: a member of any various Moslem orders of ascetics

(ones who lead a life of austere self-discipline, especially as an

act of religious devotion or penance), some of which employ

whirling dances and the chanting of religious formulas to pro-

duce a collective ecstasy.

379

L. RON HUBBARD

cruel, torturing her child with, as the Navy calls them,

"capricious" and unusual punishments": yet one of

these valences which, unfortunately for the patient,

only turned on when he was ill, was one of savage protection for the child and assurances to him that she loved him and would never leave him to starve, etc. She formed, in this child, because of her own reactive pattern and her inabilities, close to a thousand engrams before he was ten. This particular specimen given was fairly standard.

The aberrative aspect of this engram was a "conviction" that if one's mother were not around and if one were not on good terms with her, one would starve, die or suffer generally. Also, it meant, because of the time it was given, having a bad headache if one wanted to

live. The whole series of these engrams made a highly complex pattern of psychosomatic ills including sinusitis, a chronic rash, allergies and numerous other actual physical ills, despite the fact that the patient had always tried to be as forthright in his physical being as possible and was not in any way a hypochondriac.

In therapy, the entire chain of fights in this area, much of the prenatal area and most late-life painful emotion engrams were relieved before this sympathy engram displayed itself.

As a note on the subject of sympathy engrams, these are in no wise exclusively found in childhood: they exist prenatally and postnatally—and sometimes late in life.

Any persons who defend the child against further abor-

tion attempts become part of the sympathy engram

chains and, of course, they are allies whose loss is

something to be dreaded. Late sympathy engrams have

been discovered at fifty years of age. One, discovered at

11. capricious: characterized by or subject to whim; impulsive

and unpredictable.

380

SOME TYPES OF ENGRAMS

thirty, consisted of a nymphomaniac nurse who, during

the period when the patient was still under ether and

still in pain, talked to him obscenely, played with his

genitals and still managed, by the content of her remarks, to plant a sympathy engram which produced a very serious psychic condition in the patient. (It is in no wise true that many cases of sexual play exist while the patient is under anesthetic or drugged, but because this is a standard psychotic reaction of delusion is no reason to rule that the incident cannot occasionally happen.)

The sympathy engram only has to sound like a sympathy engram to become one: there is no evaluation of actual intent by the reactive mind.

Painful Emotion Engram

Three of these are given to illustrate a type of each.

They can happen at any period, including prenatally,
but are most easily tapped in more recent life, when
they will then lead back to early incidents of physical
pain, sympathy engrams and the like. The first example
is a case of loss by death of an ally. A girl, at the age of
eighteen, was given a painful emotion engram by being
told by her parents that her aunt was dead. The aunt was
a prime ally. The patient, treated at the age of thirty-
one, recalled the death of her aunt but attributed her
sorrow to other things such as a restimulation of what
she called her own "death instinct" (which was, in
reality, engramic chatter by Mother about wanting to

die and get it all over with). Actually, the aunt had been

a large factor in dissuading the mother from "getting

rid of" the child and had made the mother promise that

she would not. The aunt had also tended the child,

postnatally, through illnesses and was, in fact, the only

refuge for the girl when a termagant¹² mother and a

12. termagant: boisterous, quarrelsome, scolding; shrewish.

religiously bigoted father would converge on her, for

neither had wanted her and there had been a number of

efforts to terminate the pregnancy preterm.¹³

Her father communicated the information to the girl

with a sonorous¹⁴ voice and appropriately long face. "I

want you to be very respectful at the funeral, Agatha."

("What funeral?") "Your aunt just passed to the great

beyond." ("She's dead?") "Yes, death must come to us all

and we must all be prepared someday to meet the fate

which waits for us at the end of the road. For it is a long

path, life, and God and flaming hell wait at its other end

and someday we all must die. Be sure you are very re-

spectful at the funeral." She had begun to pale at the word

"funeral," she was to all purposes "unconscious" when

she heard the first mention of "death" and she remained

"unconscious," if moving about, for two whole days.

The case had been very slow until this engram was discovered and run. An enormous discharge of grief took place, which had never before manifested itself. It was reduced to boredom in eight recountings, at which the first moment of the aunt's intervention in the abortion attempts was automatically contacted and released. Thereafter the case made progress in the prenatal area, prohibition against "getting rid of it" having been removed; and, according to theory, free units being available, the charge had come off the prenatal area. There were five other allies in this case, the girl, with parents who had been so wicked to her, having attached herself to anyone who

would show her interest and refuge. As lower physical

pain came into view, more allies showed up and more

painful emotion engrams were discharged, permitting

new physically painful engrams to display themselves.

13. preterm: before the end of the period a pregnancy normally

lasts.

14. sonorous: resonant, giving a deep, powerful sound.

382

SOME TYPES OF ENGRAMS

The next example is an engram from a patient who

had all his life been reared and cared for by "moneyed
parents." He had a very severe prenatal area which yet
would not lift to view. It was discovered at length that
his nurses had been his only source of love and affec-
tion and that his mother, being a woman who liked to
unsettle the household as often as possible, would
discharge a nurse every time she found the child had
grown fond of her, even though the mother herself made
it plain that she considered the child "nasty." The
engram: the boy sees his nurse coming out of the house
with her suitcase in her hand: he stops playing in the
yard and runs to her to "scare her": she is quite angry
from the scene she has just had—an Irish girl—and yet

she smooths her face and kneels down beside him. "I am leaving, Buddy. I can't stay here anymore. No, I can't be your nurse now. But there, there, you'll have another one. Don't cry. It's not good for little boys to cry. Goodbye, Buddy. I love you." And she goes off out of sight.

He was stunned from the first instant she said she was leaving. The prohibition against crying was from an ally: whatever an ally says must be good and must be believed because allies are survival and one must survive: allies therefore must be believed. He had not cried except on rare occasions of enormous sorrow in all the years thereafter. Eight of these departures were touched

without result but with this one they all loosened and discharged, one after the other.

Any departure of or from an ally contains an emotional charge which, if it will not display itself, is elsewhere suppressed.

The third example of the painful emotion engram is the third type: loss of an ally by reversal. A wife loved her husband very dearly. They had gotten along well together until his parents came into the vicinity and

383

L. RON HUBBARD

began to malign his wife. He was furious with them for

it and quarreled with them. His wife was a pseudoally,

and unfortunately that ally had told the child to believe

his parents. (This is fairly chronic with allies—if they

would give the child correct data when he is emotion-

ally disturbed or ill, there would be less trouble. A

remark such as, "Well, you'll grow up someday and be

able to care for yourself," is much better than a hatful

of Emersonian¹⁵ platitudes.¹⁶) This brought about a

tragic reversal. The reactive mind, restimulated at the

sight of his wife (the husband was emotionally dis-

turbed, very restimulated already by his parents) threw

in the data that one must believe one's parents. This

made his wife no good, as per their aberrative chatter.

He went into his father's valence to escape this impon-

derable situation and that valence beat women. He

struck his wife repeatedly, dramatizing one of his fa-

ther's engrams: "I hate you. You are no good. I should

have listened to them sooner. You're no good."

The wife was in therapy. This charge suppressed

itself, not out of shame for her husband's actions but for

the mechanical reason that the early area had to be

relieved before this one would discharge (smart file

clerk). Her case had slowed down to a point where the

board looked entirely clear although somatics (which

she attributed to natural causes) and aberrations (which

she said were reasonable reactions) still manifested

themselves. Suddenly this incident appeared when

15. Emersonian: of Ralph Waldo Emerson: (1803-1882) Ameri-

can essayist, poet and lecturer. Emerson was part of the transcen-

dentalist movement, which advised people to look for God-given

power within themselves. His best-known essay is "Self-

Reliance." Many in the nineteenth century took inspiration from

Emerson, especially through his brief and pointed sayings and

urgings, such as "Hitch your wagon to a star."

16. platitudes: flat, dull or trite remarks, especially those ut-

tered as if they were fresh or profound.

SOME TYPES OF ENGRAMS

repeater technique was used on the auditor's random guess, "I hate you," for it was known that she said this now and then to her husband. Three recountings discharged this painful emotion despite its violence (it made her weep until she almost choked). Immediately twelve prenatal, all fights between her mother and father (an ally, of which her husband was the pseudoally) wherein the mother beat her abdomen and cursed the child, appeared and were erased and the case progressed to Clear.

Loss of dogs, dolls, money, position, even the threat

of a loss: anything may bring about a painful emotion
engram so long as it is loss. It may be loss by death,
loss by departure, loss by reversal. Anything connected
with the life of the patient and associated by him with
his own survival seems to be capable of locking up life
units when lost. A condition of such painful emotion is
that it has early physically painful engrams upon which
to append. The physically painful engram is still the
villain but it has an accomplice in the painful emotion
engram.

Mechanisms and Aspects of

Therapy—Part One

The Case Entrance

Every case presents a new problem of entrance. No two human beings are exactly alike and no two cases will follow the exact pattern. However, this presents no problem to Dianetics since the mechanics are always the same.

There are three case classifications: the sonic recall, the nonsonic recall and the imaginary recall (what auditors call a "dub-in" recall).

In the sonic recall case, the entrance is very easy.

But in all cases the basic procedure is the same. Put the

patient in reverie (and don't worry too much if he doesn't go into a very deep reverie because reverie only serves to fix his attention on himself and the auditor and you can at least accomplish that). Install a cancel-ler. Return him to childhood to pick up a pleasant incident and then find a minor pain incident such as a slap in the face. Run him through this a few times just to let him get the idea. If he doesn't respond well, put him into yesterday and let him ride to work and ask him about sounds and sights, then send him to childhood again.

The object of finding a minor incident such as a slapped face is to find out if the patient has a pain

shut-off. A pain shut-off is not particularly difficult in

Dianetics. You can get back before the command which

installed the anesthesia, but it is interesting to know

about it because you want to look for it early in the

case. See then if the patient has an emotional shut-off.

386

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART ONE

This again is not particularly embarrassing but again is

data you want to find eventually.

Test now to find out if the patient is within himself or if

he is outside himself, watching himself. If he is exterior-

ized, you are working a case which has considerable

walled-up emotion in it which must be discharged.

Now make a try to get basic-basic. You might surprise

yourself and get it. And you might work fifty hours for

it, releasing the case the while. Get whatever the file

clerk will give you in the prenatal area and what you

get, reduce.

Whether basic-basic is contacted or not, locate as

many prenatals as will present themselves without much

coaxing and reduce each one.

If you find no prenatals, bring the patient up to

present time but remind him to keep his eyes closed.

Now ask him a few questions about his family, his

grandparents, his wife or, if the preclear is a woman,

her husband. Ask about any former husbands or wives.

Ask about children. And ask particularly about death.

You are looking for a painful emotion engram, an instant

of loss which will discharge.

Finding out about one, even if it is just the death of a

favorite dog, return the preclear to it and run it from the

first moment he hears the news of it and for the ensuing

few minutes of it. Then start it again. Reduce the moment

as an engram. You want an emotional discharge. Run it

several times. If you don't get a discharge, find some

other moment of loss, some failure, something, any-

thing which will discharge: but do it all quietly as if

with sympathy. Lacking any success, start in repeater

technique, never for a moment giving any intelligence

that you are anything but calmly concerned for his

welfare (even if some of his gyrations worry you). Try

such phrases as "Poor little ____, " using his or her

childhood name.

387

L. RON HUBBARD

When the preclear has repeated this several times

(the auditor at the same time stating that the somatic

strip1 will return to any incident containing the phrase

to assist the "suck down"), he may find himself in a

high-tension incident which will discharge. If nothing discharges yet, keep calm (all this work will pay dividends in the next session or the next or next), keep searching, keep observing. There is emotional charge here somewhere which will discharge. Try other combinations of words such as those which would be said to a sick and worried child, make the preclear repeat them.

If you have had no success as yet, make another test, without saying it is a test, to see if the preclear is actually leaving present time. Don't let him "try to remember" — you want him to return and that is another process, although it is just as natural to the brain. If he is stuck in present time, start him on repeater technique again,

suggesting bouncers: "Get out and never come back!"

"You can't ever return!" etc., which would account for

his being still in present time. If he is not returning

after some of this, start in with holder phrases: "I'm

stuck!" "Don't move!" and so forth.

Stay calm, never appear anxious. If you get neither a

discharge nor an engram with repeater technique in this

first session and if you get no motion on the track, read

this manual again and try your patient not later than

three days after this first session. At that time some of

the data you have asked for may be available.

Ordinarily, however, you will receive either a prenatal

1. somatic strip: a physical indicator mechanism which has to do with time. The auditor orders the somatic strip. The somatic strip can be sent back to the beginning of an engram and will go there. The somatic strip will advance through an engram in terms of minutes counted off by the auditor, so that the auditor can say that the somatic strip will go to the beginning of the engram, then to the point five minutes after the engram began, and so forth.

388

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART ONE

or a discharge and if you get a discharge, then ask the somatic strip to go back for the prenatal it was sitting on. Reduce everything you can find. If birth turns up

and seems to be in full recall, try to reduce that but do

so in the knowledge that it probably will not lift very

far and in the knowledge that you had better run it over

and over and over to deintensify it all you can.

Sometimes the preclear will go into a deeper reverie

than you wish. But do not try to wake him into a higher

level. Work him where he is. But if he seems to be in

something approaching hypnotic trance, be very careful

of your language. Never tell him, for instance, to go

back there and stay there until he finds something.

That's a holder. Don't use holders and bouncers and

groupers, et al., on anyone in Dianetics. "Will you

please return to the prenatal area?" "Let's see if the

somatic strip can locate an early moment of pain or

discomfort." "Please pick up the somatic at the begin-

ning and roll the engram." "What do you hear, please?"

"Continue" (when you want him to keep on going from

the point of the engram where he is to the later end of the

engram). "Recount that again, please."

There's nothing to be nervous about. If you get

nervous, then he'll get nervous.

Sometimes you run into a pain shut-off. This has a

tendency to put the pain into the muscles and the

muscles will jump and quiver and the patient may sense

this and still feel nothing more. Once in a great while a

patient will have such a thorough pain shut-off that he

bounces about, all unconscious of the action, and al-

most falls from couch to floor. If you run into this, do

not be alarmed: the pain is locked in somehow. Get

early enough and you'll locate a somatic he can feel, or

go late and find an emotional charge.

Don't be misled if he tells you, with regard to

emotion, that he has worked it all out in psychoanalysis

389

L. RON HUBBARD

or some such thing. He may have walled in the death of

his wife or sweetheart or child, but the whole engram is

still there, crammed with captured units, ready to be

run exactly as an engram.

If you run into a heavy emotional charge, simply let

the patient weep, keep him at the business of running

the engram in a soft, sympathetic voice, have it re-

counted until there is no charge left in any of it and then

run him early into the prenatal area or early childhood

to get a physical pain engram that must have been below

that emotional charge and held it in place.

The extravagance of emotional discharge is nothing

to be alarmed about. Bringing the patient out of it and

to present time suddenly would cause him unhappiness

about it. Running the painful emotion engram will

discharge, in a few recountings, sorrow which society has believed could never be countered or relieved except by repression. Get the moment he first heard the news or observed the thing which made him feel so bad. Run it far enough from its beginning to make sure that you have the initial shock—a few minutes of engram time will do—and then get him to recount it again. He may observe himself to be far outside himself when you start. The moment may not discharge until you have run it several times. Remember, he is returned to the incident, he is not running it as a memory, a thing which would do no good whatever.

Do not let him replay anything, ever. Replay is a bad

habit some preclears have of playing over what they

remember they said the last time instead of progressing

through the engram freshly on each recounting and

contacting what is contained in the engram itself. Tell

the preclear there may be some more in it, ask him what

color the bed in the room he is returned to is, keep his

attention, by any quiet mechanism, upon the scene.

And do not let him replay ever, not on any engram at

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART ONE

any time: he could replay forever without therapeutic

value, each time saying what he remembered he said the

last time. There is a difference between this and the repeated reexperiencing of the engram to gather additional data and to get rid of the charge.

Discharge emotion, reduce incidents of physical pain as early prenatally as possible. If you can't get into the prenatal area at first, it has many bouncers in it and repeater technique will take you there.

If the patient keeps saying such a thing as "I can't remember," be patient—always follow the code. Have him start running that phrase as repeater technique. If he gets a somatic but contacts nothing else, send him earlier. If he gets another and still can't contact on "I

can't remember," send him earlier, his whole engram

bank must be strewn with them—poor fellow. Some-

body really didn't want him to know what had hap-

pened to him. Eventually you will get back to an

engram which will release a phrase. When he has gone

over the phrase a few more times, he will smile or

chuckle or perhaps merely feel relieved. Now you can

either run the engram in which you found the earliest

phrase, which is best, or you can come back toward

present time, lifting the phrase as it later appeared. Or

you can start on something else, which may block the

case.

The goal, and the whole goal, is to place the stand-

ard bank in entire conscious reach of the individual by

deleting (a) early and subsequently all physical pain

engrams; (b) all demon circuits (which are merely

contained in engrams and come up more or less auto-

matically); and (c) all painful emotion engrams.

The process of work is to get as early as you can,

preferably prenatal and very early in that, and try to

find and reduce an engram, complete with all somatics

(pain) and perceptics (words and other sensations). If

you fail in this, you go late, any time from birth forward

to present time, and find a moment of loss or threatened

loss from which you can get an emotional charge. Then

you go back early, early, early and find the engram on

which it rested. You try always, until you are certain

you have it, to get basic-basic, the earliest engram. You

reduce as many early engrams as you can find, using

the file clerk and repeater system, and when you seem

to run out of material, you go later into life and try to

find another emotional charge.

The physically painful engrams cover up later emo-

tional charges. Emotional charges cover up physically

painful engrams. Back and forth, back and forth. Run

as much as you can get early: when it seems to be

running out or getting too unemotional, get some later

material.

This is the way you work a case. No matter what

kind of a case it is, no matter what the state of its

recall, no matter if the case is normal, psychotic or

neurotic or what, this is the way.

These are the tools:

1. Reverie, or fixed attention if you cannot get

reverie;

2. Return;

3. Repeater technique;

4. A knowledge of bouncers, holders, groupers,

misdirectors, deniers;

5. A knowledge of the painful emotion engram;

6. The reduction or the erasure;

7. The flash answer;2

8. The valence shift.3

2. flash answer: the first thing which comes into a person's head

when a question is asked of him.

3. valence shift: getting the preclear moving around from one

valence to the other.

392

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART ONE

This is all you need to do:

1. Keep the patient mobile, able to move on the

track.

2. Reduce or erase everything you get your hands on.

3. Deduce from the remarks of the patient, in or

out of therapy, what must be his bouncers,

holders, groupers, misdirectors, deniers.

4. Keep it solidly in mind that the number one goal

is basic-basic, the earliest moment of pain and

"unconsciousness."

5. Keep in mind that the patient may have "com-

putations" which make his illness or his aberrated state "valuable" to him and discover whence

those "computations" come by flash answer to

your questions.

6. Keep the case progressing, gaining, work only for

progress and gain, not for sudden, soaring re-

sults. Worry only when the case remains static

and worry then in terms of finding the engram

which is balking everything. Its content will be a

close approximation to the way the patient says he

feels about it and will contain the same or similar

words.

7. Get the patient back to present time each time

you work and feed him the canceller. Test him

with an age flash, get his first reply to how old

he is, find the holder at that age if he is not at

present time.

8. Keep your temper no matter what the patient says.

9. Never try to tell him what his data means: he

knows and he alone knows what it means.

10. Keep your nerve and run Dianetics; like Farra-

gut4 said, "Damn the torpedoes! Go ahead."

4. Farragut: David Glasgow Farragut (1801-1870), US admiral

who won the battles of New Orleans and Mobile Bay for the

Union in the US Civil War.

11. Wife, son, whatever you may be to the preclear,

you are the auditor when you are auditing. He

cannot compute his own engrams to find them—if

he could they would not be engrams. You can

compute them. Do what you think a good auditor

would do, never what the patient says, save only

when he accidentally concurs in his opinion that a

good auditor would do that. Be the auditor, not

the recording device. You and the file clerk in his

mind are running the case: what his engrams and

his analytical mind believe should have no force

in any of your computations. You and his file

clerk know. He, as "I," doesn't know.

12. Be surprised at nothing. Audit.

These are the things you must not do:

1. Dilute Dianetics with some practice or belief of

yesteryear: you will only slow or sidetrack a

case. Analyzing data received on any other basis

than getting more engrams leads to delay and

confusion for the preclear. It is a temptation to

use this material for other reasons than getting

engrams if one has been trained in another field

than Dianetics. Yielding to that temptation be-

fore one knows how Dianetics works is a very

unfair test of Dianetics, completely aside from

the way it snarls a case. The temptation is great

because with Dianetics you get such a wealth of

data.

2. Do not bully the patient. If the case is not

progressing, then the fault lies with the auditor.

Do not surrender to an old practice of getting

mad at a patient just because he doesn't get

well. You may be sure the engram you have just

reduced out of his reactive engram bank is the

reason he won't take baths, but if he still refuses

to bathe, be certain there is an earlier reason.

3. Don't assume grandly that you have a "different" case just because it doesn't resolve swiftly.

They are all "different", cases.

4. Don't run for help to somebody who does not know Dianetics if your nerve fails you. The reason the case did not progress or became involved is right there—your nerve failed you. Only Dianetics can work a problem in Dianetics.

5. Do not listen to a patient's complaints as complaints; use them as data to get engrams.

6. Do not suppose that just because you cannot

reach prenatal engrams in a case that they are
not there. There are scores and scores of them
in every case. Remember that an engram isn't a
memory, it has to be developed to become
within recall. There is no human being walking
on Earth today who does not have a plenitude of
prenatals.

7. Do not allow the patient to use his mother or his
memory of what he had been told as a bypass of
prenatals. Every time you find a patient talking
in past tense instead of present tense he is not
returned to an incident. Unless he is returned,
the engram will not lift.

8. Do not suppose that because a patient does not

feel bad today about a sorrow of yesterday that

a despair charge is not located back on his track

when he received the impact of that despair.

Time may encyst, it does not heal.

9. Do not think in terms of "guilt complexes" or

"shame" unless you think of them as engram

content, for there they will be found. Never

suggest to a patient that he may be at fault in an

engram.

10. Any departure from optimum behavior or con-

duct or rationality on the part of the patient is

L. RON HUBBARD

engramic: don't make "allowances for human

nature" any more than you, as a mathematician,

would make allowances for an adding machine

which brought up wrong answers. Sexual fears,

repressions, defenses are not "natural" as they

have been regarded in the past.

11. Don't worry about the patient's aberrations.

Work to contact and reduce and erase engrams.

You will find, in any patient, enough aberra-

tions to fill a dictionary.

12. Don't fret if your patient does not become a

Clear in an evening or a month. Just keep work-

ing. You'll have him above normal so quickly

you won't realize when you passed it. Above

that you are shooting for a very high goal.

"Stuck in Present Time"

Cases, when they are entered, are found in various

positions and situations on the time track; sometimes

they are off the time track entirely, and sometimes the

time track is all snarled up in a ball. Now and then

the time track is found to be in good condition and the

engrams available, but this is not ordinary.

No case can be said to be more difficult than another

except in the matter of recalls, "dub-ins" and shut-offs.

But the case which seems to be "stuck in present time"

and on whom no repeater phrase works is very often

quite puzzling to an auditor. The preclear will not

return to engrams. Ordinarily there may be pain and

emotional shut-offs and the painful emotion cannot be

quickly discharged. Sometimes somatics will turn on

but no content can be gained. Sometimes there is no

somatic but content. The situations are quite various.

There are several things an auditor can do. The first

of them is to use his wits. The next is to indoctrinate the

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART ONE

patient into returning. This indoctrination is quite simple. The auditor takes the patient back a few hours and has the patient tell what he sees. The sonic and visio may be occluded but the patient may have some idea of what is taking place. The auditor then takes him back a few days, then a few months and finally several years, each time getting the patient to describe his "surroundings" as best he can. The patient now has the idea of returning. He can travel at least along portions of his life which are not occluded by engrams.

When the patient is returned to some early moment

in his life, begin to use repeater technique on him,

aiming toward obvious things such as feeling shut-offs

(going over the word "feel") or forgetter mechanisms

(such as "forget"). An engram may then be contacted

and reduced.

If repeater technique still does not work and still

does not get data, diagnose by his behavior in therapy

and his statements what must be troubling him or

occluding his recalls and again use these guesses as

repeater. For instance, he may have no recollection of

some member of his family. Have him repeat the famil-

iar name. Or have him repeat his own childhood nick-

name until an incident is contacted.

Should this still fail, then find some light locks,

incidents which contain minimal pain, and run those.

Such things as falls from a tricycle, getting sent from

the table, getting spanked or scolded, being kept after

school and so forth will serve. After he has reduced

several locks, again try to find an engram.

The running of locks will not bring about any great

recovery, and there are thousands and thousands of

locks in any case, most of which will vanish without

assistance from the auditor once the severe engrams are

located. But locks may be used to indoctrinate the

patient into returning and therapy in general and may

L. RON HUBBARD

even bring about an improved condition in him by

demonstrating to him that he can face his past.

The foremost things to do in any case at the beginning are to (1) attempt to locate and erase basic-basic, and (2) discharge painful emotion. The sooner emotion can be released, the better, and there is always emotion on a case, just as there is always a plenty of prenatal incidents.

But when a case is stuck in present time either when it is opened or during progress, it is highly charged

with occluded emotion and it is obeying a restimulated

engram to the effect that it must go all the way to now

and stay there. The wording of this engram will gener-

ally be expressed by the patient himself in complaining

of his trouble. Repeater technique is used with this clue.

That failing, indoctrinate the patient by taking him back

to what he can contact and when indoctrination is done,

as above, start using repeater technique again.

There is one motto which applies to all therapy, "If

you keep asking for it, you'll get it." Any and all engrams

surrender on the basis of returning the patient to the area

time and again, session after session. The engram bank

may be balky but enough asking will bring forth any data

in it sooner or later. Just keep asking, keep the routine of therapy running. Even a "stuck in present time" case will eventually begin to return on the sole principle of repeater technique.

There are certain things that the auditor may be doing which are wrong. He may be trying to work the case on data taken from parents or relatives, which is usually fruitless in view of the fact that it undermines the preclear's faith in his own data (all the data will check with the relatives; just don't worry about checking it until the case is finished). Or he may be trying to work the case in the presence of other people. Or he may be violating the Auditor's Code. A list of these

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART ONE

deterrents to progress is to be found elsewhere in this

volume.

Basic-Basic

The first goal of the auditor is basic-basic and after

that always the earliest moment of pain or discomfort

which he can reach. He may have to go late for emo-

tional charges and these themselves may be physically

painful. Emotion may bar the patient from basic-basic.

But always that first turn-off of the analyzer is important and when it is gained, subsequent engrams are much more easily reduced.

Basic-basic is the vital target for two reasons: (1) It contains an analyzer shut-off which itself is restimulated every time a new engram is received. The common denominator of all engrams is analyzer shut-off. Turn it on the first time it was shut off and a vast improvement takes place in the case, for thereafter analyzer shut-off is not as deep. (2) An "erasure" (which is to say, an apparent removal of the engram from the files of the engram bank and refiling in the standard bank as memory) of basic-basic widens the track beyond it

markedly and brings many new engrams into view.

Basic-basic is occasionally found weeks before

Mother's first missed period, which would place it

much earlier than any examination for pregnancy or an

attempted abortion. Sometimes in a nonsonic case sonic

is discoverable in basic-basic but far from always.

Considerable material may be "erased" before

basic-basic appears.

Sometimes basic-basic gets "erased" without either

the auditor or the preclear knowing that it has been

reached, basic-basic being merely another engram in

the basic area. Sometimes much painful emotion must

be discharged in the later life areas before basic-basic

discloses itself.

399

L. RON HUBBARD

Always, however, basic-basic is the target, and until he has a good idea that he has reached it, the auditor, once every session, makes an effort to get it. Thereafter he tries to get the earliest moment of pain or discomfort he can reach every session. If he can reach nothing early, he seeks to discharge a late emotional engram.

When it is completely discharged, "reduced" or "erased" as an engram, then he goes down into the earliest material the file clerk will give him.

Whatever comes up, the auditor seeks to take all the charge out of it, whether that charge is pain or emotion, before he proceeds on his way to new material. This is done merely by returning the patient back over the incident many times until it no longer affects him either painfully or emotionally, or until it seems to vanish.

The Reduction and the Erasure

These two terms are highly colloquial. Serious effort has been made to deter their use and substitute for them something sonorous and wonderfully Latin, but no progress has been made to date. Auditors insist on

using colloquial terms such as AA for attempted abortion, louse up for engrams which seriously aberrate, aberree for a person not released or cleared, zombie for an electric shock or neurosurgical case and so forth. It is feared that a tendency exists in them to be disrespectful to the hallowed and sacred tomes of yesteryear, to the dignity of past authorities which labeled much and did little. However this may be, reduction and erasure are in such common use that to change them is hardly necessary.

To reduce means to take all the charge or pain out of an incident. This means to have the preclear recount the incident from beginning to end (while returned to it in

5. hallowed: regarded as holy; honored as sacred.

400

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART ONE

reverie) over and over again, picking up all the somatics

and perceptions present just as though the incident were

happening at that moment. To reduce means, techni-

cally, to render free of aberrative material as far as

possible to make the case progress.

To erase an engram means to recount it until it has

vanished entirely. There is a distinct difference between

a reduction and an "erasure." The difference depends

more upon what the engram is going to do than upon what the auditor wants it to do. If the engram is early, if it has no material earlier which will suspend it, that engram will "erase." The patient, trying to find it again for a second or sixth recounting, will suddenly find out he has no faintest idea what was in it. He may ask the auditor who, of course, will give him no information whatever. (The auditor who prompts is slowing down therapy by making himself the patient's memory.) Going through it and trying to find it may cause the patient some amusement when he cannot. Or it may make him puzzled, for here was something which had, on first contact, a painful somatic and a highly aberrative con-

tent which now no longer seems to exist. That is an

"erasure." Technically the engram is not erased. If the

auditor cares to spend some time, solely for purposes of

research, he will find that engram in the standard banks

now, labeled "formerly aberrative: rather amusing: in-

formation which may be useful analytically." Such a

search is not germane to therapy. If the incident had a

somatic, was recounted a few times and then, when its

last new material was found, vanished, it is erased so

far as the engram bank is concerned. It will no longer

be "soldered" into the motor circuits, will no longer be

dramatized, it no longer blocks a dynamic and is no

longer an engram but a memory.

The "reduction" has some interesting aspects. Let

us take a childhood incident (age of four, let us say)

401

L. RON HUBBARD

which had to do with a scalding. This is contacted while

much data remains in the basic area. It has many things

below it which will hold it in place. Nevertheless, it has

emotional charge and therapy is slowed by that charge.

The file clerk hands out the scalding. Now it will not

erase, but it will reduce. Here is a job which will take

more time than an erasure. And there may be several

aspects to that job.

The somatic is contacted, the incident is begun as close to the beginning as the auditor can get, and is then recounted. This scalding, let us say, has apathy as its emotional tone (tone 0.5). The preclear slogs through it apathetically, well exteriorized, watching himself be scalded. Then suddenly, perhaps, an emotional discharge may come off, but not necessarily. The preclear returns to the beginning and recounts (reexperiences) the whole thing once more. Then again and again. Soon he begins to get angry at the people involved in the incident for being so careless or so heartless. He has come up to anger (tone 1.5). The auditor, although the

patient would like to tell how vicious his parents are or

how he thinks laws ought to be passed about scalding

children, patiently puts the preclear through the inci-

dent again. Now the preclear ceases to be angry and

finds that he is bored with the material. He has risen up

to boredom on the Tone Scale (tone 2.5). He may

protest to the auditor that this is a waste of time. The

auditor puts him back through the incident again. New

data may show up. The somatic may or may not be still

present at this period but the emotional tone is still low.

The auditor puts the preclear through the incident again

and the preclear may, but not always, begin to be

sarcastic⁶ or facetious.⁷ The incident is again recounted.

6. sarcastic: sneering; bitterly cutting; taunting.

7. facetious: joking or trying to be jocular, especially at an

inappropriate time.

402

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART ONE

Suddenly the preclear may be amused about it (but not

always) and the incident, when it obviously has reached

a high tone, may be left. It will probably sag in a few

days, but that is a matter of no great importance for it

will be erased wholly on the return from basic-basic. In

any case it will never be as aberrative as it was before

the reduction.

A reduction will sometimes result in the whole

engram's apparently disappearing. But it is obvious

when this will occur. Without much lifting in the Tone

Scale, the incident, by repetition, simply goes out of

sight. This is reducing to recession. In a few days that

incident will be back in force again, almost as strong as

ever. There is material before it and emotional charge

after it which make it unwieldy.

Several things can happen, then, to an engram in the

process of work. It can reduce, which is to say, dis-

charge emotionally and somatically and be of no great

aberrative power thereafter. It can reduce to recession,
which is to say it merely goes out of sight after several
recountings. It can erase, which is to say, vanish and
cease to be thereafter, so far as the engram bank is
concerned.

A little experience will tell an auditor what engrams
are going to do after he has contacted them. Erasure
takes place, ordinarily, only after basic-basic has been
reached or, for that matter, when the basic area is being
worked. The reduction occurs with an emotional dis-
charge. The reduction to recession happens when there
is too much in the engram bank suppressing the inci-
dent.

Every now and then even the best auditor will get
hold of an engram and decide to grind it out now that it
has been contacted. It is a sorry job. Perhaps it is better
to grind it out than to merely restimulate it and let the
patient be irritated by it for a couple of days. Perhaps

403

L. RON HUBBARD

not. But in any case, that engram which reduces only to
recession was better not contacted in the first place.

New auditors are forever charging at birth as an
obvious target. Everybody has a birth: in most patients
it can be located rather easily. But it is a painful

incident and until the basic area has been thoroughly

worked and until late-life painful emotion has been

discharged and until the file clerk is ready to hand up

birth, the incident is better left in place. It will usually

reduce to recession and afterwards keep popping up to

plague the auditor. The patient gets obscure headaches,

gets sniffles, feels uncomfortable afterwards unless

birth is taken on the return (from the basic area). The

auditor is wasting time, of course, by trying to remove

these headaches and sniffles, because birth, with the

whole prenatal life before it, will not properly reduce or

erase but only recede. It is too often the case that birth,

if prematurely contacted, will give the patient a headache and a cold. These discomforts are minor and of no great importance, but the work the auditor may have invested in working an incident which will only reduce to recession is lost work. True, the file clerk occasionally hands out birth: if he does, there is an emotional charge on it which will discharge and the incident will reduce properly. The auditor by all means should take it. True, a case sometimes stalls down and the auditor runs birth anyway just to see if he can speed things up. But merely going back to birth to put one's hands on an engram because he knows it is there will bring about discomfort and lost time. Go prenatal as far as you can

and see what the file clerk will hand forth. Try repeater

technique in the basic area. You may get incidents

which will erase. If there is nothing there, find out

about a painful emotion engram in late life, the death of

a friend, the loss of an ally, a failure of a business,

something. Blow a charge from it and reduce it as an

404

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART ONE

engram and then go back prenatally as early as possible

and see what has turned up. If the file clerk thinks you

need birth he'll give it out. But do not ask for birth just

to have an engram to work, because it may prove to be a

thoroughly uncomfortable and fruitless endeavor. Birth

will come up when it will come up and the file clerk

knows his business.

Charging into any late period of "unconsciousness"

such as surgical anesthetic, where physical pain is

present in large quantities, can bring about this need-

less restimulation. You can, of course, fare better with

such things in reverie than in hypnosis or narcosynthesis

where such a restimulation might bring about severe

results. In reverie the effect is light.

Handling the Somatic Strip

There are two little men on each side of the brain, a

set for each lobe, hanging by their heels. The outer one

is the "motor strip,"⁸ the inner one, the "sensory

strip."^{*} If you wish to know more about the structure

of these pairs, Dianetic research will have the answer in

a few more years. Currently there is something known

about them, a description. To an engineer who knows

Dianetics the current description which will be found in

the library is not entirely reasonable. These are, pos-

sibly, switchboards of some sort. Readings can be taken

in the vicinity of them—just aft of the temples—if you

have a very sensitive galvanometer,⁹ a galvanometer

* The sensory strip could be considered the "mental" side of

the switchboard, the motor strip the physical side. —LRH

8. motor strip: the mind's control system through the motor

controls. There are two panels on each side of the skull, one on

top of the other, and they control opposite sides of the body. One

of the panels on each side is where the thoughts register, and the

other panel is where the muscle control is set up.

9. galvanometer: an instrument for detecting and measuring

small electric currents.

405

L. RON HUBBARD

more sensitive than any on the public market today.

Those readings show emanations of a field of some
sort. When we have established the precise type of
energy flowing here, we can probably measure it with
better precision. When we know exactly where the
thinking is done in the body we will know more about
these strips. All Dianetic research has established to
date is that, beneath a welter¹⁰ of labels, nothing is
actually known which is worth recounting about these
structures beyond the fact that they have something to
do with coordination of various parts of the body. We
do, however, refer to them for lack of something better,
in the course of therapy. Now that we know something
about function, further research certainly cannot help

but yield precision answers about structure.

The auditor can turn somatics on and off in a patient

like an engineer handles switches. More aptly, he can

turn them on and off in the body like a conductor runs a

streetcar along a track. Here we have the game referred

to previously when we talked about the time track.

In a patient who is working well, the "somatic

strip" can be commanded to go to any part of the time

track. Day by day, hour by hour, in normal life the

somatic strip ranges up and down this track as engrams

are restimulated. The auditor, working a patient, may

find his own somatic strip obeying his own commands

and some of his own somatics turning on and off, a fact

which is at worst mildly uncomfortable. The whole
body, the cells, whatever it is that is moving we do not
really know. But we can handle it, and we can assume
that it at least passes through the switchboard of the
little men who hang by their heels.

"The somatic strip will now go to birth," says the
auditor.

10. welter: a jumble or muddle.

The patient in reverie begins to feel the pressure of

contractions thrusting him down the birth canal.

"The somatic strip will now go to the last time you

injured yourself," says the auditor.

The preclear feels a mild reproduction of the pain

of, perhaps, a bumped knee. If he has sonic and visio

recall, he will see where he is and suddenly realize that

it was in the office: he will hear the clerks and typewrit-

ers and the car noises outside.

"The somatic strip will now go into the prenatal

area," says the auditor.

And the patient finds himself in the area, probably

floating along, not uncomfortable.

"The somatic strip will now go to the first moment

of pain or discomfort which can now be reached," says

the auditor.

The patient drifts around a moment and suddenly

feels a pain in his chest. He begins to cough and feels

depression all over him. Mama is coughing (often

source of chronic coughs). "Roll the cough," says the

auditor. The patient finds himself at the beginning of

the engram and begins to run it. "Cough, cough,

cough," says the patient. He then yawns. "It hurts and

I can't stop," he quotes his mother. "Go to the beginning

and roll it again," says the auditor. "Cough, cough,

cough," begins the patient, but he is not coughing as

badly now. He yawns more deeply. " 'Ouch. It hurts, it hurts, and I can't seem to stop," quotes the preclear, listening directly if he has sonic, getting impressions of what's said if he does not have. He has picked up words now that were suppressed in it by "unconsciousness." "Unconsciousness" is beginning to come off with the yawns. "Roll it again," says the auditor. "I can't stop," says the preclear, quoting all that he finds this time. The somatic is gone. He yawns again. The engram is erased.

"The somatic strip will now go to the next moment

of pain or discomfort," says the auditor.

The somatic does not turn on. The patient goes into

a strange sleep. He mutters about a dream. Suddenly

the somatic gets stronger. The patient begins to shiver.

"What occurs?" says the auditor. "I hear water run-

ning," says the preclear. "Somatic strip will go to the

beginning of the incident," says the auditor. "Roll it."

"I keep on hearing water," says the preclear. (He must

be stuck, the somatics did not move. This is a holder.)

"Somatic strip will go to whatever it is that is holding,"

says the auditor. "Til hold it in there a while and see if

it does some good," quotes the preclear. "Pick up the

beginning of the incident now and roll it," says the

auditor. "I feel myself being jostled," says the preclear.

"Ouch, something bumped me." "Pick up the begin-

ning and roll it," says the auditor. " I'm sure I must be

pregnant,' " quotes the preclear. " Til hold it in there

a while and see if it does some good.' " "Is there

anything earlier?" says the auditor. The preclear's strip

ljl goes to the earlier moment where he feels pressure as

W she tries to get something into the cervix. Then he rolls

the engram and it erases.

This is handling of the somatic strip. It can be sent

anywhere. It will pick up the somatic first, usually, and

then pick up the content. Using repeater technique, the

somatic strip is "sucked down" to the incident and the

somatics turn on. Then the incident is run. If it does not

lift, find an earlier incident simply by telling the so-

matic strip to go to the earlier incident.

If the somatic strip does not move, which is to say, if

somatics (physical sensations) do not turn on and off,

then the patient is stuck somewhere on the track. He can

be stuck in present time, which would mean he has a

bouncer thrusting him all the way up the track. Use

repeater technique or merely try to send the somatic

strip back. If it won't go, get various bouncer phrases

like "Can't go back," "Run a mile," etc., and with them

suck the somatic strip down to the incident and run it.

The somatic strip may move through an incident

with full sensation and yet, returning over the same

ground several times, will not bring out data. Time

after time this can be done without result in some

engrams: the somatics remain almost the same, undu-

lating through the incident each time but with no other

content. Then the auditor is "bucking" a denier, a

phrase such as "This is a secret," "Don't let him

know," "Forget it," etc. In such a case he sends the

somatic strip to the phrase which denies the data: "Go

to the moment a phrase is uttered denying this data,"

says the auditor. After a moment, " 'If he found out

about this, it would kill him,' " quotes the preclear,

either from sonic or from impressions. Then the auditor

sends the somatic strip back to the start of the incident

and it goes on through it, this time with other perceptic

content. The somatics, unless the incident is very late

prenatal with basic area full of material, undulate (fluc-

tuate according to the action of the engram) and dimin-

ish to either reduction or erasure on consecutive

recountings.

The auditor tells the somatic strip to go earlier, sometimes it goes later. This is a misdirector. "Can't tell which way I am going," "Going backwards," "Do just the opposite": these are the type of phrases of the misdirector. The auditor recognizes that he has one in the preclear—guesses it or discovers it from the preclear's wording of the complaint about the action—and by repeater or direct command of the strip, picks up the phrase and the engram, reduces or erases it and continues.

If the somatic strip does not respond according to command, then a bouncer, a holder, a misdirector or a grouper has been restimulated and should be discharged.

L. RON HUBBARD

The somatic strip will be where the command is which forbids it to function as desired.

There are good and bad conductors of this somatic strip. The good conductor works closely with the file clerk, using such broad orders as "The somatic strip will pick up the earliest moment of pain or discomfort which can be reached," or "The somatic strip will go to the highest intensity of the somatic you now have" (when a somatic is bothering the patient). The bad conductor picks out specific incidents which he thinks might be aberrative, bullies the somatic strip into them

and somehow beats them down. There are moments

when it is necessary to be quite persuasive with the

strip and moments when it is necessary to pick out

incidents of physical pain, but the auditor is the best

judge of what should take place. As long as the strip

will work smoothly, finding new incidents and running

over them, he should not tamper with it beyond making

sure that he reduces everything the strip contacts.

A very fine way to thoroughly wreck a case is to put

the somatic strip into an incident, decide something else

is more important and go rushing off to it, get that

half-lifted and go off to something else. By the time three

or four incidents have been so touched but not reduced,

the strip stalls down, the track starts to bunch up and

the auditor has a snarl which may take him many hours

of therapy or a week or two of rebalancing (letting the

case settle) to bring it back to a workable state.

The patient will sometimes want a somatic turned

off. It has been bothering him. That means that the strip

is somehow hung up in some incident which therapy or

the patient's environment has restimulated. Ordinarily

it is not worth the time and trouble to locate the

incident. It will settle out of its own accord in a day or

two and it may be an incident which cannot be reduced

because of the earlier engrams.

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY — PART ONE

The somatic strip is handled in a late incident just as it is sent to an earlier one. Despair charges are contacted in the same way.

If you want a test to see if the strip is moving, or to test recall, send it back a few hours and find out what you get. While the prenatal area is easier to reach than yesterday in many cases, some idea will be gained of how the patient is working.

Present Time

The beginning is conception. Your patients some-
times have a feeling that they are sperms or ovums at
the beginning of the track: in Dianetics, this is called
the sperm dream. It is not of any great value so far as
we know at this time. But it is very interesting. It does
not have to be suggested to the preclear. All one has to
do is send him to the beginning of the track and hear
what he has to say. Sometimes he has an early engram
mixed up with conception.

At the late end of the track is, of course, now. This
is present time. It happens now and then that patients
are not getting back to present time because they have
struck holders en route. Repeater technique with holders

will generally free the strip and get it to present time.

A patient may get a trifle groggy with all the things

which have been happening to him in the course of a

therapy session. And he may have reduced resistance to

engrams as he comes back up the track and may thus

trip a holder. The auditor should be very sure the patient is

up in present time. Occasionally the patient will be so

thoroughly stuck and the hour so advanced that the

effort to bring him all the way up is not feasible at the

time. A period of sleep will generally accomplish it.

There is a test whereby the auditor can tell if the

preclear is up to present time. He snaps a question at

the preclear, "How old are you?" The preclear gives

L. RON HUBBARD

him a "flash answer." If it is the preclear's right age,

the preclear is in present time. If it is an earlier age,

there is a holder there, and the patient is not in present

time. There are other methods of determining this but it

is not very important, by and large, if the patient does

fail to make it.

Snapping questions at people, asking how old they

are, elicits some surprising answers. Being stuck on the

track is so common in "normal" people that a day or

two or a week or two of failure to reach present time in

a preclear is far from alarming.

Anyone who has a chronic psychosomatic illness is

definitely stuck somewhere on the time track. Snap

questions about it get "three," or "ten years," or some

such answer quite ordinarily even when asked of people

who suppose they are in good health. Reverie reveals to

them where they are on the track. Sometimes, in the

first session, a preclear shuts his eyes in reverie to find

himself in a dentist's chair at the age of three. He has

been there for the last thirty years or so because the

dentist and his mother both told him to "stay there"

while he was shocky with pain and gas—so he did, and

the chronic tooth trouble he had all his life is that

somatic.

This doesn't happen very often, but you can find

someone you know, it is certain, who would flash

answer "ten years" and, being put in reverie, would

find himself, as soon as the engram came to view, lying

flat on his back in a ballpark or some such situation,

with somebody telling him not to move until the ambu-

lance came: that's his arthritis!

Try it on somebody.

The Flash Answer

A device in common use in therapy is the flash

answer. This is done in two ways. The first mentioned

412

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART ONE

here is the least used. "When I count to five," says the

auditor, "a phrase will flash into your mind to describe

where you are on the track. One, two, three, four,

five!" "Late prenatal," says the preclear, or "yester-

day," or whatever occurs to him.

The flash answer is the first thing which comes into

a person's head when a question is asked him. It will

come from the engram bank, usually, and will be

useful. It may be "demon talk" but it is generally right.

The auditor merely asks a question, such as what is holding the patient, what denies him knowledge, etc., prefacing the question with the remark, "I want a flash answer to this."

"I want a flash answer to this," says the auditor.

"What would happen if you became sane?" "Die," says the patient. "What would happen if you die?" says the auditor. "I'd get well," says the patient. And with

this data they then make an estimate of the current computation on allies or some such thing. In this case, the ally said to the preclear when he was ill, "I'd die, just die if you didn't get well. If you're sick much

longer I'll go insane." And a former engram said the

preclear had to be sick. And this is, after all, just an

engram. So repeater technique is used on the word die

and an ally is uncovered that the preclear never knew

existed and a charge is blown.

Much valuable data can be recovered by clever use of

the flash answer. If there is no answer at all, it means that

the answer is occluded and that is almost as good a reply

as actual data since it means some kind of a coverup.

Dreams

Dreams have been used considerably by various

schools of mental healing. Their "symbology" is a

mystic foible forwarded to explain something which the

413

L. RON HUBBARD

mystics did not know anything about. Dreams are

crazy-house" mirrors by which the analyzer looks down

into the engram bank.

Dreams are puns on words and situations in the

engram bank.

Dreams are not much help, being puns.

Dreams are not much used in Dianetics.

You will hear dreams from patients. Patients are

hard to shut off when they start telling dreams. If you

want to waste your time, you will listen.

Valence Shift

A mechanism used in Dianetics is the valence shift.

We know the way a patient gets into valences when

he dramatizes his engrams in life. He becomes a win-

ning valence and he says and does rather much what the

person in the winning valence did in that engram.

The theory behind it is this: returned to a time the

patient may consider too painful to enter, he can be

shifted into a valence which felt no pain. A dull way to

persuade him is to tell him he does not have to feel the

pain or the emotion and let him go through it. This is

very bad Dianetics because it is a positive suggestion

and every safeguard must be taken to keep from giving

suggestions to the patient, for he may be very suggest-

ible even when he pretends not to be. But there is the

valence shift and this permits the patient to escape

the pain and still remain in the engram until he can

recount it.

Example: Father beating Mother, unborn child

knocked "unconscious." The data is available in the

11. crazy house: a fun house: an attraction at an amusement park

consisting of a series of rooms and passageways with sloping or

moving floors, distorting mirrors and other devices designed to

surprise or amuse.

414

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART ONE

father valence with no pain, in the mother valence with

her pain, in the child's valence with his pain.

The way to handle this, if the patient positively

refuses to enter it although he has somatics, is to shift

him in valence. The auditor says, "Go into your father's

valence and be your father for the moment." After some

persuasion the patient does so. "Bawl your mother out,"

says the auditor. "Give her a fine talking-to." The

patient is now on that circuit which contains no "uncon-

sciousness" and approximates the emotion and the words his father used to his mother. The auditor lets him do this a couple or three times until the charge is somewhat off the engram. Then he turns the patient's valence into the mother: "Be your mother for the moment now and talk back to your father," says the auditor. The patient shifts valence and is his mother and repeats his mother's phrases. "Now be yourself," says the auditor, "and recount the entire incident with all somatics and emotion, please." The patient is able to reexperience the incident as himself.

This works very well when one is trying to get at an ally. "Shift valence," says the auditor to the returned

patient, "and plead with your mother not to kill the
baby." "Now be a nurse," says the auditor, with the
preclear returned to some incident he seems very fear-
ful about entering, "and plead with a little boy to get
well." The patient will correct the auditor's concept of
the script and usually will proceed.

The patient will often refuse to go into a valence
because he hates it. This means there must be consider-
able charge in the person he refuses to be.

This mechanism is rarely used but is handy when a
case is stalling. The father did not obey the holders or
commands, he uttered them. The nurse would not obey
her own commands. And so forth. Thus many holders

415

L. RON HUBBARD

and deniers can be flushed¹² to view. It is useful in the

beginning of a case.*

Types of Chains

Engrams, particularly in the prenatal area, are in

chains. That is to say, there is a series of incidents of

similar types. This is useful classification because it

leads to some solutions. The chains one can most easily

contact in a preclear are the least charged. The most

aberrative chains will usually be the hardest to reach

because they contain the most active data. Remember

the rule that what the auditor finds hard to reach, the

analyzer of the patient found hard to reach. Here is a

list of chains—not all the possible chains by any

means—found in one case which had passed for "nor-

mal" for thirty-six years of his life.

Coitus chain, Father. First incident, zygote. Fifty-six

succeeding incidents. Two branches, Father drunk

and Father sober.

Coitus chain, lover. First incident, embryo. Eighteen

succeeding incidents. All painful because of en-

thusiasm of lover.

Constipation chain. First incident, zygote. Fifty-one

succeeding incidents. Each incident building high

pressure on child.

* Valence shift is seldom used except where an engram is

suspected which will not otherwise be approached by the pa-

tient. He will often approach the engram with valence shift when

he will not approach it as himself. Valence shift is somewhat

undesirable when employed on a suggestible subject since it

violates the Dianetic rule that no positive suggestion be used

beyond those absolutely necessary in returning and recounting

and uncovering data. Therefore valence shift is seldom employed

and rarely on a suggestible person. It should be considered a last

resort and practiced only when the preclear is entirely and

completely unable to confront and attack an engram which

the auditor is certain is present: and this is rare. —LRH

12. flushed: revealed; brought into the open; driven out.

416

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART ONE

Douche chain. First incident, embryo. Twenty-one suc-

ceeding incidents. One each day to missed period,

all into cervix.

Sickness chain. First incident, embryo. Five succeed-

ing incidents. Three colds. One case grippe.'3 One

vomiting spell—hangover.

Morning sickness chain. First incident, embryo.

Thirty-two succeeding incidents.

Contraceptive chain. First incident, zygote. One inci-

dent. Some paste substance into cervix.

Fight chain. First incident, embryo. Thirty-eight suc-

ceeding incidents. Three falls, loud voices, no

beating.

Attempted abortion, surgical.¹⁴ First incident, embryo.

Twenty-one succeeding incidents.

Attempted abortion, douche. First incident, fetus.

Two incidents. One using paste, one using Lysol,

very strong.

Attempted abortion, pressure. First incident, fetus.

Three incidents. One Father sitting on Mother.

Two Mother jumping off boxes.

Hiccup chain. First incident, fetus. Five incidents.

Accident chain. First incident, embryo. Eighteen inci-

dents. Various falls and collisions.

Masturbation chain. First incident, embryo. Eighty suc-

ceeding incidents. Mother masturbating with fin-

gers, jolting child and injuring child with orgasm.

Doctor chain. First incident, first missed period. Eight-

een visits. Doctor examination painful but doctor

an ally, discovering Mother attempting an abor-

tion and scolding her thoroughly.

Premature labor pains. Three days before actual birth.

13. grippe: influenza.

14. surgical: pertaining to or involving manual or operative

procedures.

417

L. RON HUBBARD

Birth. Instrument. Twenty-nine hours' labor.

In that Mother was a subvocal talker, this made a
sizable quantity of material to be erased, for the re-
mainder of the patient's life was in addition to this. This
was a five-hundred-hour case, nonsonic, imaginary re-
calls which had to be cancelled out by discovering lie

factories before the above data could be obtained.

There are other chains possible but this case was
picked because it contains the usual ones found. Mother's lover is not very unusual, unfortunately, for he puts
secrecy into a case to such an extent that when the case
seems very, very secret, then a lover or two will seem
indicated. But don't suggest them to a preclear. He may
use them for an avoid.

Dianetic Don'ts

Don't give any patient a positive suggestion as
therapy in itself or to assist therapy.

Don't fail to give a canceller at every session's

beginning and use it at every session's end.

Don't ever tell a patient he can "remember this in present time" because the somatic will come to present time and that is very uncomfortable.

Don't ever, ever, ever, ever tell a patient that he can remember everything that ever happened to him in present time because that groups everything in present time if the patient has slid into a deep trance. And that makes it necessary to unsnarl a whole case. Want to waste two hundred hours?

Don't ever retaliate in any way when a patient in reverie gets angry at you. Follow the Auditor's Code. If

you get angry with him you may throw him into an

apathy which will take you many hours to undo.

Don't evaluate data or tell a patient what is wrong

with him.

418

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART ONE

Don't crow.¹⁵ If the preclear is your wife or husband

or child, don't rub it in that the favorite argument

phrase was out of an engram. Of course it was!

Don't question the validity of data. Keep your reser-

vations to yourself. Audit the information for your own

guidance. If the patient doesn't know what you think,

the engrams will never get a chance to evade.

Don't ever snap a patient to present time just be-

cause he begs for it. If he is in the middle of an engram,

the only way out of it is through it. The power of the

engram is slight when the patient is returned to it. It

turns on hard when the patient comes to present time.

The patient will have a nervous shock if he is snapped

to present.

Don't ever get frightened, no matter what kind of

squirming or squalling¹⁶ a patient may do. It isn't

serious, any of it, although it is sometimes dramatic.

Don't ever promise to clear a case: promise only to

release it. You may have to go away or work on some-

thing more urgent. And a broken promise to a preclear

will be taken very hard.

Don't interfere with the private life of a preclear or

give him guidance. Tell him to make up his own mind

about what he should do.

Don't break the Auditor's Code. It is there to protect

you, not just the preclear. Therapy can't hurt him if you

do but half a job on it and do half of that wrong;

breaking the code can make you very uncomfortable

because it will make you a target of the preclear and

cost you considerable extra work.

Don't leave engrams half-reduced when you are

given them by the file clerk.

15. crow: boast in triumph; exult.

16. squalling: the condition or action of crying or screaming

loudly and harshly.

419

L. RON HUBBARD

Don't get inventive about Dianetics until you have
worked at least one case out. And don't get too inventive
until you have worked a case which has sonic, a case
which has shut-off sonic and a case which has imaginary
sonic. Clear these and you will know. And you will have
met enough engrams to get some ideas that can be of great

benefit to Dianetics. If you don't get ideas after that and

after you yourself are in therapy and cleared, there's

something wrong. Dianetics is an expanding science; but

don't expand it until you know which way it travels.

Don't mix gasoline and alcohol, or Dianetics and

other therapy except purely medical, dispensed by a

professional medical doctor.

Don't get a case snarled up and then take it to a

psychiatrist who knows no Dianetics. Only Dianetics

can unsnarl Dianetics and yesterday's methods won't

help your patient one slightest bit when all he needs is

another run through the one you snapped him out of too

fast. Take a cinch¹⁷ on your nerve and send him back

through the incident again. In Dianetics, today's obvious

nervous breakdown is tomorrow's most cheerful being.

Don't quit, don't balk. Just keep running engrams.

And one day you'll have a Release. And another day

you'll have a Clear.

Types of Somatics

There are two kinds of somatics, those which properly belong to the patient and those which belong to his mother or some other person. The first actually happened, so did the second. But the patient should not have his mother's somatics. If he does, if he is found complaining of headaches whenever his mother has a

headache, there is an engram, very early, which says he

must have whatever she has: "The baby is part of me,"

17. cinch: (colloquial) a firm grip.

420

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART ONE

"I want him to suffer as I suffer," etc. Or the phrase

may be some entirely misunderstood thing literally

taken. However, all this "comes out in the wash"¹⁸ and

should be no great concern of the auditor's.

"Unconsciousness"

While "unconsciousness" has been covered elsewhere in various ways, in therapy it has two special manifestations: the yawn and the "boil-off."

The engram of physical pain contains deep "unconsciousness" and if it is going to lift, particularly in the basic area, it comes off in yawns. After a first or second recounting, the patient starts to yawn. These yawns are turning on his analyzer.

In a very extreme engram—a prenatal electric shock which Mother received—five hours of "unconsciousness" "boil-off" have taken place during therapy. The shock lasted for less than a minute but so close did it bring

the individual to death that when the incident was first

contacted in therapy, he swam and floundered and had

strange dreams, muttered and mumbled for five hours.

That is a record. Forty-five minutes of this "boil-off" is

rare. Five or ten minutes of it is not uncommon.

The auditor will take a patient into an area. No

somatic turns on. But the patient begins to drowse into a

strange kind of sleep. He rouses from this from time to

time, mutters something, usually idiotic, rouses again

with a dream and generally makes no progress to all

appearances. But progress is being made. A period

when he was almost dead is coming up to the surface.

Soon a somatic will turn on and the patient will run an

engram a few times on command, will yawn a little and

then brighten up. Such a quantity of "unconsciousness"

was, of course, sufficient to keep his analyzer about

18. comes out in the wash: is revealed; becomes known.

421

L. RON HUBBARD

nine-tenths shut off when he was awake, for, if it was

near basic, it was part of every other engram. Such an

engram, with such deep "unconsciousness," when re-

leased, produces a marked improvement in a case, as

much as a painful emotion engram at times.

It is up to the auditor to sit it through no matter how long it takes. It may make an uncleared auditor very sleepy to watch all this but it should be done. He will rarely strike one that lasts an hour but every case has such a period lasting from ten minutes to a half-hour.

He should stir the patient up once in a while and try to make him go through the engram. There is a very special way to stir a patient into life: don't touch his body for it may be highly restimulative and make him very upset. Touch only the bottoms of his feet with your hand or your own feet and touch them just enough to jog¹⁹ him into attention for a moment. That keeps the "boil-off" in progress and does not permit the patient

to sag into ordinary sleep.

The "boil-off" can be confused, by an inexperienced auditor, with an engram command to sleep. However, if the auditor will observe the patient closely, he will find that in the "boil-off" the patient gives every appearance of being drugged, while in a sleep command he simply goes to sleep and does it very smoothly. The "boil-off" is a trifle restless, full of mutterings and flounderings and dreams. The sleep is smooth.

An engramic command to go to sleep, acting on the returned preclear, is broken by sending the somatic strip to the moment when the sleep command is given.

If the preclear contacts it and goes over it, he will

quickly awaken on the track and continue with therapy.

The "boil-off" may be full of yawns, mutterings or

grunts. Sleep is usually quiet and gentle.

19. jog: stir or jolt into activity or alertness, as by a hint or

reminder.

422

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART ONE

Just why this is called a boil-off and just why

auditors are fond of the term is obscure. It was origi-

nally and sedately named "comatic²⁰ reduction" but

such erudition²¹ has been outvoted by the fact that it has

never been used.

If you are fond of listening to dreams, you will find

them in plenty in the "boil-off." As images on the

desert are distorted by the glass snakes of heat waves,

so are the engramic commands distorted to the analyzer

through the veil of "unconsciousness."

Locks

It is one of the blessings of nature that the lock is

something which needs minor attention. A lock is an

incident which, with or without charge, is in conscious

recall and which seems to be the reason the aberree is

aberrated. Perhaps this was another way the bank protected itself. A lock is a moment of mental discomfort containing no physical pain and no great loss. A scolding, a social disgrace: such things are locks. Any case has thousands and thousands of locks. The auditor will discover them in plenty if he cares to waste time looking for them. The treatment of these locks was the main goal of an old art known as "hypnoanalysis." Most of them can be reduced.

The key-in of an engram takes place at some future date from the time the engram was actually received.

The key-in moment contains analytical reduction from weariness or slight illness. A situation similar to the

engram, which contained "unconsciousness," came

about and keyed in the engram. This is a primary lock.

Breaking it, if it can be found, produces the effect of

20. comatic: of a coma (a period of deep, prolonged uncon-

sciousness usually resulting from a severe injury or illness).

21. erudition: exhibition of knowledge not easily understood by

the average person.

423

L. RON HUBBARD

keying out the engram. But it can be considered a waste

of time even if it has some therapeutic value and was

used, without understanding, by some past schools.

If an auditor wants to know how the case was

reacting to life, he can find some of these thousands

and thousands of locks and look them over. But that is

probably all the interest he has in them, for locks

discharge. They discharge automatically the moment

the engram holding them is erased. A whole life rebal-

ances itself when the engrams are gone and the locks

need no treatment. Neither does the preclear, now

cleared, need education as to how to think: like the

blowing of locks, this is an automatic process.

These locks lie down amongst the engrams some-

times. The preclear may be deep in the prenatal area

and suddenly think about a time when he was twenty or,

as is common in therapy, think about an engram he

heard from somebody else. This is a good clue. Pay no

further heed to the lock: find the engram to which it

attached itself, for there is an engram immediately with

it. In dreams, these locks in distorted form come swim-

ming up out of the bank, complicating the dream.

The Junior Case

Do not take on a Junior for your first case if you can

avoid it. If Father was named George and the patient is

called George, beware of trouble. The engram bank

takes George to mean George and that is identity

thought deluxe.

Mother says, "I hate George!" "That means Junior,"

says the engram, though Mother meant Father. "George is

thoughtless." "George must not know." "Oh, George, I

wish you had some sex appeal, but you haven't." And so

go the engrams. A Junior case is seldom easy.

It is customary to shudder, in Dianetics, at the thought

of taking on a Junior case. An auditor can be expected

424

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART ONE

to slave his hardest when he has a case with nonsonic,

which is off the time track and which is named after

Father or Mother. Such cases resolve, of course, but if parents knew what they did to children by giving them any name which might appear in the engram bank, such as that of parents or grandparents or friends, it is certain the custom would vanish instanter.²²

Restimulating the Engram

"Ask often enough and you will receive," is always true when working the engram bank. Simply by returning into an area enough times engrams will appear. If it is not there today, it will be there tomorrow. But if it is not there tomorrow, it will be there the day after and so

forth. Emotional discharges are most certainly located

by asking for them time after time, returning the patient

over the part of the track where the charge is expected to

lie. What repeater technique will fail to do can be done by

returning the patient, session after session, to a portion of

his life. Sooner or later it will come into view.

Occluded Life Periods and People

Whole areas of the time track will be found oc-

cluded. These contain suppressors by way of engram

command, ally computations and painful emotion. Per-

sons can vanish utterly from sight for these reasons.

They come to view after a few engrams have been lifted

in basic or the area has been developed as above.

Animosity Toward Parents

It always happens, when one clears a child or adult,
that the preclear goes through stages of improvement
which bring him up the Tone Scale and cause him, of
course, to pass through the second zone, anger. A preclear

22. instanter: immediately; at once.

425

L. RON HUBBARD

may become furious with his parents and other offenders

in the engram bank. Such a situation is to be expected. It

is a natural byproduct of therapy and it cannot be avoided.

As the case progresses, the tone level, of course, rises

and places the preclear in a state of boredom toward the

villains who have wronged him. At last he reaches tone 4,

which is the tone of the Clear. At this time he is very

cheerful and willing to be friends with people whether

they have wronged him or not: of course he has the data

about what to expect of them, but he nurses no animosity.

If a parent feels that the child, knowing all, would

turn against him, then the parent is mistaken. The child

has already, as an aberree, turned very thoroughly

against the parent whether his analyzer knows all or

not, and the most uncertain and unlovely conduct may

result from further hiding of the evidence.

It is a matter of continual observation that the good

Release and the Clear feel no animosity whatever toward

their parents or others who had caused their aberrations

and indeed stop negating, defending and fighting so irra-

tionally. The Clear will fight, certainly, for a good cause

and he will be the most dangerous opponent possible, but

he does not fight for irrational reasons like an animal, and

his understanding of people is very much enlarged and his

affection can at last be deep. If a parent wishes love and

cooperation from a child, no matter what he has done to

that child, permit therapy and achieve that love and co-
operation with the child self-determined and no longer
secretly in apathy or rage. After all, the Clear has learned
the source of his parents' aberrations as well as his own;
he recognizes that they had engram banks before he did.

Propitiation

In the process of work a stage will be passed, in the
upper range of apathy, of propitiation. This conciliation
is an effort to feed or sacrifice to an all-destructive

force. It is a state wherein the patient, in deep fear of another, offers expensive presents and soft words, turns the other cheek, offers himself as a doormat and generally makes a fool out of himself.

Many, many marriages, for instance, are marriages not of love but of that shabby substitute, propitiation.

People have a habit of marrying people who have similar reactive minds. This is unfortunate, for such marriages are destructive to both partners. She has a certain set of aberrations: they match his. She is pseudomother, he is pseudofather. She had to marry him because Father tried to murder her before she was born. He had to marry her because Mother beat him when he was a child. Incredible

as it may seem, these marriages are very common: one or the other partner becomes mentally ill, or both may deteriorate. He is unhappy, his enthusiasms crushed; she is miserable. Either with another partner might be a happy person, yet, out of fear, they cannot break apart. They must propitiate each other.

The auditor who finds a marriage in this condition and attempts to treat one of the partners had better treat both simultaneously. Or such partners had better treat each other and soon. Tolerance and understanding are almost always fostered²³ by mutual help.

Propitiation is mentioned here because it has a diagnostic value. People who start bringing the auditor expen-

sive gifts are propitiating him, and it probably means that

they have a computation which tells them, engrammatically,

that they will die or go crazy if they become sane. The

auditor may enjoy the gifts, but he had better start looking

for a sympathy engram not yet suspected or tapped.

Love

Probably no single subject in the concerns of man

has received as much attention as love.

23. fostered: helped to grow or develop; stimulated; promoted.

L. RON HUBBARD

It is not untrue that where one finds the greatest

controversy, there he will also find the least comprehen-

sion. And where the facts are least precise there one can

also find the greatest arguments. And so it is with love.

Without doubt, love has ruined more lives than war

and made more happiness than all the dreams of paradise.

Entangled with a thousand songs a year and sub-

merged beneath a solid tonnage²⁴ of poor literature, love

should have a proper chance to be defined.

It has been discovered that there are three kinds of

love between woman and man: the first is covered under

the law of affinity and is the affection with which
mankind holds mankind; the second is sexual selection
and is a true magnetism between partners; the third is
compulsive "love" dictated by nothing more reasonable
than aberration.

Perhaps in the hero and heroine legends there have
been cases of the second kind, and surely as one looks
about him in this society he can discover numbers of
happy partnerships based on a natural and strongly affec-
tionate admiration. The third kind we find in plenty:
tabloid²⁵ literature is devoted to it and its travails; it crams
the courts with urgent pleas for divorce, with criminal acts
and civil suits; it sends children weeping into the corner

away from quarrels; and it launches from its broken

homes broken young women and men.

Dianetics classifies this third kind of love as "reac-

tive mind partnership." Here is a meeting of minds—

but the minds are on the lowest computational level

possessed by man. Driven together by compulsion, men

and women mate who will find in that mating nothing

but sorrow and reduction of their hopes.

He is pseudobrother who beat her regularly or he is

24. tonnage: weight, measured in tons.

25. tabloid: a newspaper usually half the normal size, with many

pictures and short, often sensational, news stories.

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART ONE

pseudofather whom she had to mind. Maybe he is even

pseudomother who screamed ceaselessly at her but whom

she had to placate,²⁶ and he might be the doctor who hurt

her so savagely. She may be his pseudomother, his

pseudograndmother whom he had to love despite the way

she undermined his decision; she may be a pseudonurse in

some operation long gone or the pseudoteacher who kept

him after school to whet²⁷ her sadism upon him.

Before the marriage takes place they only know

there is a compulsion that they must be together, a

feeling that each must be extremely nice to the other.

And then the marriage takes place and more and more

restimulation of ancient pain is felt until at last each is

ill and life, complicated now perhaps by unhappy chil-

dren, is an unhappy ruin.

The mechanism of propitiation carries with it covert

hostility. Gifts given without cause and beyond the

ability to expend, self-sacrifices which seem so noble at

the time compose propitiation. Propitiation is an apathy

effort to hold away a dangerous "source" of pain. Mis-

taken identity is one of the minor errors of the reactive

mind. To buy off, to nullify the possible anger of a person

perhaps long since dead but living now again in the partner, is the hope of propitiation. But a man is dead who will not sometimes fight. The hostility may be masked, it may be entirely "unknown" to the individual who indulges it. Certainly it is always justified in the mind of the person who exerts it and is supposed to be a natural consequence of some entirely obvious offense.

The wife who makes inadvertent blunders before the guests and by them accidentally gives away the truth of her husband's favorite myth, the wife who forgets the little favors he has asked, the wife who suddenly stabs

26. placate: stop from being angry; appease; pacify; mollify.

27. whet: make keen or eager; stimulate.

429

L. RON HUBBARD

him with a "logical" pin in the region of his hopes:

these are wives who live with partners whom they must,

out of some wrong done years before the courtship and

by some other man, propitiate, and these are wives

who, propitiating, numb the hopes and misunderstand

the sorrows of their mates.

The husband who sleeps with another woman and

"accidentally" leaves the lipstick on his tie, the husband

who finds her excellent cooking bad and idleness in her

days, the husband who forgets her letters he must mail,

the husband who finds her opinions silly: these are hus-

bands who live with partners whom they must propitiate.

A soaring, roller-coaster curve of peace and war in

the home, failures to understand, mutual curtailment of

liberty and self-determinism, unhappy lives, unhappy

children and divorce are caused by reactive mind mar-

riages. Compelled by an unknown threat to marry,

repelled by fear of pain from trust, this "meeting of

minds" is the primary cause of all marital disaster.

The law lacked definition and so invoked great

difficulty in the path of those involved in such marriages.

The track of it is the dwindling spiral of misery which
accompanies all chronic restimulation and leads only
down to failure and to death. Someday there will, perhaps,
exist a much more sentient law that only the unaberrated
can marry and bear children. The present law only pro-
vides that marriages must be at best most difficult to part.
Such a law is like a prison sentence for the husband, the
wife and the children—all and every one.

A marriage can be saved by clearing its partners of
their aberrations. An optimum solution would include
this in any case since it is most difficult for a wife or a
husband to rise, even when divorced, to any future
plane of happiness: and where there are children, if

clearing is not effected, a great injustice has been done.

It is usually discovered that when both partners in a

430

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART ONE

reactive mind marriage are cleared of aberration, life

becomes considerably more than tolerable; for human

beings often have a natural liking even when no sexual

selection has been present. The restoration of a mar-

riage by clearing the partners may not bring about one

of the great loves that poets strummed about, but it will

at least bring a high level of respect and cooperation

toward the common goal of making life worthwhile.

And in many marriages so cleared it was discovered
that the partners, beneath the dirty cloth of aberration,
loved each other well.

A major gain to such a clearing is for the children's
sake. Nearly all marital discontent has as its major
factor aberration on the second dynamic, sex. And any
such aberration includes a nervous disposition²⁸ toward
children.

Where there are children, divorce does not answer,
clearing does. And with clearing comes a fresh new
page of life on which happiness can be written.

In the case of the reactive mind marriage, turnabout
clearing is often complicated by the concealed hostili-

ties which lie below the propitiative mechanism. It is wise for the partners to look outside the home, each interesting a friend in a therapy turnabout. If such mutual clearing is begun, with the partners working on each other, much restraint of anger and exertion of patience must be practiced, and the Auditor's Code must be most severely followed. It requires a saintly detachment to bear the tone 1 of the partner who, returned to a quarrel, seasons the recountings with further recrimination. If it must be done, it can be done but, when many quarrels and travails have beset²⁹ a

28. disposition: state of mind regarding something; inclination.

29. beset: encompassed; surrounded; assailed; possessed detri-

mentally: said of the difficulties, perils or obstacles which sur-

round an action, work or course.

431

L. RON HUBBARD

couple, it is easier if they each look without³⁰ the home

for a therapy partner.

Additionally, there is a kind of "rapport" estab-

lished between any auditor and preclear and, after the

therapy session is done, a strengthening of the natural

affinity is such that a small deed or word may be taken

as a savage attack with the result of a quarrel and the

inhibition of therapy.

Men can be considered to be best audited by men

and women by women. This condition is changed when

one deals with a woman who has such severe aberra-

tions about women that she is in fear around them or

when one is auditing a man who has deep fear of men.

The dynamics of men and women are somehow

different and a wife, particularly if there have ever been

quarrels of any magnitude, sometimes finds it difficult

at times to be sufficiently insistent to audit her husband.

The husband may audit, in the usual case, without great

difficulty but when in therapy himself, his feeling that

he must rise superior to the situation forces him to

attempt autocontrol,³¹ a thing which is impossible.

The Erasure

Sooner or later—if you keep trying—you will get

basic-basic, the earliest moment of "unconsciousness"

and physical pain. You will know when you have it,

perhaps, only because things start to erase rather than

reduce. If the patient still has a sonic shut-off, you can

still erase: sooner or later that sonic will turn on,

30. without: on the outside; outside.

31. autocontrol: autohypnosis or an attempt to process oneself

without an auditor. If attempted in Dianetics, autohypnosis is

probably as close to fruitless masochism as one can get. If a patient places himself in autohypnosis and regresses himself in an effort to reach illness or birth or prenatals, the only thing he will get is ill.

432

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART ONE

perhaps not even until the case is almost finished. You will reach basic-basic sooner or later.

The erasure, then, is more or less the same procedure as the entrance. You erase all the early engrams, always the earliest you can find, and you keep discharg-

ing painful emotion engrams either in the basic area or

in the later periods after birth and later in life. You

erase as much as you can find in the early part of the

case, then you release all the emotion you can find later

in the case (erase everything in each engram you touch)

and then you come back and find early material.

The reactive engram bank is a hurrah's nest.³² The

file clerk must have a great deal of trouble with it. For

things are keyed in early and late, sometimes all he can

get is material under certain topics; sometimes all he

can get is material under certain somatics (all teeth, for

instance); sometimes he can go in an orderly parade

forward in time and give consecutive incidents: this last

is the most important proceeding.

Not until you have worked out every moment of

physical pain and discharged all the moments of painful

emotion will the case be cleared. There will be times

when you are sure that you are almost to the goal only

to discover, going into the prenatal area again, a new

series of material uncovered by the later life painful

emotion you have released.

One day you will find a case which will not have any

occlusions anywhere on the track, which will no longer

be interested in engrams (apathy cases aren't interested

at the start; Clears, at the top level, are not interested

either, making a cycle, though the Clear is a long way

from apathetic), which will have all recalls, which will

compute accurately and make no errors (within the

limitations of the data available) and which, in short,

32. hurrah's nest: state of utmost confusion; a mess.

433

L. RON HUBBARD

has an exhausted engram bank. But do not be too optimis-

tic, ever. Keep looking until you are sure. Observe the

case to make certain no aberrations are displayed about

anything, that dynamics are high in it and that life is

good. If this person now feels he can solve all the prob-

lems of life, lick³³ the world with one hand tied behind him

and feel a friend to all men, you have a Clear.

The only way you can go wrong is to compute with the

idea that human beings are full of error and evil and sin

and that if you have made a person less unhappy and

above normal he is to be judged a Clear. This is a Release.

In gold panning,³⁴ it is true that every tenderfoot³⁵

mistakes iron pyrites—fool's gold—for gold. The ten-

derfoot will crow with delight over a bright bit of

something in his pan which, actually, is worth a few

dollars a ton. And then he sees real gold! The moment

he sees real gold in that pan, he knows what gold really

looks like. It cannot be mistaken.

Aside from the fact that psychometry³⁶ would show a Clear phenomenally intelligent, would show his aptitude and versatility wide, there is another quality, the human quality of a freed man. You take a Release through psychometry and show him to be above normal, too. But a Clear is a Clear and when you see it you will know it with no further mistake.

That a Clear is no longer interested in his extinct engrams does not mean he is not interested in the troubles of others. That a person is not interested in his own engrams does not necessarily argue a Clear but may well be another mechanism, the apathy of neglect.

33. lick: overcome or defeat, as in a fight, game or contest.

34. gold panning: separating (gold, etc.) from gravel by washing

it in a pan.

35. tenderfoot: a raw, inexperienced person; novice.

36. psychometry: measurement of psychological variables, as

intelligence, aptitude and emotional disturbance.

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART ONE

To have engrams and neglect them is a common aberration

with the reactive mind on a Tone Scale level of

apathy. To have no engrams and neglect them is another

thing. Every apathy case, neglecting his engrams as an answer to his woe, insisting he is happy, insisting, as he racks himself to pieces, that there is nothing wrong with him, will, in work, particularly after basic-basic is lifted, become interested in his engrams and more interested in life. It is easy to tell the apathy case from the Clear for the two are at opposite ends of the spectrum of life: the Clear has soared up toward victory and triumph; the apathy case knows victory and triumph are not for him and explains they are not worth it.

What the life span of a Clear is cannot be answered now; ask in a hundred years.

How can you tell a Clear? How close does the man

measure to optimum for man? Can he adjust to his environment smoothly? And far more important, can he adjust that environment to him?

Sixty days and again six months after a Clear has apparently been effected, the auditor should again make a search for any neglected material. He should question the possible Clear carefully as to the events of the past interval. In such a way he can learn of any worries, concerns or illnesses which may have taken place and attempt to trace these to engrams. If he cannot then find engrams, the Clear is definitely and without question, cleared. And he will stay that way.

If a case merely stalls, however, and while aberration seems to be present, engrams cannot be found, the cause probably lies with thoroughly masked despair charges—painful emotional engrams. These are not necessarily postnatal, they can be within the prenatal period and involve circumstances which are very secret—or so the engrams announce. Also, some cases have stalled and proven "impenetrable" because of a

435

L. RON HUBBARD

current or immediately past circumstance the patient has not revealed.

There are two reasons which can delay a case:

a. The person may be so aberratedly ashamed of

his past or so certain of retribution³⁷ if he

reveals it that he does nothing but avoid; and

b. The person may be in fear because of some

existing circumstance or threat.

The auditor is not interested in what the patient

does. Or in what the patient has done. Dianetics treats³⁸

of what has been done to the person exclusively in

therapy. What has been done by a patient is of no

concern. The auditor who would make it any concern is

practicing something other than Dianetics. However, a

patient, because of his engrams, may become obsessed

with the idea that he must hide something in his life

from the auditor. The two general classes above cover

the general conditions.

These active reasons, as under (a), may be such a

thing as a prison sentence, a murder hitherto unknown

(although many people think they have done murder

who have not even threatened it to anyone), abnormal

sexual practices or some such circumstance. The audi-

tor should promise not to reveal any confidential mat-

ter, purely as a matter of routine and explain the

principle of "done to, not done by." And no auditor

would taunt or revile a patient for having been victim-

ized by his engrams. As under (b) there may exist some

person, even the wife or husband, who has cowed³ the

patient into secrecy. One case is at hand where no

advance was made although there were many incidents

37. retribution: punishment one deserves for a wrong that he has

done.

38. treats: deals with a subject in writing or speech; speaks or

writes (of).

39. cowed: subdued by frightening with threats or force.

contacted: the incidents would not reduce or erase no

matter where they were. It was discovered that this case,

a woman, had been beaten savagely and often by her

husband and that she had been threatened with death if

she told the auditor a word of these acts; and yet these

acts contained the whole despair charges of the case and

had to be released. Seeing this, finally suspecting, the

auditor was able to gain her confidence and locate the

despair charges. Even if he had not gained her confi-

dence, by constant restimulation of late-life areas he

would have provoked her tears. In another case, that of

a small child, "dub-in" recall was so obvious and lie

factories were so busy that the auditor at last realized

that he was attempting to penetrate not just the secrecy

on an engram but the secrecy imposed upon a child by someone at hand. The mother, in this case, out of the idea that she would be apprehended, had furiously threatened the child to say nothing about his treatment at home.

There was more than this behind the case: there were eighty-one attempted abortions, an incredible number.

Anything is the business of an auditor if it has become an engram. If society has jailed a man, if all is not well in the home, these are things done to a person. What the person did to "deserve" this treatment is of no concern.

The Foreign-Language Case

Now and again an auditor will encounter a strange sort

of holdup in a case. He will be unable to get anything to clear or make sense in the prenatal area, and sometimes in childhood as well as the prenatal area. He may be encountering a "foreign-language case." Occasionally, the child did not know he was born to other parents (who may have spoken a foreign tongue) than those he has known as his parents. This is a special sort of mix-up of its own which is rather easily resolved simply by running engrams. It is always possible for the patient to forget that his parents

437

L. RON HUBBARD

spoke some other tongue in the home. Another tongue

than the one the patient is using or other than that of the

country in which the patient resides is, in one way, an

asset: it gives a prenatal area which is very difficult to

restimulate although it may still be acting upon the pa-

tient's mind. But it is no asset to the auditor, who must

now deal with a patient who does not know the language,

who may not have sonic recall and yet has an engram

bank full of data which once had meaning and really is his

basic language.

The best remedy for such a case is to get an auditor

who knows both the language used in the prenatal area

and the present tongue. Another remedy is to take a

dictionary to the case and figure out the bouncers, et

al., from the dictionary. Another way is to return the

patient often enough into the infant period that he

begins to pick up the language again (making the file

drawer of it come forth) and then ask the patient for

phrases which, in the foreign tongue, would mean this

or that. Gradually he may recover the language and so

exhaust the bank. This is an extremely difficult case

only when there was no childhood use of the other

tongue. Given childhood use of that tongue, the auditor

simply keeps returning the patient to childhood when he

knew the tongue and then returning him into the prena-

tal area; the patient can translate what is happening.

The cliches of other tongues -than that the auditor speaks are often quite productive of other literal meanings than comparable cliches in the auditor's tongue.

This difference of cliché is a very responsible agent in the social aberrations of one nation as they differ from those of another. "I have hot," says the Spaniard. "I am hot," says the Englishman. Engrammatically, they mean different things, even if they mean the same to the analyzer.

Mechanisms and Aspects of

Therapy—Part Two

Extrasensory Perception

Every time the auditor has a case with dub-in recall

or which is highly charged with emotion, the case may

return into the prenatal area and start describing sce-

nery. This is the awe and wonder of some beholders.

There is the patient in the womb and yet he can "see"

outside. The patient tells about Father and Mother and

where they are sitting and what the bedroom looks like,

and yet there he is in the womb. Some pretty theories

can be advanced for this: one of them is that the

tortured fetus develops extrasensory perception in order

to see what is coming next. ESP is an excellent theory

and some observation may confirm it, but not in the

fetus.

One must recall that the fetus, even if it has highly

developed and clever cells, is yet not a truly rational

organism. The presence of the engram does not neces-

sarily mean that the fetus could think. The engram

became most severely aberrative when the child finally

learned speech. The engram is not a memory but a

recording of pain and percepts.

Returning a grown man or a child into the prenatal

area returns there an experienced mind which, connect-

ing with these engrams, forms conclusions. To listen to

some preclears one would think they read Keats' and

drank lemonade every afternoon at four throughout the

prenatal period.

1. Keats: John Keats (1795-1821), English poet, considered one

of the greatest English poets. His poems are unequalled for

dignity, melody and richness of imagery.

439

L. RON HUBBARD

To return reason and analytical power back into a

period when neither reason nor analytical power existed, of course, impinges upon the returned individual many ideas. All he is supposed to run are the engrams and their contents. He may additionally, by dream mechanisms and current computation, try to fashion in a whole technicolor picture of the scenery.

This prenatal ESP does not in fact exist. It has been proven, after considerable test, that whenever the returned preclear thinks he sees something, the scenery itself is mentioned in the engrams and gives him an imaginary picture of it. There is no prenatal ESP, in other words. There are only descriptions and actions which suggest scenery and these suggestions, operating

now upon the imagination, bring about the supposed

visio.

This is most chronic with patients who have high-powered lie factories. When the auditor sees this, he begins to form a notion of the case he is engaged upon; he knows "dub-in sonic" may be used and he should find and discharge all painful emotion he can reach, for it is this painful emotion which so disposes a case to avoid. He can find, then, the lie factory itself, not the lie factory of the lie factory which produces lie factories, but the actual engram which causes all this delusion.

However, never bring a preclear up short on this

material. Don't tell him it is imaginary, you'll drive the
lie factory into higher effort. For there are sympathy
computations here, despairful losses, great prenatal
pain and childhood neglect. And it would take little to
shatter what self-confidence this patient has managed to
assemble. Therefore walk softly, look for despair
charges, allies, sympathy engrams and get the lie fac-
tory. Then the case will settle down and progress to
Clear.

Electric Shock

It has been found important, in entering a case, to

locate and relieve all engrams caused by electric shock

of whatever kind. These seem to produce a grouping of

engrams, whether they are received prenatally (as some

have been), accidentally or at the hands of psychiatrists.

Any electric shock seems to have more than usual force

in the engram bank and apparently deranges the

memory files of both past and future events surrounding

the shock area. Further, electric shock injury contains a

great depth of "unconsciousness" which thereafter

holds the analytical mind in a reduced state.

Tacit Consent

In the case of two preclears working on each other, each one assuming in his turn the auditor's role, a condition can arise where each prevents the other from contacting certain engrams.

For example, preclear A has an ally computation concerning a dog. He unknowingly seeks to protect this "prosurvival" engram within himself although, of course, failure to release it will hinder therapy. As he audits preclear B he has a tendency to project his own problems into preclear B, which is to say he has some slight confusion of identity. If preclear B is known to have some "prosurvival" engram about a dog, then

preclear A, auditing, will actually avoid making pre-

clear B contact B's own engram. This is a mistaken

2. tacit consent: in the case of two preclears working on each

other, each one assuming in his turn the auditor's role, a condi-

tion can arise where each prevents the other from contacting

certain engrams. This is tacit consent. A husband and wife may

have a mutual period of quarrels and unhappiness. Engaged upon

clearing each other, working alternately as auditor, they avoid,

unknowingly, but by reactive computation, the mutual period,

thus leaving in place painfully emotional engrams.

idea that by letting B keep his dog engram, A can retain

his dog engram. This is "tacit consent." It might be

summed as a bargain: "If you don't make me get well, I

won't make you get well." This should be guarded

against: once known that such a condition exists and

that such reluctance to clear the other is manifested,

"tacit consent" ceases.

It may also happen that a husband and wife may

have a mutual period of quarrels or unhappiness. En-

gaged upon clearing each other, working alternately as

auditor, they avoid, unknowingly but by reactive com-

putation, the mutual period, thus leaving in place pain-

fully emotional engrams.

Tacit consent is not easily recognized by the individuals so involved, and precludes, alternating as auditors, should be very wary of it for it cannot do other than slow a case.

Emotion and Pain Shut-offs*

A case which manifests no emotion or cannot feel pain when emotion and pain should be present in some incident is suffering from a "feeling" shut-off: this most likely will be found in the prenatal area. The word feeling means both pain and emotion: thus the phrase, "I can't feel anything," may be an anesthetic for both.

If an exteriorized view of the incident (where the patient sees himself and is not in himself) or what pretends to be prenatal "ESP" is present, the emotional shut-off probably stems from painful emotion engrams in late life or at least postbirth. If there is no exteriorized view and the patient is within himself, and yet no sharpness of pain or emotion manifests itself while he is

* The somatic strip works in all shut-off's whether the patient feels it or not. The somatic strip also obeys but no somatic turns on when the incident is occluded by "unconsciousness," the somatic appearing after the "boil-off." —LRH

/

running through an engram, an early emotional shut-off

or an early pain shut-off should be suspected and

should be located by repeater technique. Run the words

"no emotion" until a paraphrase is obtained: run the

words "I can't feel," or some other phrase meaning the

same thing and the patient, if the engrams are available

and are not suppressed by others, will eventually respond.

It may happen that a case may "work" very well,

which is to say, that engrams present themselves and

can be run and reduced, without emotion manifesting

itself as part of the content and with somatics which are

dull and not so much pain as simply pressure. If the

pain and emotion shut-offs do not yield at first to
repeater technique, many engrams may have to be run
in the basic area without pain or emotion but only with
pressure and word content. In such a case, pain and
emotion can eventually be contacted, after which ther-
apy is more beneficial.

Exteriorized Mews

Whenever you find a patient, returned, outside him-
self and seeing himself, that patient is off the track. He
should not be told so, but the despair charges, which is
to say, the painful emotion engrams, should be found as

soon as possible and discharged. This is something of

the same mechanism as the ESP described above.

Telepathy

Every few cases some preclear may try to palm off

telepathy as an aberrative factor. This is more rainbow

chasing. There may be telepathy but, so far as research

has shown, the fetus doesn't receive any and even if he

receives it, it is not aberrative in any way.

Exhaustive tests were made on telepathy and ESP

and in every case an explanation was found which did

not need to go into mind reading or radar sight.

L. RON HUBBARD

When a patient tries to tell the auditor that he is
reciting Mother's thoughts received prenatally, be cer-
tain that somewhere around there is an engram in which
she says these exact, words aloud. Mothers, especially
when aberrated severely and especially when aberrated
severely enough to attempt abortion, have many en-
grams they dramatize. The power of the dramatization
commonly manifests itself as monologues. Some moth-
ers have a very great deal to say to themselves when
alone. All of this speech is, of course, transmitted to the
child when he is injured, and he may be injured without

Mother being injured as in an attempted abortion. For considerable time after such an injury the child is usually "unconscious" and in pain; he therefore records in engrams these monologues (and often the voice is quite loud). He doesn't hear it: it is simply cellularly recorded.

All such monologuing is aberrative, of course, and produces some remarkable patterns of insanity and neurosis.

But of telepathy, there is none that is aberrative so far as we know at this time. So the auditor should not accept telepathy any more than he would accept ESP.

Prenatal Living Conditions

It is very noisy in the womb. A person may think he

has sonic and yet hear no "womb" sounds, which

means that he does not have sonic but only "dub-in."

Intestinal squeaks and groans, flowing water, belches,

flatulence and other body activities of the mother pro-

duce a continual sound.

It is also very tight in later prenatal life.

In a high blood pressure case, it is extremely horri-

ble in the womb.

When Mother takes quinine,³ a high ringing noise

3. quinine: a bitter medicinal drug used to treat malaria and in

tonics,

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY — PART Two

may come into being in the fetal ears as well as her

own—a ringing which will carry through a person's

whole life.

Mother gets morning sickness, has hiccups and gets

colds, coughs and sneezes.

This is prenatal life.

The only reason anybody "wanted" to "return to the

womb" was because somebody hit Mother and yelled

"Come back here!" so the person does.

The Engram Filing System

Engrams are not filed in the orderly fashion managed by a cleared standard bank. Engrams are filed in a way which would defy Alexander. Hence, it is difficult to know when the proper consecutive item will appear.

Time, topic, value, somatic and emotion are the methods of filing.

The return from basic-basic may be an apparent orderly progress into late life. Suddenly a discharge is triggered and discharged. The auditor looks back at the prenatal area and finds a whole new series of incidents in view. Progress is then begun back to present time, step by step, another discharge is triggered and another series of prenatals comes into sight.

These are erased and progress is made back toward

present time when still another despair charge is re-

leased and still more prenatals come to view. These are

erased and so forth and so on.

The engram filing system gives out data by somatic,

time, topic, value or emotion. Usually the file clerk

hands out material on the basis of time and topic.

Emotion in the bank keeps the file clerk from getting at

a certain series of incidents; when the emotion is dis-

charged, the incidents become available and incidents

are brought out until another emotional charge stops the

file clerk. The wit of the auditor is most used, not in

L. RON HUBBARD

getting prenataals, but in finding these later-life emo-

tional charges and discharging them.

All in all the engram filing system is very poor,

unlike the standard bank. But it is also very vulnerable

now that we understand it.

The engram filing system data can be erased. Stand-

ard bank data cannot be erased. Pain is perishable—

pleasure endures.

Alleviation

The psychoanalyst or general counselor in human relations is occasionally faced with a type of problem which Dianetics, applied in small quantity, can resolve easily.

It is possible, when a person has been too disturbed by an event of the day to address himself to the problem at hand, to alleviate his disturbance with a few minutes of work.

A sudden change in the aspect of a patient, a sudden deterioration of his serenity, generally stems from some incident which has caused him mental anguish. Although this change of mind has its source in the re-stimulation of an engram, the moment of restimulation,

which is a lock, may be addressed and alleviated with

success.

Using reverie or merely asking the patient to close

his eyes, the analyst can request him to return and be in

the instant wherein he was disturbed. That instant may

be in the same day or the same week as the office call.

A moment of analytical shutdown will be discovered

wherein some restimulative person or circumstance up-

set the equilibrium⁴ of the patient. This moment is a

lock. It can be recounted, ordinarily, as an engram and

4. equilibrium: mental or emotional balance; evenness of mind

or temper; composure.

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY — PART Two

the latest source of tension will relieve so that work can be continued. The engram itself, upon which the lock depended, may not be accessible without a full Dianetic address to the problem.

The auditor, finding a patient much disturbed, can often save time by relieving the lock which caused the immediate disturbance of the preclear.

Locating locks on a wholesale basis is unremunerative from a Dianetic viewpoint since there are thousands and thousands of them in every case. Locating the

last lock, which is hindering work, may be of benefit.

The Tone Scale and Reduction of Engrams

Because it is very important, the mechanism of the reduction of a late painful emotion engram must be specifically detailed.

The uses of reduction on late engrams are wide and various. When the auditor gets into trouble with his preclear by some violation of the Auditor's Code, he can treat the violation as a painful emotion engram and reduce it, at which moment the effect of his blunder will be gone in the preclear. The auditor merely returns

the preclear back to the blunder and runs the error itself

as an engram. When the husband has quarreled with his

wife or she has found out some unpleasant thing about

his activities, he can treat the quarrel or the discovery

as a painful emotion engram and release it with the

result of no further worry about it by his wife. When

the little boy's dog has just been run over, the incident

can be treated as a painful emotion engram and released.

When the preclear's wife has just left him, treat the

leaving as a painful emotion engram and release it. What-

ever the shock or upset, it can be reduced in an individual

by regular reduction technique and the individual will

cease to be troubled by it in the painful emotion sense.

It does not matter whether the engram occurred two

447

L. RON HUBBARD

hours or ten years ago, painful emotion can be reduced

from it. It is run exactly like any other engram, begin-

ning at the beginning of the first shock with the patient

returning to it and continuing far enough along it to

adequately embrace its first impact.

The aspect of this reduction is a pattern which does

not much vary. If the news struck the individual into

apathy, then, as he recounts, he will, unless there is a

severe emotional shut-off elsewhere, progress through

the incident a time or two, perhaps, before he contacts it

properly. Then there will come the tears and despair of

apathy. Another two or three runs should bring up

anger. Then further recounting (always from beginning

to end as reexperience) brings the tone up into bore-

dom. Further recounting should bring it to tone 3 or 4,

release or, most favorably, laughter.

Iff: This progress of the tones is the clue which led to

the establishment of the Tone Scale from 0 to 4. A tone

4 is laughter.

There is sometimes a stage in the tone 2 area where

the patient begins to be offhand and flippant.⁵ This is

not tone 4, it denotes more data present. He may resist

recounting at this point, saying the incident is released.

The auditor must insist on further recounting whenever

he finds the preclear unwilling to recount again, for

here is data being suppressed and more charge is

present. The flippancy is generally found to be an

escape mechanism and is sometimes uttered in the very

words which are yet concealed. More recounting (with-

out the auditor insisting any certain words be found) is

then done until the patient reaches tone 4.

Here we have, in vignette,⁶ the behavior of the whole

5. flippant: joking or trying to be funny when one should be

more serious or show more respect.

6. vignette: a short description or character sketch.

448

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

engram bank in the process of therapy. The entire bank

rises from its initial tone level eventually up to tone 4,

higher and higher as more and more engrams are erased

or reduced. The bank's rise is not, however, a smooth

upward curve for new engrams will be contacted with

apathy in them and some have manics in them. The

painful emotion engram, however, does a rather smooth

rise. If it is going to release at all it will rise up the

scale. If it does not rise up the scale—apathy to anger,

anger to boredom, boredom to cheerfulness or at least

no concern—then it is suppressed by an incident with

similar content.

An engram may begin at tone 1 —anger—and rise

from there. If it is found to be in tone 2 at the

start—boredom—it is hardly an engram.

It may, however, be in a false tone 2 and suppressed

by other data so that the patient merely appears bored

and careless about it. A few recountings may bring

about release of it, at which moment it will sag in-

stantly to apathy—tone 0—and then come on up the

scale of the tones. Or another engram may have to be

contacted.

The whole physical being follows this Tone Scale

throughout a course of therapy. The mental being fol-

lows this Tone Scale. And painful emotion engrams

follow it.

On an erasure down in the basic area or when

returning from basic-basic, two or three runs will erase

an engram of whatever kind unless it is the basic on a

new chain of similar incidents. But engrams which

show no emotion anywhere on the track are suppressed

by emotional or feeling shut-offs, late painful emotion

or early engrams, which simply shut off the pain or

emotion in so many words.

A case should be kept "live." There must be vari-

ability of emotion. A monotone recounting, which is to

449

L. RON HUBBARD

say, one which does not vary the engramic tone but

merely reduces, is necessary in the basic area at times,

but any time a patient becomes orderly and "well

drilled" and expresses no concern over his engrams as

he recounts them, there is late painful emotion to be

tapped or early emotional shut-off. Conversely, if the

patient is too continuously emotional about all and

anything, if he weeps awhile and then laughs hysteri-

cally, therapy is being done but one should be alert for

something engramic in the prenatal area which says he

has to be "too emotional"—which is to say, he has

engrams which make him emotional by their command

content.

The Tone Scale is very useful and is a good guide. It

will be most prominent in reducing postspeech en-

grams, but will also appear earlier.

Any painful emotion engram can be run. If it is

properly reducing and not suppressed elsewhere, it

follows the Tone Scale upwards to tone 4.

If the Patient Does Not

Work Well on Repeater Technique

If, when the patient repeats a line the auditor has given him, the patient does not move to an incident, three things can be wrong: first, the patient cannot move on the track; second, the phrase may be sensibly withheld by the file clerk until such time as it can be cleared; or third, the phrase does not exist as engramic material.

The patient may also have strong "control yourself" engrams which manifest themselves by his snatching control from the auditor, being very bossy or simply refusing cooperation. Repeater technique, when di-

rected at "control yourself" and "I've got to operate"

and allied phrases, can then work.

450

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two.

The usual reason repeater technique does not work

is that the patient is in a holder. If he is returned but

does not shift on the track when repeater technique is

given him, use repeater technique on the holders.

Remember that a "feeling" shut-off can deny all

somatics so that the patient does not feel them. If the

patient seems insensible to trouble on the track, be sure

that he has a feeling shut-off.

A large emotional charge may also inhibit repeater technique. The somatic strip does not go well into emotional charges—painful emotion engrams—and repeater technique is therefore indicated.

If repeater technique does not work, although it is seldom necessary, one may request the patient to imagine "the worst thing that could happen to a baby" and so forth, and from his conversation may be garnered new phrases for repeater work which will take the patient into an engram.

Single Word Technique

Words as well as engrams exist in chains. There is always a first time for the recording of each word in a person's life. The whole common language may lie within the engram bank. The possible combinations of that common language may well approach infinity. The ways various deniers, bouncers, et al., can be phrased are always beyond count.

Two "happy" facts exist, however, to reduce the auditor's labors. First, the *dramatis personae*⁷ of his engrams are at this date aberrated. Each aberrée has standard dramatizations which he repeats over and over in restimulative situations. The reaction, for instance, of the father to the mother is repetitious: if he utters a

7. dramatis personae: the characters in a play or story (used here to refer to people present in the engrams of the aberree).

451

L. RON HUBBARD

set of phrases in one engramic situation, he will utter it

in subsequent similar situations. If the mother, for

example, has an accusative attitude toward the father,

then that attitude will be expressed in certain terms and

these terms will appear in engram after engram. The

second fact is that where the father or mother is abusive

to the other, the other will eventually begin to suffer

contagion of aberration and will repeat the other's phrases. In a firstborn child, where parental brutality is present, one can observe the parents through the engrams of the patient and see one or the other gradually take up the other's phrases either to worry about themselves or to redeliver them. All this tends to make the engrams appear in chains of incidents, each incident much like the next. When one has the basic on each type of chain, the subsequent incidents on that chain are sufficiently similar to permit many incidents to be reduced or erased immediately after the first is found.

The first incident on the chain, the basic for that chain, holds the others more or less in place and out of sight;

therefore, the basic of the chain is the goal.

Each word in the bank can be discovered to have been delivered to the bank for the first time. Words also reduce in chains with the virtue that each subsequent appearance of the word in the bank locates automatically a new engram, which, of course, is reduced or erased as soon as it is contacted or as soon as its basic can be located.

Single word technique is very valuable and useful. It is a special kind of repeater technique. On most patients, the repetition by themselves of one word will cause the associated words to suggest themselves. Thus,

one asks the patient to repeat and return on the word

forget. He starts repeating the word forget and shortly

has an associated set of words, making a phrase, such

as "You can never forget me." Here we have a phrase in

452

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

an engram and the remainder of the engram can then

be run.

When a late engram has had to be contacted to

progress a case and yet will not relieve, it is possible to

take each word or phrase of that late engram and run it

back with repeater technique. Thus the earlier engrams

which hold this Sate engram in place can be located and reduced, and eventually one will have reduced the late engram itself. This, by the way, is a common and useful practice.

There is a Saw about this: When any phrase or word in an engram will not reduce, the same phrase or word occurs in an earlier engram. One may have to discharge late emotion to get the earlier phrase, but ordinarily single word repeater or phrase repeater will attain it.

There are only a few dozens of words necessary to get almost any engram. These would be the key single word repeaters. They are such words as these: forget, remember, memory, blind, deaf, dumb, see, feel, hear,

emotion, pain, fear, terror, afraid, bear, stand, lie, get,

come, time, difference, imagination, right, dark, black,

deep, up, down, words, corpse, dead, rotten, death,

book, read, soul, hell, god, scared, miserable, horrible,

past, look, everything, everybody, always, never, every-

where, all, believe, listen, matter, seek, original,

present, back, early, beginning, secret, tell, die, found,

sympathy, mad, crazy, insane, rid, fight, fist, chest,

teeth, jaw, stomach, ache, misery, head, sex, Anglo-

Saxon four-letter words of sex and profanity, skin, baby,

it, curtain, shell, barrier, wall, think, thought, slippery,

confused, mixed, smart, poor, little, sick, life, Father,

Mother, familiar names of parents and any others of

household during prenatal and childhood period,

money, food, tears, no, world, excuse, stop, laugh, hate,

jealous, shame, ashamed, coward, etc.

Bouncers, deniers, holders, groupers, misdirectors,

453

L. RON HUBBARD

et al., each have their common single words and these

are few. The bouncer would contain: out, up, return, go,

late, later, etc.

The holder would contain: catch, caught, trap,

trapped, stop, He, sit, stay, can't, stuck, fixed, hold, let,

lock, locked, come, etc.

The grouper would contain: time, together, once,

difference, etc.

The single word technique shines nowhere brighter

than in the Junior case—where the patient carries the

name of one or another parent or grandparent. By

clearing out the patient's name from the prenatal en-

grams (where it is applied to another person but misin-

terpreted by the patient as himself), the patient can

regain his own definition and valence. Always use the

patient's first name and last name (separately) as re-

peater, Junior or not.

If the engram bank is blank on a phrase, it probably

is not blank on a common word. Any small dictionary

will provide an ample fund for single word technique.

Use also any list of familiar first names, male and

female, and you may discover allies or lovers not other-

wise contactable.

The painful emotion engram sometimes yields

slowly by simply directing the somatic strip to it.

Sometimes the patient finds it difficult to approach an

overcharged area. Single word technique using the

name of the ally, if known, or words of sympathy,

endearment, death, rejection or farewell, and the love

name of the patient as a child in particular, will often

yield swift results.

By the way, in using repeater technique, word or

phrase, the auditor must not stir the case up too much.

Get what shows and reduce that. Reduce the somatic the

person manifests when he goes into reverie and always

try to find it for a while, even if you don't succeed. If

454

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

you stir up something en route down a chain which

won't reduce, mark it to be reduced when you have the

basic.

Using single word technique one often obtains

phrases which would otherwise remain hidden but

which come into view when the key word is tapped.

Using hear as a single word, for instance, the following

phrases came to light which had thoroughly impeded

the progress of the case. No effort was being made to

contact such an engram in the prenatal area. Indeed,

the "fight" chain had never been suspected since the

patient had never dramatized it, and, because such a

violent prenatal fight chain existed, the fact that his

parents fought violently in the home was utterly struck

from the standard banks so that he would have denied

such a thing with shocked surprise had it been sug-

gested. The somatic was unusually severe, caused by

the father kneeling on the mother and choking her.

Patient repeated "hear" several times, the auditor asking him to return to an incident containing that word. The patient continued to repeat and then suddenly sank into a stupor when he reached the prenatal area. He remained in this "boil-off" for about thirty minutes and then, the auditor rousing him occasionally to make him repeat the word "hear," manifested a strong somatic. "Hear" became "Stay here!" The somatic became stronger and "Stay here" was repeated until the patient could move freely on the track through the engram. He contacted his father's voice and was most reluctant to carry on with the engram, due to its

intense emotional violence. Coaxed and edged into it by

the auditor, the engram was recounted.

Father: "Stay here! Stay down, damn you, you bitch!

I'm going to kill you this time. I said I would and

I will. Take that!" (Intensified somatic as his

knee ground into the mother's abdomen.) "You

455

L. RON HUBBARD

better start screaming. Go on, scream for mercy!

Why don't you break down? Don't worry, you

will! You'll be blubbering'around here, screaming

for mercy! The louder you scream the worse

you'll get. That's what I want to hear! I'm a punk

kid, am I? You're the punk kid! I could finish you

now but I am not going to!" (Auditor suddenly

has trouble, patient taking last phrase literally and

stopping his recounting; auditor starts him again.)

"This is just a sample. There's a lot more than

that where it came from! I hope it hurts! I hope it

makes you cry! You say a word to anybody and

I'll kill you in earnest." (Patient now running

ahead with such an emotional surge that com-

mands are less active on him. This command to

remain quiet disregarded.) "I'm going to bust

your face in. You don't know what it is to be

hurt!" (Somatic lessened by removal of the knee.)

"I know what I'm going to do to you now! I'm

going to punish you! I'm going to punish you and

God is going to punish you! I'm going to rape

you! I'm going to stick it into you and tear you!

When I tell you to do something you've got to do

it! Get up on the bed! Lie down! Lie still!" (Crack

of bones as she is struck in the face with a fist.

Blood pressure coming up and hurting baby.)

"Lie still! You'll always be here! I'm going to

finish this! You're unclean! You are dirty and

diseased! God's punished you and now I'm going

to punish you!" (Coitus somatic begins, very violent, further injuring child.) "You've got something terrible in your past. You think you've got to be mean to me! You try to make me feel like nothing! You're the one that's nothing! Take it, take it!" (String of sexual banalities screamed for about five minutes.)

456

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

The patient recounted this three times and it erased.

It was basic-basic! Three days after conception, as

nearly as could be judged by the subsequent days to the

missed period. It threw into view almost all the other

important data in the case, which then resolved and was

cleared.*

The single word might have landed the patient on some

other of the hears in the case. In this event it would be

necessary to pick it up at its earliest moment or the

remainder of the engram might not erase or reduce.

The word hear might also have landed the patient

later on the track, in which case the engrams would

have had to have been traced back earlier until one was

found which would erase, reducing each one as it was

encountered until the earliest was reached, when all

would erase.

* Apropos of* this text, it crossed the "fight chain" with the "coitus chain," occluding both. Wherever this engram originated or where the engrams which are compounded into it came from, is of course a matter of antiquity. This was home conduct for Papa, a character confirmed by the fact that both his wife and child were almost psychotic. Papa was not "psychotic." He was a "bold, forceful" and "forthright" man, president of a bank and renowned for his hardheadedness. The son was a drunkard, a soapbox atheist, and negated against everything his father represented including money. The son, while still in therapy, incautiously told his father of this engram and the father raved wildly against

Dianetics for two days and then came down with "rheumatic

fever,"¹⁰ in which state he sent for the auditor in the case to

clear him, which was done. Both cases were sonic shut-offs,

pain and emotion shut-offs. —LRH

8. apropos of: with reference to; in respect or regard to.

9. soapbox: of, pertaining to, or characteristic of a speaker or

speech from a soapbox: any improvised platform used by a

person making an informal, often impassioned speech to a street

audience, as on a current, controversial issue.

10. rheumatic fever: a disease more common among children

than adults, characterized by fever, pains in the joints and often

damage to the heart.

457

L. RON HUBBARD

In using single word repeater, as in phrase repeater,

the auditor should not permit a rapid, unmeaning repeti-

tion but a slow repeat, the auditor requesting the somatic

strip to return the while and asking the patient to contact

anything else which might associate with the word.

Caution: If the patient is not moving on the track, do

not give him repeater words or phrases at random as these

will pile up engrams where the patient is stuck. Use only efforts to get the patient moving on the track by discovering and reducing the phrase that is holding him.

Caution: Basic-basic does not always have words in it, often being only painful and accompanied with womb sounds. It will, nevertheless, hold everything in place by its perceptics.

Special Classes of Commands

There are several distinct classes of commands. They are outlined here for ready reference with some samples of each.

Aberrative commands can contain anything. The

auditor does not much concern himself with them. Refer

back to our young man and the coat in Book Two and

there we find, in the guise of hypnotic commands, some

idea of what aberrative commands are. "I am a jub-jub

bird," "I can't whistle Dixie," "The world is all

against me," "I hate policemen," "I am the ugliest

person in the world," "You haven't any feet," "The

Lord is going to punish me," "I always have to play

with my thing," may be very interesting to the patient

and even amusing to the auditor and may have caused a

considerable amount of trouble in the patient's life.

Where Dianetic therapy is concerned, these all come

11. whistle Dixie: engage in wishful thinking. Dixie is a lively song about the Southern states of the United States, written in 1859 by Daniel D. Emmett (1815-1904). It was used to build enthusiasm for the South during the Civil War.

458

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

up in due course. Looking for a specific aberration or a specific somatic is sometimes of interest and sometimes of some use, but it is not usually important. These aberrative commands may contain enough data to make the patient a raving zealot, a paranoid or a catfish, but they

are nothing to the auditor. They come up in due course.

Working on them or about them is secondary and less.

The primary business of the auditor in any case is to

keep the patient moving on the track, keep his somatic

strip free to come and go and reduce engrams. The

moment the patient acts as though or responds as though

he was not moving, or the moment the file clerk will not

give forth data, then something is wrong and that some-

thing has to do with a few classes of phrase. There are

thousands of such phrases contained in engrams, vari-

ously worded, but only five classes:

Denyers

"Leave me alone," which means, literally, that he
must leave the incident alone.

"I can't tell" means he can't tell you this engram.

"It's hard to tell" means it is hard to tell.

"I don't want to know" means he has no desire to
know this engram.

"Forget it" is the classic of the subclass of denier,
the forgetter mechanism. When the engram simply
won't come to view but there is a somatic or a muscle
twitch, send the somatic strip to the denier. It is often

"Forget it" or "Can't remember" as a part of the
engram. "I don't know what's going on" may be Mama
telling Papa something, but the preclear's analyzer,

impinged, then doesn't know what's going on.

"It's beyond me" means he is right there but he

thinks he isn't.

"Hold on to this, it's your life!" makes the engram

"vital" to existence.

459

L. RON HUBBARD

"It can't be reached," "I can't get in there," "No-

body must know," "It's a secret," "If anybody found

out, I'd die," "Don't talk," and thousands more.

HOLDERS

The holder is the most frequent and the most used
since whenever the preclear can't shift on the track or
come to present, he is in a holder. A holder combined
with a denyer will still hold: if it can't be found, look
for the denyer first, then the holder.

"I'm stuck" is the classic phrase.

"That fixed it" is another.

"I'm caught" doesn't mean to the preclear what

Mama meant when she said it. It may mean to her that
she is pregnant but it tells the preclear he is caught on
the track.

"Don't move," "Sit there until I tell you to move,"

"Stop and think." (On this last phrase, when it is uttered on a first recounting, the auditor may have to start him going again for he does just that: he stops and thinks, and he would stop there and think for some time. The auditor will see this strange obedience to this literal nonsense as he works a case.)

And thousands more. Any way words literally understood can stop a person or keep him from moving.

Bouncers

The bouncer could best be demonstrated by a curve.

The preclear goes back into prenatal and then finds himself at ten years of age or even present time. That's

a bouncer at work. He goes early on the time track: it

says come back up.

When the preclear can't seem to get earlier, there is

a bouncer ejecting him from an engram. Get a comment

from him on what's happening. Take the comment or

some phrase which would be a bouncer and use repeater

460

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

technique until he settles back down on the engram. If

he contacts it easily, it won't bounce him again.

"Get out" is the classic bouncer. The patient usually

goes toward present time.

"Can't go back at this point" may mean Mama has decided she will have to have the baby after all or finish the abortion, but to the preclear it means he must move on up the time track or that he can't get any earlier period.

"Get up there."

"Run a mile." ("Beat it," would not be a bouncer; it would mean the preclear should beat the engram.)

"I must go far, far away," so he does.

"I'm growing up," "Blow you higher than a kite,"

"Batter up."

And thousands more.

Grouper

The grouper is the nastiest of all types of command.

It can be so variously worded and its effect is so serious

on the time track that the whole track can roll up into a

ball and all incidents then appear to be in the same

place. This is apparent as soon as the preclear hits one.

The grouper will not be discovered easily, but it will

settle out as the case progresses and the case can be

worked with a grouper in restimulation.

"I have no time" and "Nothing makes any difference" are the classic groupers.

"Everything comes in on me at once" means just

that.

"They're all in there together," "Screwed up,"

"Balled up," "It's all right here."

"You can remember all this in present time" (a

serious auditor error if he uses this to a suggestible

patient, for it will gloriously foul a case).

"You associate everything."

461

L. RON HUBBARD

"I am tangled up," "Jam everything in there at

once," "There's no time," and thousands more.

Misdirector

This is an insidious character, the misdirector. When

it appears in an engram, the patient goes in wrong

directions, to wrong places, etc.

"You're doing it all backwards."

"All up now" is a grouper and a misdirector.

"Always throwing it up to me" puts the preclear up

the track some distance and from there he tries to pick

up engrams.

"You can't go down" is partly bouncer, partly

misdirector.

"We can't get to the bottom of this" keeps him off

from basic-basic.

"You can start over again" keeps him from finishing

the recounting, whereupon he goes back to the begin-

ning of the engram instead of running it.

"Can't go through that again" keeps him from re-

counting.

"I can't tell you how it began" keeps him starting

his engrams in the middle and they will not then reduce.

There are many such phrases.

"Let's settle down" and all "settlings" make him

drift backwards down the track.

"I am coming down with a cold" puts the aberree in

a common cold engram. This can be counted upon to

make every cold much worse.

"Come back here" is really a call back but it directs him away from where he should be. A patient who reaches present time with difficulty and then begins to go back has a "Come back here" or a "Settle down."

"Down and out" misdirects him, not only away from present time but to the bottom of the track and off it. This is a misdirector and a derailer all at once.

462

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

"Can't get past me" is a misdirector on the order of a reverser. "You don't know down from up" is the classic

phrase.

"I'm all turned around."

A special case is the derailer which "throws him off

the track" and makes him lose touch with his time

track. This is a very serious phrase since it can make a

schizophrenic and something of this sort is always to be

found in schizophrenia. Some of its phrases throw him

into other valences which have no proper track, some

merely remove time, some throw him bodily out of

time.

"I don't have any time" is a derailer as well as a

grouper.

"I'm beside myself" means that he is now two

people, one beside the other.

"I'll have to pretend I am somebody else" is a key

phrase to identity confusion.

"You're behind the times" and many more.

There is another special case of the misdirector. The

auditor says to go to "present time" and the file clerk

throws out a phrase with present in it. It does not matter

if the present in the phrase was a Christmas present, if

it is in the prenatal area, the preclear goes there, ignoring

what the auditor meant.

"That's all at present," is a vicious phrase, putting

everything in present time.

"It's a lovely present."

And others.

Now is sometimes confused with present time but

not often. The auditor should not say "Come to now,"

because if he did he would find more nows than he

could comfortably handle. Present is a rarer engramic

word and is therefore used. Now appears too frequently.

Several severely aberrated persons who had little

memory of the past have been found to be entirely off

463

L. RON HUBBARD

their time tracks, regressed into the prenatal area and

stuck, when the case was entered. As far as their wits

were concerned, they had only a few months of past
from where they were back to conception. And yet these
people had managed somehow to function as normals.

Emotional charges usually hold the person off his
track and, indeed, are the only things which give these
engram commands any power according to current find-
ings.

Differences

There are two axioms about mind function with
which the auditor should be familiar.

I. The mind perceives, poses and re-

solves problems relating to survival.

II. The analytical mind computes in dif-

ferences. The reactive mind computes

in identities.

The first axiom is of interest to the auditor in his

work because with it he can clearly establish whether or

not he is confronting a rational reaction. The seven-

year-old girl who shudders because a man kisses her is

not computing; she is reacting to an engram since at

seven she should see nothing wrong in a kiss, not even a

passionate one. There must have been an earlier experi-

ence, possibly prenatal, which made men or kissing

very bad. All departures from optimum rationality are

useful in locating engrams, all unreasonable fears and

so forth are grist to the auditor's mill.¹² The auditor,

with the above law, should study as well the equation of

the optimum solution. Any departure from optimum

is suspect. While he cares little about aberrations, at

12. grist to (one's) mill: something employed to one's profit or

advantage, especially something seemingly unpromising.

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

times a case will stall or seem to have no engrams. He

then can observe the conduct of his patient and his

patient's reactions to life in order to gain data.

The second law is Dianetics' contribution to logic.

In the philosophic text this is more fully entered. Aris-

totle's pendulum and his two-valued logic were aban-

doned, not because of any dislike of Aristotle but

because broader yardsticks were needed. One of these

yardsticks was the spectrum principle whereby grada-

tions from zero to infinity and infinity to infinity were

used and absolutes were considered utterly unobtain-

able for scientific purposes.

In the second axiom the mind can be conceived to

recognize differences very broadly and accurately, in

its nearest approach to complete rationality and then, as

it falls away from rationality, to perceive less and less

difference until at last it achieves a near approach to

utter inability to compute any difference in time, space

or thought and so can be considered completely insane.

When this follows one thought only, such as a sweeping

statement that "All cats are the same," it is either

careless or insane, since all cats are not the same, even

two cats who look, act and sound alike. One could say,

"Cats are pretty much the same," and still be dealing

with rather irrational thought. Or one could recognize

that there was a species *Felix domesticus* but that within

it cats were decidedly different, not only from breed to

breed but cat to cat. That would be rationality, not

because one used Latin but because he could tell the

difference amongst cats. The fear of cats has as its

source an engram which usually does not include more

than one cat and that is a very specific cat of a specific

breed with a certain (or perhaps uncertain) personality.

The preclear who is afraid of all cats is actually afraid

of one cat and a cat which is most likely dead these

many years at that. Thus, as we swing from complete

465

L. RON HUBBARD

rationality down to irrationality, there is a narrowing of

differences until they nearly vanish and become simi-

larities and identities.

Aristotle's syllogism¹³ in which two things equal to the same thing are equal to each other simply does not begin to work in logic. Logic is not arithmetic, which is an artificial thing man invented and which works. To handle a problem in logic the mind flutters through an enormous mass of data and computes with dozens and even hundreds of variables. It does not and never did think on the basis that two things equal to the same thing are equal to each other, except when employing mathematics it had conceived the better to resolve abstract problems. It is an abstract truth that two and two equal four. Two what and two what equal four? There is

no scale made, no yardstick or caliper⁴ or microscope

manufactured which would justify the actuality, for

instance, that two apples plus two apples equal four

apples. Two apples and two apples are four apples now

if they are the same apples. They would not equal four

other apples by any growth or manufacturing process

ever imagined. Man is content to take approximations

and call them, loosely, exactitudes. There is no absolute

anything save in abstract terms set up by the mind to

work out exterior problems and achieve approxima-

tions. This may seem to be a stretched conception, but

it is not. The mathematician is very well aware that he

is working with digit and analogue approximations set

up into systems which were not necessarily here before

man came and will not necessarily be here after he is

gone. Logic, even the simple logic of wondering about

13. syllogism: a form of reasoning in which a conclusion is

reached from two statements, as in "All men must die; I am a

man; therefore, I must die."

14. caliper: a compass for measuring the diameter of tubes or of

round objects.

the wisdom of going shopping at ten, is handling

numerous variables, indefinites and approximations.

Mathematics can be invented by the carload lot. There

is no actual absolute, there is only a near approach. Our

grammarians alone, much behind the times, insist,

probably in memory of the metaphysician, on absolute

reality and truth.

This is here set down partly because it may be of

interest to some but mainly because the auditor must

realize that he has an accurate measuring stick for

sanity. Sanity is the ability to tell differences. The better

one can tell differences, no matter how minute, and

know the width of those differences, the more rational

he is. The less one can tell differences and the closer

one comes to thinking in identities ($A = A$) the less sane

he is.

A man says, "I don't like dogs!" Spot it, auditor; he

has an engram about one or two dogs. A girl says, "All

men are alike!" Spot it, auditor; here's a real aberree.

"Mountains are so terrible!" "Jewelers never go any-

place!" "I hate women!" Spot them. Those are en-

grams right out in broad daylight.

Those engrams which inhibit the analytical mind in

differentiating are those engrams which most seriously

inhibit thinking.

"You can't tell the difference," is a common en-

gram. "There is no difference," "Nothing will ever
make any difference to me again," "People are all
bad," "Everybody hates me." This is insanity bait, as
the auditors say, and puts a man "spinbin¹⁵ bound."

There is another class of identity thought and that is
the group which destroys time differentiation. "You
don't know when it happened!" is a classic phrase. "I
don't know how late it is," and others have a peculiar

15. spinbin: (slang) a mental institution.

effect on the mind, for the mind is running on a precision

chronometer of its own and the engrams can thoroughly

misread the dial. On a conscious level, one goes along

fairly well on analytical time. The engrams slide around

back and forth according to when they are keyed in or

restimulated. An engram may underlie today's action

which belonged forty years ago on the time track and

should be back there. It is not remarks about time differ-

ence so much that aberrate, it is the untimed character of

engrams. Time is the great charlatan; it heals nothing; it

only changes the environmental aspects and a man's

associates. The engram of ten years ago, with all its

painful emotion, may be encysted and "forgotten," but it

is right there, ready to force action if restimulated today.

The reactive mind runs on a dime-store wristwatch,

the analytical mind runs on a battery¹⁷ of counter-

checking¹⁸ chronometers of which a liner¹⁹ could be

proud. The cells think that wristwatch is a pretty fair

gimmick—and it was, it was, back there in the days

when man's ancestor was washed in by the waves and

managed to cling to the sand.

Thus, a primary test for aberration is similarity and

identity, the primary test for rationality is differentia-

tion and the minuteness or largeness with which it can

be done.

"Men are all alike," she says. And they are too! To

her. Poor thing. Like the fellow who raped her when she

was a kid, like her detested father who said it.

16. chronometer: an instrument for measuring time precisely;

highly accurate kind of clock or watch, as for scientific use.

17. battery: a group of similar things arranged, connected or

used together; set or series; array.

18. counter-checking: controlling or confirming by a second

check.

19. liner: a steamship, passenger airplane, etc., in regular serv-

ice for a specific line.

Relative Importances and

"Believe" and "Can't Believe"

The auditor will find himself confronted with two
archenemies in "You must believe it," and "I can't
believe."

The mind has its own equilibrium and ability and it
is aided no more by engrains than an adding machine is
aided by a held-down seven.* One of the most impor-
tant functions of the mind is the computing of the
relative importances of data.

In discovering and conducting research on Dia-
netics, for instance, there were billions of data about

the mind accumulated throughout the last few thousand

years. Now, with-a six-foot rear-vision mirror we can

look back and see that here and there people had

expressed opinions or turned up unevaluated facts

which are now data in some of the axioms of Dianetics

or parts of its discoveries. These facts existed in the

past, some exist now in Dianetics, but with a tremen-

dous difference: they are evaluated. Evaluation of the

data for its importance was vital before the information

was of value. Dr. Sententious²⁰ might have written in

1200 A.D. that he believed actual demons did not exist

in the mind; Goodwife Sofie,²¹ in 1782, was heard to say

that she was certain that prenatal influence had warped

many a life; Dr. Zamba²² might have written in 1846

* Or a five as in a recent case at Harvard where a spot of

solder held down five in an electronic computer, much to the

dismay of the gentlemen who depended upon it for answers.

-LRH

20. Dr. Sententious: made-up name for an "authority." Senten-

tious: putting on an air of wisdom; dull and moralizing.

21. Goodwife Sofie: made-up name for a woman who was the

mistress of a household. Goodwife is an archaic title of respect

for a woman.

22. Dr. Zamba: a made-up name for a doctor.

L. RON HUBBARD

that a hypnotized patient could be told he was crazy and

that he would thereafter act crazy. Dr. Sententious

might have said also that angels, not demons, caused

mental illness because the patient had been evil; Good-

wife Sofie also might have said that punk water²³ poul-

tices²⁴ cured "ravings"; Dr. Zamba might also have

declared that hypnotized patients needed only a few

more positive suggestions to make them well and

strong. In short, for every datum which approached

truth there were billions which were untrue. The miss-

ing part of each datum was a scientific evaluation of its

importance to the solution. The selection of a few

special drops of water from an ocean of unspecial drops

is impossible. The problem of discovering true data

could be resolved only by jettisoning all former evalu-

ations of humanity and the human mind and all "facts"

and opinions of whatever kind and starting fresh, evol-

ing the entire science from a new highest common

denominator (and it is true that Dianetics borrowed

nothing but was first discovered and organized; only

after the organization was completed and a technique

evolved was it compared to existing information).

The point here is that monotone importance in a

class of facts leads to nothing but the most cluttered

confusion. Here is evaluation: Opinions are nothing,

authority is useless, data is secondary; establishment of

relative importance is the key. Given the world and the

stars as a laboratory and a mind to compute the relative

importance of what it perceives, and no problems can

remain unsolved. Given masses of data with monotone

23. punk water: another name for spunk water, rain water that

collects in hollow tree stumps, popularly thought to be a cure for

warts.

24. poultice: a hot, soft, moist mass, as of flour, herbs, mustard,

etc. Sometimes spread on cloth, applied to a sore or inflamed

part of the body.

470

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

evaluation and one has something which may be pretty

but isn't useful.

The stunned look of fresh-caught ensigns²⁵ of the

Navy when they first see in the metal the things about

which they have so laboriously read is a testimony to

more than the faulty educational system currently em-

ployed: The system seeks to train something which is

perfect—the memory; it aligns little or nothing with

purpose or use, and ignores the necessity of personal

evaluation of all data, both as to need for it and its use.

The stunned look comes from the overwhelming recog-

nition that whereas they have thousands of data about

what they see, they do not know whether it is more

important to read the chronometer when they take a

sextant²⁶ sight or use only blue ink in writing a logbook.

These gentlemen have been wronged educationally, not

because they have not been given thousands of data

relative to ships, but because they have not been told the

relative importance of each datum and have not experi-

enced that importance. They know more facts than the

less educated but they know less about factual relation.

More pertinent to the auditor, there are two species of engramic commands which give monotone evaluation to data. The persons who have either of these as a major content in the engram bank will be similarly aberrated even if each manifests the aberration with opposite polarity.

Every now and then some unfortunate auditor finds a "Can't believe it" on his hands. This case is extremely trying. Under this heading come the "I doubt it," the "I can't be sure," and the "I don't know" cases.

25. ensigns: in the US Navy, commissioned officers of the lowest rank.

26. sextant: an instrument used by navigators for measuring the

angular distance of the sun, a star, etc., from the horizon, as in

finding the position of a ship.

471

L. RON HUBBARD

Such a case is easy to spot for when he first comes into therapy he begins by doubting Dianetics, the auditor, himself, the furniture and his mother's virginity.

The chronic doubter is not an easy case because he cannot believe his own data. The analyzer has a built-in judge which takes in data, weighs it and judges it right, wrong or maybe. The engramic doubter has a "held-

down seven" to the effect that he has to doubt every-

thing, something much different from judging. He is

challenged to doubt. He must doubt. If to doubt is

divine, then the god is certainly Moloch.²⁷ He doubts

without inspecting; he inspects the most precise evi-

dence, and he still doubts.

The auditor will return this patient to a somatic

which tears half his head off, which is confirmed by

scars, which is confirmed by aberration, and which is

doubted as an incident.

The way to handle this case is to take his pat phrases

and feed them to him in reverie or out of reverie with

repeater technique. Make him go over and over them,

sending his somatic strip back to them. Shortly a re-

lease of the phrase will take place. Feed all doubter

phrases which the patient has used in this manner. Then

continue the case. The object is not to make him a

believer but to place him in a situation where he can

evaluate his own data. Don't argue with him about

Dianetics—arguing against engrams is senseless since

the engrams themselves are senseless.

In ten or twenty hours of therapy such a patient will

begin to face reality enough so that he no longer doubts

the sun shines, doubts the auditor or doubts that he had

a past of some sort. He is only difficult because he

27. Moloch: in the Bible, an ancient god of the Phoenicians,

etc., to whom children were sacrificed by burning. Moloch has

come to mean anything demanding terrible sacrifice.

472

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

requires these extra hours of work. He is usually, by the

way, very aberrated.

The "Can't believe it" finds difficulty in evaluation

because he has difficulty giving credence²⁸ to any fact

more than any other fact: this produces an inability to

compute relative importances amongst data, with the

result that he may be as concerned with the shade of his

superior's tie as with the marriage he himself is about

to undertake. Similarly, the "You must believe it" case finds difficulty in differentiating amongst importances of various data and may hold equally firmly the idea that paper is made from trees and that he is about to be fired. Both cases "worry," which is to say they are unable to compute well.

Rational computation depends upon the personal computation of the relative importances of various data. Reactive "computation" deals exclusively with the equation that widely different objects or events are similar or equal. The former is sanity, the latter is insanity.

The "Must believe it" case will present a confused reactive bank, for the bank embraces the most unlikely differences as close similarities. The "Must believe it" engram command can dictate that one person, a class of persons or everyone must be believed, no matter what is written or said. The auditor, returning the patient, will find major aberrations held in place by a lock containing only conversation.

When Father is the actual source and is an ally of the patient, the auditor will discover that almost everything Father said was accepted literally and unquestioningly by his child. The father may not have been aware of having established this "Must believe it" condition

28. credence: belief as to the truth of something.

473

L. RON HUBBARD

and he may even be a jocular man, given to jokes.

Every joke will be found to be literally accepted unless

the father carefully labeled it a joke, which meant it

must not be literally accepted. One case folder is to

hand here where Father was the source of "Must be-

lieve": one day the father took his daughter, three years

of age, down to the seacoast and, through the fog,

pointed to a lighthouse. The lighthouse gave an eerie

aspect in the foggy night. "That's Mr. Billingsly's
place," said the father, meaning that Billingsly, the
lighthouse keeper, lived there. The child nodded faith-
fully, if a little frightened, for "Mr. Billingsly" threw
around a mane of hair—shadows—glared to seaward
with one eye sweeping the water and stood a hundred
feet tall and "Mr. Billingsly" let out moans which
sounded quite ferocious. His "place" was a ledge of
rock. As a preclear, twenty years later, the daughter was
discovered to be frightened of any low moaning sound.
The auditor patiently traced down the source and found,
much to the delight of himself and the daughter, "Mr.
Billingsly." Vast quantities of aberration, peculiar con-

ceptions and strange notions were found to derive from

casual statements the father had made. Being skilled in

his task, the auditor did not bother to try to locate and

erase everything the father had said—a task which

would have taken years and years: He located, instead,

the prenatal "You must believe me" and its engramic

locks, and all the nonengramic locks, of course, disap-

peared and were automatically reevaluated as experi-

enced data rather than "held-down sevens." Of course,

there is always much more wrong with a case than a

mere "You must believe me," but the change of view-

point which the patient experienced immediately after-

wards was startling: she was now at liberty to evaluate

her father's data, which she had not been before.

474

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

Because they teach in terms of altitude* and authority, educational institutions themselves form a social "You must believe it" aberration. It is impossible to reduce an entire university education even if it sometimes appears desirable, but by addressing the moments when the patient was hammered into believing or accepting school, from kindergarten forward, many a fact-clogged mind can again be made facile²⁹ which was

not so before, for the facts will be reevaluated automatically by the mind for importances, not accepted on monotone evaluation as is the case in "formal education."

The "Can't believe it" is a subject so weary and dreary to the auditor that he may find himself, after a few finished cases, running adroitly away from one.

The "I don't know" and the "I can't be sure" cases are not as bad as the "I can't believe it." The prize case in difficulty in Dianetics is a patient who is a Junior named after either Father or Mother, who has not only shut-down pain, emotion, visio and sonic recall but also "dub-in" for them on a false basis, with a lie factory working full blast, who is uncooperative and who is a

"Can't believe it."

Monotone evaluation hinders the "Can't believe it"

case's acceptance of all facts. Any case may have a

few "Can't believe its," but some cases are so thor-

oughly aberrated by the phrase that they disbelieve

* By altitude 15 meant a difference in level of prestige—one

on a higher altitude carries conviction to one on a lower

altitude merely because of altitude. The auditor may find

himself unable to gain sufficient altitude with some patients to

work them smoothly and he may have so much altitude with

others that they believe everything he says. When he has too

little altitude, he is not believed; when he has too much, he is

believed too well. —LRH

29. facile: acting, working or done easily, or in a quick, smooth

way; fluent; ready.

475

L. RON HUBBARD

not only reality but also their own existence.

The mind has a "built-in doubter" which, unhin-

dered by engrams, rapidly sorts out importances and,

by their weights, resolves problems and arrives at con-

clusions. The rational mind applies itself to data pre-

sented, compares it to experience, evaluates its veracity

and then assigns it relative importance in the scheme of things. This is done, by a Clear, with a rapidity which sometimes requires the splitting of seconds. By a normal, the time required is extremely variable and the conclusions are more apt to be referred to another's opinion or compared to authority rather than to personal experience. That is the fundamental effect of contemporary education which, through no particular fault of its own and despite every effort it has made to free itself, yet, through lack of tools, is forced to follow scholastic methods. These, by contagion of aberration, persist against all efforts of advanced educators. The normal is taught on one hand to believe or else he'll fail

and on the other to disbelieve as a scientific necessity:

Belief and disbelief cannot be taught, they must be

personally computed. If a mind could be likened to a

general served by his own staff, it could be seen to have

a G-230 which, as a combat intelligence center, collected

facts, weighted them for importance and formed an

estimate of a situation or the value of a conclusion. As

the intelligence officer would fail if he had a signed

order to disbelieve everything, so does the mind fail

which has a reactive command to disbelieve. Certainly

a military organization would lose to every puny enemy

if it had, conversely, a command to believe everything,

and a man will fail if he has a reactive mind order to

believe all information in the world around him.

30. G-2: military intelligence section of the Army or Marine

Corps.

476

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

The believe and disbelieve engrams present different manifestations, and while one cannot be said to be either more or less aberrative than the other, it is certain that the disbelieve engram, by and large, seems to make the less sociable man.

Disbelief occurs in various degrees, of course.

There is, for instance, a social disbelief engram which

promotes a class of literature which is as insincere as it is unwitty. Insincerity, shame of emotional demonstration, fear of praising may stem from other things than merely a disbelief engram, but a disbelief engram is most certainly present in the majority of such cases.

The auditor will find, when he is trying to enter a very strong "Can't believe it" case, that experience is disbelieved, the auditor is disbelieved, hope of results is disbelieved and that the most ridiculous and unreasonable insults and arguments may be presented. The patient may squirm in a veritable³¹ snake pit of somatics and still disbelieve that he is reexperiencing anything.

It is a sadly chronic fact that an aberree has a certain set of cliches from out of his engram bank. He will repeat these cliches for all occasions and circumstances. Mother, having an engram bank of her own and Father having his, will be found to be uttering pretty much the same sort of statement time after time. These are dramatizations. One of the parents may have had an "I don't know" ready to precede everything he or she said, which makes a whole "stack" of "I don't knows" in the engram bank which much undermines understanding. In the same way, "You must believe!" or "You can't believe!" may become "stacked" in the engram bank. Once one has heard a few engrams from

a patient, he knows he will have many, many more

31. veritable: having all the qualities or attributes of the speci-

fied person or thing.

477

L. RON HUBBARD

similar engrams from that source. Once an auditor has

listened to the personnel in the patient's engram bank

for a very short time, he knows pretty much what he

will have in many, many more engrams. Hence, any

phrase is liable to be much repeated in the engram

bank, with varying somatics and accompanying percep-

tics. If Mother is troubled with high blood pressure, and

it is raised by Father—to the intense discomfort of the child and a degree which often produces a later migraine headache—she is apt to utter, "I can't believe you would treat me this way." Privately, she must have been hard to convince (one doesn't convince much against engramic "reasoning"), for he treated her this way about every three days; and every three days she was saying, "I can't believe you" or "I can't believe you would do this to me" or "I can't believe anything you say " or some such thing.

The "Can't believe" is apt to be rather hostile since "Can't believe" is often hostile conversation. "You've got to believe me" is more apt to be a pleading or

whining sort of an engram. "Believe what I tell you,
goddamn it," is, however, fully as hostile as an auditor
might expect.

An auditor who finds a case intensely and unreason-
ably skeptical should expect a "Can't believe" stack in
the engram bank. If he finds a patient incapable of
holding an opinion of his own but weather-vaning³² to
each new person or quoting an authority (all authorities
get easily identified with Father in the reactive bank),
he should suspect a "Must believe" in some form, as
well as other things. There are many manifestations of
either case. The chronic aspect in therapy is that the

32. weather-vaning: acting like a person or thing that is change-
able or inconstant, especially one who veers easily to conform to
the prescribed attitudes or popular beliefs of the moment.

478

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

"Can't believe" suspects his own data so strongly that
he alters it continually and the engrams which, after
all, have just one exact package of content, will not
properly reduce; the "Must believe" takes up every
engram he hears about as his own and that does him
little good.

Do not suppose that any case has a standard aspect,

however. The language contains many words and combinations of words, and aberrations are not unusual who have the entire basic language and all its idioms securely connected up to some somatic or other. Cases ordinarily contain "Can't believe" and "Must believe" phrases in the same bank. Only when these phrases become top-heavy does the person respond in a set pattern. When the set pattern is of either species of phrase, then the auditor confronts a patient who must have had, at best, a most unhappy life. But either case clears. They all clear, even Juniors.

Besides visio and sonic, another vital recall to therapy is the somatic, which is to say, the physical pain of the incident. Running a physically painful incident without a somatic is worthless.

If physical pain is present, it may come only after considerable "unconsciousness" has been "boiled off."

If the incident contains pain but the somatic is not turned on, the patient will wriggle his toes and breathe heavily and nervously or he may have jumping muscles.

The foot wriggling is an excellent clue to the presence of any somatic, turned on or not turned on. Breathing heavily and jumping muscles and various twitches without pain denote two things: either a denier is in the

incident and the content isn't being contacted; or, if the

preclear is recounting, the somatic may be shut off in

the incident or elsewhere, either earlier by command or

479

L. RON HUBBARD

late by painful emotion. The patient who wriggles a

great deal or who does not wriggle at all is suffering

from a pain or emotion shut-off or late painful emotion

engrams or both.

There is a whole species of. commands which shut

off pain and emotion simultaneously: this is because the

word/ee/ is homonymic. "I can't feel anything" is the

standard, but the command varies widely and is worded

in a great many ways. The auditor can pick up his own

book of these from patients who, describing how they

feel—or rather, how they don't feel—give them away.

"It doesn't hurt" is a class of phrases specifically

shutting off pain, a class which includes, of course,

such things as "There isn't any pain," etc. Emotion is

shut off by a class of phrases which contain the word

emotion or which specifically (literally translated) shut

off emotion.

The auditor should keep a book of all denyers,

misdirectors, holders, bouncers and groupers which he

discovers, each listed under its own heading. In this way

he adds to material he can use for repeater technique

when he sees something is wrong with the way the

patient is moving on the track. But there are four other

classes of phrases which he should also study and list:

shut-offs, exaggerators, derailers and lie factories. He

can also add to his classes.

He will discover enormous numbers of commands in

engrams which can accomplish these various aspects.

And he should be particularly interested in the pain and

emotion shut-offs and the exaggerators, which is to say,

those engramic commands which give the aspect of too

much pain and too much emotion. There is no reason to

give large numbers of them here. They are quite vari-

ous, language being language.

Many combinations are possible. A patient can be

found to weep over the most trivial postspeech things

480

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY —PART Two

and yet have few or no somatics. Several things can

cause this. Either he had a mother or a father who wept

for nine months before he was born or he has an

exaggerator at work which commands that he be emo-

tional about everything: "too much emotion." In com-

bination with this, he can have something which says he

can feel no pain or can't hurt or even can't feel.

A patient who aches and suffers and yet cannot

weep would have a reverse set of commands: he has a

"no emotion" command early on the track or a long

chain of them, and yet has commands which dictate

pain to excess: "I can't stand the pain," "The pain is

too great," "I always feel I'm in agony," etc. "I feel

bad," on the other hand, is a shut-off because it says

there is something wrong with the mechanism with

which he feels and implies disability to feel.

Both pain and emotion can be commanded into

exaggeration. But it is a peculiar thing that the body

does not manufacture pain to be felt. All pain felt is genuine, even if exaggerated. Imaginary pain is nonexistent. A person "imagines" only pain he has actually felt. He cannot imagine pain he has not felt. He may "imagine" pain at some time later than the actual incident, but if he feels pain, no matter how psychotic he is, that pain will be found to exist somewhere on his time track. Scientific tests have been carefully conducted in Dianetics to establish this fact and it is a valuable one. You can test it yourself by asking patients to feel various pains, "imagining them" in present time. They will feel pains for you so long as you ask them to feel pains they have had. Somewhere you will

find the patient unable to actually feel the pain he is trying to "imagine." Whether he is aware of it or not, he has had pain wherever he "imagines" it and is simply doing a somatic strip return for you on a minor scale.

481

L. RON HUBBARD

This aspect of pain is quite interesting in that many patients have, at one time or another in their lives, pretended to the family or the world that they had a pain. The patient thought, when he asserted this "make-believe" pain, that he was lying. In therapy, the auditor

can use these "imaginings," for they lead straight to sympathy engrams and actual injury. Further, these "imaginary" pains are generally displayed to the person or pseudoperson who was the sympathy ally present in the engramic moment. Thus, if a small boy always pretended to his grandmother, and thought he was pretending, that he had a bad hip, it will be discovered eventually that some time in his early life he hurt that same hip and received sympathy during the engramic moment, which is now eclipsed from the analyzer.

Patients often feel quite guilty over these pretenses.

Sometimes soldiers in the recent war have come home pretending they had been wounded and, when in ther-

apy, are afraid the auditor will find out or give them
away to their people. This soldier might not have been
wounded in the war, but an engram will be found which
contains sympathy for the injury of which he complains.

He is asking for sympathy with a colorful story and
believes he is telling a He. Without informing him of
this Dianetic discovery, the auditor can often flush into
view a sympathy engram which might otherwise have to
be arduously hunted down.

"Cry baby" is a phrase against which the preclear
will negate in an engram, thus inhibiting tears. It is
quite ordinary to find the preclear confusing himself

with older brothers and sisters who are in his prenatal
life: their jeers, Mother's orders and so forth, then, all
register. If the preclear knows of any older children, the
auditor should look for them in the engrams of prenatal
life, for children are quite active and often bounce up
and down on Mother's lap or collide with her. Any

482

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

childish phrases of derision are then not always post-
birth.

It has been said during Dianetic research that if one
could release all the painful emotion of a lifetime, he

would have 90 percent of the clearing done. However,

the painful emotion is only a surface manifestation of

the physical pain engrams and would not be painful if

the physical pain did not coexist or exist priorly.

When emotion and pain shut-offs exist in a case, the

patient is normally tense of muscle and nervous, given

to twitching or merely tension. When pain and emotion

are exaggerated by commands, one has a highly drama-

tizing case on his hands.

The Ally Versus the Antagonist

It is necessary for the auditor to know the reactive

mind's evaluation of importances. Moronic or not, the

reactive mind distinguishes violently between friend
and foe, about the only piece of differentiation it does.

There is a prime test for an ally. And recall that the
ally is a part of sympathy engrams, the things which are
most likely to produce psychosomatic illnesses, imma-
turities and confusion on a grand scale. As long as it
can rebel and negate, the reactive mind takes care of the
enemies so far as it is able. It can, of course, be twisted
by circumstance into the valence of the enemy and so
cry havoc³³ and abreact³⁴ in general if this was a win-
ning valence. But it will not ordinarily use the data of
the enemy contained in a contrasurvival engram save to
negate against it. When the general tone nears zone 1,

of course, the reactive mind starts picking up and

obeying antagonistic commands. Thus, if Father is the

33. cry havoc: sound an alarm. Used figuratively.

34. abreact: (psychoanalysis) release (repressed emotions) by

acting out, such as in words, action or the imagination, the

situation causing the conflict.

483

L. RON HUBBARD

villain of the piece, an antagonist, Father's commands

are not the reactively obeyed commands but the com-

mands the aberree will usually negate against or avoid.

This is not the case, however, with the ally. The ally, the person from whom sympathy came when the patient was ill or injured, is heeded and obeyed since his "purpose" is apparently aligned with the purpose of the individual, to survive. If one thing about a person is right, then—according to our moronic little friend, the reactive mind—everything about that person is right, everything that person says and does is right and particularly is right whatever that person said in the engram.

The chronic psychosomatic illness is ordinarily from a sympathy engram. This is quite important, for the sympathy engram will be the last or hardest to reach,

being aligned with survival purpose.

A "Must believe" from an ally means that the person must believe. A "Must believe" from an antagonist ordinarily brings about a circumstance that the person must not believe.

Here, in the ally and the antagonist, we have the age-old tale of the hero and the villain, the heroine and the villainess, Mazda and Ahriman,³¹ the cowboy in the white hat and the cowboy in the black. The Hindu trinity³⁶ is found, as source, in father, mother and unborn baby. But the war of "good and evil" is found as reactive data in the engram bank in the form of the ally and the antagonist.

35. Mazda and Ahriman: the deities in Zoroastrianism, the

religious system of the Persians before their conversion to Islam.

Mazda is the spirit of universal good and Ahriman is his archrival

as the spirit of evil.

36. Hindu trinity: Hindu representation of the three manifesta-

tions of the Supreme Being—Brahma, Vishnu and Siva—each

with a specific cosmic function: Brahma was associated with

creation; Vishnu was associated with preservation and renewal;

and Siva with destruction and disintegration.

The very best logic of which the reactive mind is capable is two-valued, white and black, and two-valued logic finds its response only in the reactive bank. And the reactive mind works out all problems in absolutes, bringing about logical monstrosities, for there is the absolute of good, the absolute of evil and the absolute of identity thought. Any rational computation demonstrates an absolute to be impossible from a standpoint of truth or workability: but the reactive mind never quibbles, it just reacts. It knows a champion when it sees one (it thinks) and it knows a villain (it supposes).

The ally, the champion, is everybody who has any

characteristic of the ally; and the antagonist, the villain,

is everyone who has any characteristics of the antago-

nist. Further, anything associated with the ally is a

champion and everything associated with the antagonist

is villainous. If the ally is an aunt, then aunts are good.

If the antagonist is a sign painter, then sign painters are

all evil. Further, the doilies³⁷ Auntie crocheted^{3*} mean

that doilies are good and that all lacework is good and

that anything on which lacework sits is good and that

anything which looks like lacework is good and so on in

the ad absurdum³⁹ which only the reactive mind can

manage without a qualm. And the signs the painter

painted are evil and where they sit is evil and paint is

evil and smell of paint is evil and brushes are evil so

hairbrushes are evil so the dresser on which hairbrushes

sit is evil and so on.

37. doilies: small mats, as of lace or paper, put under a dish, vase

or the like, as a decoration or to protect a surface. Named after a

17th-century draper (dealer in cloth and dry goods) whose name

was Doily or Doyley.

38. crocheted: done in a kind of needlework in which loops of a

thread or yarn are interwoven by means of a single hooked

needle.

39. ad absurdum: to the point of ridiculousness.

There is an axiom here which it is well not to slight

in working a patient:

Any chronic psychosomatic illness has at

its source a sympathy engram.

And another:

A reactive mind will not permit an indi-

vidual to be aberrated or chronically psy-

chosomatically ill unless the illness has

survival value.

This does not mean that the individual has a power

of choice analytically. It does mean that the reactive

mind, working quietly and hitherto hidden so well,

chooses, on identity computation, physical and mental

conditions to match any circumstances even remotely

similar to any concept in the engram bank.

There is such a thing as necessity level. This rises

and keys out engrams and can key out the control of the

reactive mind itself. Necessity level often rises. The

individual can force it to rise analytically whether or

not actual cause exists. A person may have no engram

about going to the electric chair for murder and yet have

an engram about murdering people. Necessity level

rises and analytically overwhelms all impulse to kill,

for the analyzer knows all about electric chairs. When

the necessity level cannot rise, then one is dealing with

a low dynamic individual. An artist, terribly aberrated

about his work through the kind efforts of obligingly

caustic* critics, can yet boost himself by his necessity

bootstraps⁴¹ to do another piece of work and damn the

aunt who said he gave her too many chins in her portrait

and ripped the work to shreds, or damn the critics who

said he was too new and his work too swift. Necessity

40. caustic: severely critical or sarcastic.

41. bootstraps: means of advancing oneself or accomplishing

something.

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

level can soar above the reactive mind by, as the marine

sergeant said, "Sheer guts."

Given too many current restimulators, used too hard

by life, an individual, caught in the dwindling spiral of

reactivated engrams, may come at last to a point where

he cannot longer remain well. If this is his first serious

sag and if the sag is deep, a psychosomatic illness will

appear and become more or less chronic and, this is

important, it will stem directly from a sympathy en-

gram.

All psychosomatic ills carry with them, if less obvi-

ous, aberrative commands, which means that a person suffering from psychosomatic illness, whether he relishes the idea or not, is also suffering from the aberration which is part of the same engram.

If the auditor wants to find the real holders, the real reasons his case appears to resist getting well, the real aberrative factors and illnesses, he will look to the ally or allies, for any case may have many. He will exhaust from them the painful emotion of loss or denial and backtrack immediately to find the underlying engrams.

Remember, too, that the reactive mind is not bright enough to realize that two sides of the same person are the same person. Hence we can have Mother-the-white-

angel and Mother-the-howling-harridan.⁴² As the white

angel she is implicitly followed, as the harridan she is

negated against. Father may be Father-the-beneficent⁴³

and Father-the-baby-killer. And so with all allies. But

only the pure, the absolute, the never-changing ally

who, resolute and firm, stayed the cold, sharp hand of

death and placed tenderly in the expiring hand of the

wistful child the strong and flaring torch of life (or at

42. harridan: a scolding, vicious woman; hag; shrew.

43. beneficent: doing good or causing good to be done; confer-

ring benefits; kindly in action or purpose.

L. RON HUBBARD

least said, "Poor baby, you feel so bad; please don't

cry,") is the model, the paragon,⁴⁴ the gold-footed idol

with free access to the gods. (This was Grandpop: He

drank too much and he cheated at cards, but the reactive

mind doesn't see it that way because Grandpop hauled

baby through pneumonia and was darned sure baby got

well—good acts if he hadn't been so melodramatic

about it and if he hadn't talked so much while the poor

kid was "unconscious.")

Question the patient adroitly about Father and Mother:

If he isn't much disturbed by their deaths (if they are dead)

or if he is simply careless of them or if he bares his teeth,

they are antagonists; the allies are elsewhere. If the

mother and father are indifferently or angrily or propi-

tatively regarded, be very sure, then, that the patient had

a rough time of it between conception and birth and later

and be sure, if this is the case, that there will be allies in

plenty, for the child will have sought them out in every

scrape or injury. But you will not find the allies, usually,

by mere questions. The reactive mind considers them to be

pure gold even if the engrams in which they appear have

somatics enough to wreck a person for life. It hides allies.

The auditor has to look for them through discharging

painful emotion. The death, departure or denial by an ally

is a certain painful emotion engram. One way or another,

working at it from later painful emotion or earlier physi-

cally painful engrams, the ally will eventually uncover

and can be entered as memory in the standard banks and

erased as illness out of the engram bank.

The solution of chronic psychosomatic ills lies

largely in the field of sympathy engrams. These will not

erase early, however, for they are the inner bastion⁴⁵

44. paragon: a model or pattern of excellence or of a particular

excellence.

45. bastion: something serving as a stronghold.

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

behind which the reactive mind crouches and observes

the storming of the outer defenses by antagonists. The

painful emotion of ally losses masks, at times, not only

allies but antagonists as well. The sympathy engram is

not the only source of psychosomatic illness by far, but

it is the source of the chronic psychosomatic ill.

By the way, nothing in this dissertation about allies

should be construed to mean that one should not show

love to a child. Observers in the past have jumped at

questionable conclusions when they felt that demonstrated

affection aberrates a child. Lack of affection may kill him, but the reverse is not true. The only way an ally can aberrate a child is by talking to and sympathizing with a child who is very ill or "unconscious" from injury. If he does this, he alloys⁴⁶ the child's personality with his own, creates an eventual possibility of psychosomatic illness and aberration and may generally disable the child for life (except for Dianetics, of course). Love a child best and do for him best when he is well. Do anything you please with him when he is well, say what you please. When he is sick or hurt, it is best to, as the bosun said, "Patch him up and keep goddamned quiet!"

Tokens

The tale of the magic amulet,⁴⁷ the lucky talisman,⁴⁸

the belief in the charm and the long catalog of fet-

ishes,⁴⁹ the objects and mannerisms which one keeps as

sakes⁵⁰ are the "dearly beloveds" of the reactive mind.

46. alloy: to weaken or spoil by adding something that reduces

value or pleasure.

47. amulet: something worn on the body because of its supposed

magic power to protect against injury or evil; a charm.

48. talisman: an object supposed to bring good luck.

49. fetishes: objects, ideas, etc., eliciting unquestioning rever-

ence, respect or devotion.

50. sakes: remembrances.

489

L. RON HUBBARD

There is nothing wrong with a man keeping llamas⁵¹
in the parlor or wearing purple and green suspenders or
rubbing fireplugs⁵² for luck, nor is there anything wrong
with sighing over a stolen lady's slipper or smoking
Pittsburgh⁵³ stogies.⁵⁴ Any Rights of Man should provide
for such eccentricities. But the auditor can use this data
to detect vital information.

In Dianetics, the term token is defined to embrace
the objects and habits which an individual or society

keeps by not knowing they are extensions of an ally.

By identity thought there are associative restimulators for every restimulator in the environment—those things connected with the restimulator. Being blank on the subject, the analytical mind, apprised by physical reaction that a restimulator of something is nearby, then picks up the associative restimulator but does not select the actual restimulator. (In Book Two, the young man's signal to remove his coat was a touch of the tie: he did not cite the tie in his complaint; the nearest he came to it was the person and clothing of the hypnotic operator.

These were associative restimulators.)

A restimulator for a contrasurvival engram might be

an electric light; the aberree looks to the shade, the pull

chain, the room or the person under the light to be a

source of annoyance, and not only does he not know

that a restimulator is present but supposes that the

associated objects have some evil in themselves.

The associative restimulator for a contrasurvival

engram needs no name other than that, associative

51. llamas: South American animals related to the camel but

smaller and without humps: the llama is used as a beast of burden

and for its wool, flesh and milk.

52. fireplugs: street hydrants to which hoses can be attached for

fighting fires.

53. Pittsburgh: city in southwest Pennsylvania.

54. stogies: long, slender, roughly made, inexpensive cigars.

490

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

restimulator. The pain is the thing, the things associated

in any way with the thing are the thing, are other things,

etc., is the reactive equation which fills the world of the

aberrant full of fear and fills him full of anxiety. Leave a

child in a place or a room where he has been unhappy

and he may become ill, for he is confronted with some

restimulator and he can at best explain, like the adult,

his fear in terms of things not rationally connected to

the restimulator. This is the mechanism of engramic

restimulation.

It is most terribly uncomfortable to any aberree

who, try as he might, cannot say why he does not like

some person or object or locale, and who cannot con-

nect any of the three with the actual item which is the

restimulator and does not know he has an engram about

it. This method of detecting engrams leads nowhere

quickly since one cannot select objects, persons or

locales and know they are restimulators. They may be

only associative restimulators to the actual restimuiator

item in the environment. (Words contained in engrams,

by the way, and any other precise restimulator can
"push button" the aberree into action or apathy if they
are used upon him. In words it has to be the exact word;
for instance, painted will not do when painter is in the
engram. What is painted, however, may be an associa-
tive restimulator and the aberree may declare he does
not like it; that he does not like it does not mean that it
will "push his buttons" and make him cough or sigh or
get angry or get sick or whatever the engram containing
the word dictates he should do.)

The token is a very special kind of restimulator.

While the auditor may not find much use for the asso-

ciative restimulator as applied to contrasurvival en-

grams, he can employ the token as a means of detection

to locate allies.

The token is any object, practice or mannerism

491

L. RON HUBBARD

which one or more allies used. By identity thought the

ally is survival; anything the ally used or did is, there-

fore, survival. The valence of the ally is that one most

frequently employed by the aberree. While the Clear

can shift himself into valences he imagines or beholds

at will and convenience, and out of them at will and can

stabilize his own at will, the aberree skids around into valences without his knowledge or consent and is most likely to be in any valence but his own. The person who seems to be a different person every time he is met or a different person to each person he meets, with special valences manifesting here and others manifesting there, is shifting into various winning valences; interfered with in his shifts, he goes into secondary valences; if forced into his own valence he becomes ill. It is understood, of course, that all valences manifest something of himself.

Shifting into ally valences is the fundamental practice of the aberree. He will feel most at ease when his

own valence is alloyed to some degree with an ally
valence. So long as the ally or the pseudoally is not
available, the aberree reminds himself of the ally va-
lence with tokens. These tokens are the things the ally
possessed, practiced or did.

An aberree will often inextricably associate himself
with a pseudoally, as in marriage, and then make the
astonished discovery that he is not partnered with the
optimum ally conduct. (Mother was an ally, Mother
baked bread; wife is pseudomother though she nor he
knows it, wife does not bake bread. Mother frowned on
lipstick; wife wears lipstick. Mother gave him his way;
wife has a bossy attitude. Wife is pseudomother because

she has similar voice tones only.) The aberree then

reactively and unknowingly attempts to coax wife or

partner into the ally valence by assuming that the

moment of the sympathy engram is present time—a

492

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

mechanical shift caused only by the restimulation of the

sympathy engram because of voice tones or some such

thing—and proceeds to manifest the ghost of the en-

gram illness or injury or operation as a psychosomatic

sickness. The computation of the reactive mind is

simple—just like Simple Simon—one forces the ally
into being by manifesting the somatic with which the
ally sympathized. This can also be an effort to turn a
partner, in which the reactive mind thinks it has dis-
covered an ambivalent friend-enemy, into the sympathy
valence. Wife is cruel. Mother was cruel until the
injury, then she was nice. Manifest the injury as a
chronic psychosomatic illness and wife will be nice.
Actually wife isn't nicer, so the computation gets stron-
ger, the illness gets stronger, and down into the dizzy
dwindling spiral we go. The psychosomatic illness is
also a denial of dangerousness, a plea of helplessness—a
shade of opossum playing,⁵⁵ fear paralysis: "I'm no men-

ace to you. I'm sick!"

The aberree goes into his own valence of the time of the sympathy engram in his bid for sympathy and his denial of his own dangerousness. The valence of himself, of course, is complicated by the age-tab and somatic of the engram in which he was immature and not well.

The psychosomatic illness is, as well, a token, which is to say it is a reminder of a time when he once had love and care and was told so. He needs it about as much as he needs to be atom bombed, of course, but this is good, solid, reactive mind "survival" and the reactive mind is going to make it so he can survive if it

kills him.

55. opossum playing: pretending to be dead, a trick used by

opossums (small, tree-dwelling mammals which are active at

night) to defend themselves from predators.

493

L. RON HUBBARD

This is all mechanical and is actually merely re-

stimulation of an engram, but it is better understood as

a low order of computation.

In the absence of an ally, and even in the presence of

the ally, he uses reactive mimicry. Conscious mimicry

is a wonderful way to learn. Reactive mimicry is most

allying to the personality. Reactively, he once had an ally and imitates the ally. Consciously he may not even recall the ally or the habits of the ally.

The ally, remember, is somebody who has entered the interior world of the mind when the analyzer was shut down by illness or injury or an operation and gave forth sympathy or protection. The ally is part of the sympathy engram. If a child had grandparents he liked and was lucky enough not to be ill around them or be talked to by them in sympathetic terms when he was ill or injured, the grandparents would still be much loved.

In Dianetics an ally is only someone who has offered

sympathy or protection in an engram. We don't have to

have engrams to be loved or to love: quite the contrary,

one is better loved and loves more without engrams.

The token applies, Dianetically, only to the ally and

is an object, practice or mannerism similar to an ob-

ject, practice or mannerism of the ally.

The ally smoked Pittsburgh stogies, so the aberree

may smoke Pittsburgh stogies no matter what they do to

his throat or his wife. The ally wore bowlers,⁵⁶ the lady

aberree dotes on riding habits⁵⁷ but has never ridden a

horse. The ally knitted, the aberree specializes in wear-

ing knit things or a lady at least makes a pretense of

knitting and sometimes wonders why she ever took it

up, she is so bad at it. The ally used profanity, the

56. bowlers: stiff felt hats with rounded crown and narrow brim,

worn chiefly by men. Also called derbies.

57. riding habits: dresses or suits worn by horseback riders.

494

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

aberree uses the same profanity. The ally wipes his

nose on his sleeve and picks his nose, the aberree wipes

his nose on a dinner jacket and fiddles with his nostrils.

The token may be a reminder of pure ally or it may

be a reminder of the friend side of an ambivalent

friend-enemy. And it may be a winning valence that

was also ambivalent toward the aberree. The token is

never an associative restimulator in the meaning that it

reminds of some antagonist, for associative restimula-

tors are abhorred.

The most chronic token, the most constant habit,

practice or mannerism of the preclear is a direct arrow

to the pure ally. And the pure ally is the one the reactive

mind will guard to its highest level of the beset donjon⁵⁸

keep.⁵⁹ And that is the target of the auditor. He may

have to relieve the majority of the engram bank before

he can erase the engram which is most likely to aberrate

the individual, to saddle him with strange practices and

to make him chronically ill.

Observe your preclear and see what he does and says that is strange to his personality, things he does but does not much seem to enjoy. See what he uses and what his mannerisms are. Amongst this collection you may, by asking discreet questions, jog an ally into his memory which he had forgotten and so jogging, reach swiftly toward the sympathy engram in which that ally is contained or reach toward, for an emotional discharge, the painful emotion engram of the loss of that ally, his illness or incidents concerning him.

Another but special token is that which stems

from a "die if you don't" command. Fathers, for instance, suspicious of paternity, sometimes claim while

58. donjon: the fortified main tower of a castle.

59. keep: the strongest, innermost part or central tower of a medieval castle.

60. paternity: the state of being a father; fatherhood.

495

L. RON HUBBARD

trouncing or upsetting mothers that they will kill the child if it isn't just like Father. This is a very unhappy type of token, to say nothing of being, usually, a bad

engram; it can go to the extent of remodeling structure,
of making noses long or hair absent; it may compel an
aberrant into a profession he does not admire and all out
of the engramic command that he must be like the
parent. As this type of command is usually given
before birth it is often addressed, unknowingly, to a
girl, fathers not being gifted ordinarily with clairvoy-
ance;⁶¹ in such a case it will bring about a most remark-
able structural change in a woman and form some
unusual mannerisms, "ambitions" (like a dog that gets
whipped if he doesn't fetch the duck) and some habits
which, to say the least, are astonishing. Father, post-
birth, to accomplish the reactivation of such an engram,

must be quite ambivalent so that the friend-enemy
computation comes into being. Not to be like Father is
to die: to force Father into his sympathy-engram self the
reactive mind must manifest the token of illness. Token
and likeness is the answer to such a computation. And
recall, all such computations are not simple but are
made further complex by the addition of dozens of other
engramic computations.

The friend-enemy is rather easy to find as an enemy,
not too hard to find as a friend. Standard technique with
its repeater and return, et al., would in themselves at last
locate any engram and erase the bank so that it properly
refiles. The use of the token facilitates the auditing.

In the case of the pure ally, the champion of the
right, standard technique also at last arrives. But here,
how smooth the use of the token sometimes makes the
road! For the token may be as alarmingly strange as an
61. clairvoyance: the ability to perceive things that are not in
sight or that cannot be seen.

496

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY — PART Two

elephant in a bird cage. It takes a real ally to keep some
of these odd habits around.

Measure the preclear against his environment and

education and his society and profession. See what

doesn't seem to belong amid the things he uses, the

objects he adores and the mannerisms his friends find

so strange. Then find out if he or the spouse knew of

anyone who did those things or liked those things.

Do not suppose from all this that our Clear has

jettisoned all strange mannerisms. Self-determinism is

individuality in the extreme; personality is inherent

and, revealed by clearing, looms up high above the

aberrance. The engrams compress a man and make him

small and afraid. Released, his power comes into play.

The sympathy engram is to a man like a crutch when he

has two sturdy legs. But oh, the pre-clear sobs where he

loses old Uncle Goston, whose habit of spitting on the
floor, as transplanted, so astonished our preclear's
friends and business associates. But the grief is brief,
usually the half-hour it takes to run the sympathy
engram out. Suddenly the preclear recalls Uncle Gos-
ton, recalls a thousand things Uncle Goston and he used
to do, for the engram had Uncle Goston occluded and
amongst those missing from the sight of "I." Although
it might have said in the engram, "All right, there,
there, there, Billy. I'll take care of you. Don't thrash
around so. You'll be all right. There, there, there. Poor
little fellow. What a terrible rash you've got. How
feverish. There, there, there, Billy. You'll be all right as

long as I am here. I'll take care of my Billy. Go to sleep

now. Go to sleep and forget it." And Billy was all the

time "unconscious" and never "knew" about it.

Afterwards he got a partner who looked like Uncle

Goston (but happened to be a fool), and when bankrupt

somehow developed a rash and a chronic cough and got

very "feverish" about his business affairs. He took to

497

L. RON HUBBARD

spitting on the floor no matter where he was; and his

health got worse and he got worse: but if you had asked

him about any uncks before he went into therapy, he

would have been very vague. "Give me a flash reply,"

says the auditor. "Who used to spit on the floor?"

"Uncle Goston," answers the preclear. "Gosh, that's

funny (hawk,62 spit), I hadn't thought of him for years.

He was never around much, though." (Not more than

ten years constantly, the auditor may discover.) "Don't

suppose he's important. Let's take up Mrs. Swishback,

that teacher I had ————" "Let's return now to the time

Uncle Goston helped you," says the auditor. "The

somatic strip will now go back to the time your Uncle

Goston helped you." "I feel like my skin's on fire!"

complains the preclear. "This must be—hey, it's my

allergy! But I don't see anybody. I don't ——— Wait, I

get an impression of somebody. Somebody ——— Why,

it's Uncle Goston!" And he runs it and the rash goes

away. But maybe the auditor had to get a hundred

engrams before he got this one. And then the preclear

suddenly remembers about him and Uncle Goston and

the time—but get on with therapy.

Complete remembering seems to be a synonym for

complete sanity. But don't suppose that just because a

Clear gets rid of his Uncle Gostons and his habit of

spitting on the floor that he will not now indulge in any

eccentricity. The difference is, he is not compelled into

eccentricity without his consent. Good Lord, what a

cleared mind can think up to keep itself from being

bored!

What to Do If a Case Stops Progressing

Even in the easiest cases there will come times when

62. hawk: make an effort to raise phlegm from the throat; clear

the throat noisily.

498

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

progress seems to stop. Here is a list of possibilities

of why:

1. The preclear is not moving on the track despite

appearances, but is being subject to one of the

five types of commands which can inhibit his

free motion or information. The commonest of

these is a holder and the preclear may be found

to be in an engram and in a strange valence.

2. There is an emotional or pain shut-off. These

can always be detected even at the beginning of

a case. The patient's muscles will tremble or

twitch when he is in an engram but he will not

feel the somatic: this is inevitably a pain shut-

off. Out of therapy the patient may be very

tense, his neck muscles in particular may be

tight: this is often an emotional shut-off. Either

of these conditions can be observed in many

aberrees before beginning therapy. If they ap-

pear while therapy is in progress, look for pain

or emotional shut-offs.

3. There is an exaggerator of emotion and a pain

shut-off so that the patient weeps over anything

but wriggles and twists when asked to approach

pain. He is feeling emotion without feeling the

pain.

4. There is an emotional charge in some area which

has not been discharged but which is ready to
discharge. Or, conversely, if you have been trying
to get an emotional discharge in a late painful
emotion engram and have had no success, there is
a feeling shut-off in the prenatal area.

5. The Auditor's Code has been broken. Change
auditors or reduce the moments when the code
was broken.

499

L. RON HUBBARD

6. There is an emotional upset in the patient"; life
current with therapy. Question him closely and

remove the charge, if possible, of the emotional

upset as an engram.

7. The auditor has missed an important point in

this book. Study it.

If a Case "Refuses" to Get Well

It has long been a popular idea, if an erroneous fact,

that people desire to retain their neuroses. In any case

which "resists" therapy, you may be certain that the

engrams are resisting, not the patient; do not, therefore,

attack the patient but the engrams.

There are many computations which give the ap-

pearance of resistance. The commonest of these is the

ally computation, which derives from engrams contain-
ing allies who seem to plead that the patient is not to rid
himself of anything. An ordinary situation is one in
which some relative or friend of the mother's is advis-
ing the mother against aborting the child. The ally is
pleading, "Do not get rid of it!" The preclear knows
this person to be a friend of his of the highest order.

The preclear may interpret this to mean that he is not to
get rid of his engrams.

Another computation is the stupidity computation,
wherein the preclear begins to believe he will be stupid
or lacking a mind if he gives up engrams. This stems,
for example, from the mother saying she will lose her

mind if she loses the child: she calls the child "it." A whole chain of these may appear in a case, giving the preclear the idea that if he parts with any engrams, he will lose his mind. This is the primary reason why past schools believed that the mind was composed of neuroses instead of an inherent personality. The engrams, even though unknown, appeared very valuable, which they are not—none of them.

500

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

Yet another computation is one of secrecy. It seems

to the preclear that his life depends upon holding some

secret. This is common in a case where the mother has

had a lover. Mother and the lover both enjoin⁶³ secrecy.

The preclear, obeying engramic commands, believes

that he has much to lose if he tells this secret even

though those who enjoined it were not even aware that

he was present, or if they knew, that he was "listening."

One secrecy computation stems from the mother's: tear-

ing to tell the father that she is pregnant: if the mother is

an ally of the child, then the child will be extremely

tenacious of this type of engram.

All cases have one or more computations which

inhibit a delivery of engrams. Some have all the above

and more. This is no great worry to the auditor for by

repeater technique, he can open the engram bank

Drugs

The so-called hypnotics <iaw oo great use in Dia-
netics except, on occasion, ^/hep patient is psychotic
and narcosynthesis is employe!1 Hv hypnotic; is meant
such preparations as pherioo-'.rbitai,"1 hyoscinc, '
opium66 and so on. These •,-^-. \i-producing drugs art:
undesirable save only as a sedative and would bu ad-
ministered as sedatives by a medical doctor. Any patient
who needs a sedative already has a medical doctor
whose business it is. The auditor should not then,

concern himself with hypnotics or anything producing

63. enjoin: order, command.

64. phenobarbitai: a medicinal drug used to calm the nerves and

induce sleep.

65. hyoscine: same as scopolamine, an alkaloid used in medicine

as a sedative, hypnotic and sometimes with other drugs to relieve

pain.

66. opium: a drug made from the juice of certain poppies,

smoked or chewed as a stimulant or narcotic, and used in

medicine as a sedative.

sleep. Some preclears will beg to be given sleeping

drugs to "facilitate therapy" but any such drug is an

anesthetic and shuts down somatics, inhibiting therapy.

Further, none but the insane should be worked in amne-

sia trance, particularly a drug trance, for the work is

longer than necessary and the results slow, as elsewhere

explained. Dianetics wakes people up; it does not try to

drug them or hypnotize them. Hence, the hypnotic drug

is worthless to the auditor.

Patients who wish to be knocked over the head with

lead pipes or otherwise put into a deep trance should

not be allowed to have their way even when they humorously present their own lead pipes.

The trick is to put "I" in contact with the file clerk.

All hypnotics work to shut down "I." While the file clerk can be reached and sonic and visio are available and even while, with much labor, a clearing can be so effected, even the most "hopeless" case is better worked in contact; the work is faster, more satisfactory and less troublesome.

When one discovers the science of mind, he inevitably discovers numerous other things not properly in his province. Amongst these is the confusion which has unwittingly existed about hypnotics. Those things la-

beled "hypnotics" as named above are not hypnotics at all but anesthetics. And those things labeled anesthetics are not anesthetics but hypnotics. This will become brilliantly clear to the auditor when he finds himself tangling with his first "anesthetic" nitrous oxide engram in some preclear. Perhaps there will have been another engram wherein morphine⁶⁷ was administered for days and even weeks, leaving the patient in a stupor which, by the definition "hypnotic," should have been a trance: the aberrative material will be there but it will

67. morphine: a drug made from opium, used for relieving pain.

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY — PART Two

be found to be slight compared to a chloroform⁶⁸ or

nitrous oxide engram.

Ether, chloroform and nitrous oxide, the "anes-

thetics," place the patient in a deep hypnotic trance: the

reactive bank is wide open and all reception is sharp,

clear and aberrative in the extreme. Of the three,

nitrous oxide is easily the worst, being no anesthetic

which would dull pain at all but a first-class hypnotic.

In nitrous oxide the pain is filed and the content is filed

with high and brilliant fidelity.^{6'} Some years ago some

investigator wondered if nitrous oxide did not make the

brain decay. Fortunately brains do not decay that easily;

but nitrous oxide does bring into being particularly

severe engrams. The serious, late-life engrams which

the auditor will encounter may include, at the list's top,

a nitrous oxide dental or surgical or obstetrical™ en-

gram. Nitrous oxide engrams are particularly bad when

they involve exodontistry; they often form the most

severe late-life engram. Aside from the fact that all

exodontists have in the past talked too much and have

offices which are far too noisy with street sounds,

running water and flapping drill belts, nitrous oxide is

not at all anesthetic and sharpens rather than dulls pain.

In reverse, nitrous oxide makes an excellent hyp-
notic for institutional therapy. It is far from the best
obtainable from the chemists, that is certain, for some
brilliant chemist will certainly be able to bring out a
good gas hypnotic now that Dianetics is known and the
need of it in institutions is realized.

68. chloroform: a colorless liquid with a sharp, sweetish smell
and taste. Chloroform evaporates quickly and easily. When its
vapor is inhaled, it makes a person unconscious or unable to feel
pain.

69. fidelity: accuracy; exactness.

70. obstetrical: of or regarding obstetrics, the branch of medi-

cine concerned with the care and treatment of women during

pregnancy, childbirth and the period immediately following.

503

L. RON HUBBARD

There are some drugs which assist reverie, however.

The commonest and most easily obtainable is plain,

strong coffee. A cup or two of this occasionally alerts

the analyzer enough so that it can reach through deeper

layers of "unconsciousness." Benzedrine⁷ and other

commercial stimulants have been used with some suc-

cess, particularly on psychotic patients. These bring the

mind enough awake to permit it to overcome engramic

commands. Such commercial stimulants have the disadvantage of exhausting a Q72 quantity in the mind.

This Q quantity has not been much studied. It is as though the brain burns a certain amount of Q when it is exhausting engrams. For instance, therapy every day may bring results more rapidly but it will also bring some stale sessions. Therapy every two or three days produces the best results as observed. (Therapy once a week permits the engrams to sag and slows a case, one week being too long.) Benzedrine burns up Q. After a few sessions with Benzedrine the current stock of Q is exhausted and the work has been observed to deteriorate either until a higher dosage was administered—and

there is a close limit to that—or until more Q was

manufactured.

Here, with all this, must be included an important

and vital fact. It should be on a page by itself and

underscored. All patients in therapy should be given

a dosage of vitamin B, orally or by injection at

the minimum of 10 mg per day. Reducing engrams

exhausts Q which seems to depend in some measure on

B,. You can be absolutely certain of nightmares in a

patient who is not taking his B,. Taking liberal doses of

71. Benzedrine: (trademark) an amphetamine, a drug used as a

stimulant.

72. Q: symbol used to represent an undefined, but observable as

existing, form of energy or force.

504

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

that, he will have no nightmares. DTs⁷³ are probably

caused by a similar exhaustion of Q quantity. DTs are

best treated by B, and Dianetics. Something like DTs on

a very minor scale has been observed to develop in

occasional patients who were negligent about their B.

With it, in therapy, they thrive.

Alcohol is rarely an assist to the auditor. In fact,

alcohol is rarely an assist to anyone. A depressant,

classifiable at best as a poison, alcohol has the single virtue of being highly taxable. All alcoholics are alcoholic because of their engrams. All alcoholics, unless they have injured their brains—which case is cited only because it is possible, not because research in Dianetics demonstrated any real evidence of it—can be released.

Alcoholism is engramic. It has become, in some very understandable way, a class of contagious aberration whereby the reactive mind confuses alcohol and "being a good sport" or "having fun" or "forget your troubles." Some of these things can also be obtained by strychnine⁷⁴ and cyanide.⁷⁵ Alcohol has its uses: one can put specimens of frogs and such in it; one can clean the

germs off needles with it; it burns well in rockets. But

one would not consider preserving his stomach in a

glass jar and, unless insane, does not think of himself

as a needle. While some drunks think they act like

rockets, few have been observed to reach an altitude of

more than the floor. It is not only a poor stimulant-

depressant, it is also a hypnotic in the finest sense: what

73. DTs: delirium tremens: a violent delirium (temporary state of

extreme mental excitement, marked by restlessness, confused

speech and hallucinations) resulting chiefly from excessive drink-

ing of alcoholic liquor and characterized by sweating, trembling,

anxiety and frightening hallucinations. Delirium tremens comes

from Latin, and means literally "trembling delirium."

74. strychnine: a bitter, highly poisonous substance, used in

very small doses as a stimulant.

75. cyanide: a very poisonous chemical substance.

505

L. RON HUBBARD

is done to a drunk becomes an engram.* The chronic

alcoholic is physically and mentally ill. Dianetics can

clear him or even merely release him without too much

trouble for alcohol is apparently not physiological in its

addictive effect. With the whole range of chemistry to

choose stimulants and depressants from, why the gov-

ernment chooses a superiorly aberrative and inferiorly

stimulative compound to legalize is a problem for the

better mathematicians, possibly those who deal exclu-

sively in tax income problems. Opium is less harmful,

marijuana⁷⁶ is not only less physically harmful but also

better in the action of keeping a neurotic producing,

phenobarbital does not dull the senses nearly as much

and produces less aftereffect, ammonium chloride⁷⁷ and

a host of other stimulants are more productive of results

and hardly less severe on the anatomy: but no, the

engrams, contagion⁷⁸ unpleasantly along from the first

crude brew which made one of our ancestors drunk,

decree that alcohol is the only thing which is to be
drunk if a person wants to "forget it all" and "have a
good time." There is really nothing wrong with alcohol

save that it depends mainly on engrams and other

advertising for its effect and is otherwise remarkably

inferior in performance: that it makes such aberrative

engrams is probably its main claim to fame and

* I am not being paid by the WCTU⁷⁹ to write this; it is only

that I have had to clear too many alcoholics. —LRH

76. marijuana: the dried leaves and flowers of the hemp plant,

used in cigarette form as a narcotic or hallucinogen.

77. ammonium chloride: a white, crystalline compound pro-

duced by the reaction of ammonia with hydrochloric acid: it is

used in medicine, and also in dry cells, dyes, etc.

78. contagion: a verb coined from the word contagious, describ-

ing the act of spreading or tending to spread from person to

person.

79. WCTU: Women's Christian Temperance Union, an organi-

zation that campaigns against alcohol use.

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

infame.80 Making one drug immoral and another one

taxable is a sample of the alcohol engram in society.

However, although it is immensely legal, it is doubtful if

the auditor will find any use for it in therapy.

And speaking of drugs, that three-thousand-cycle

note⁸¹ in your ears came either from a nitrous oxide

engram or Mother taking lots of quinine before you

were born in the hope that she would not be a mother,

saying the while, "It makes my ears ring so: it just

keeps on and on and on and will not stop!"

Autocontrol

Since the beginning of Dianetics research in 1930,

patients have, in the majority, had some belief that they

could run their cases in autocontrol.

Not understanding that an auditor is only interested

in what has been done to, not done by a patient, some

shyness or imagined guilt often prompts this vain⁸² hope

that one can accomplish therapy alone.

It cannot be done. That is a flat statement and it is a

scientific fact. The auditor is necessary for a large

number of reasons. He is not there to control or order

the preclear about, but he is there to listen, to provide

insistence, to compute the trouble the preclear is having

and remedy it. The work is done on these equations:

- The dynamics of the preclear are less than the

force in his reactive bank.

- The dynamics of the preclear plus the dynamics

of the auditor are greater than the force in the

preclear's reactive bank.

- The analytical mind of the preclear is shut down

80. infame: very bad reputation; notoriety; disgrace; dishonor.

81. three-thousand-cycle note: a ringing sound with three thou-

sand vibrations, or cycles, per second.

82. vain: without sense or wisdom; foolish; senseless.

507

L. RON HUBBARD

whenever he reaches an engram and he is then

unable to pursue it and recount it enough times to

discharge it without auditor assistance.

- The analytical mind of the preclear plus the ana-

lytical mind of the auditor can discover engrams

and recount them.

(There is another equation, not elsewhere men-

tioned, but germane to the Auditor's Code, which dem-

onstrates mathematically the necessity of that code:

- The force of the preclear's engram bank plus the

force of the auditor's analytical mind is greater

than the analytical mind and the dynamics of the

preclear.

This explains the necessity of never attacking the

preclear personally. It also explains the behavior of the

aberee under attack in usual life and why he grows

angry and apathetic, for this equation overwhelms his

analyzer.)

These equations demonstrate actual natural laws.

Autocontrol finds the preclear attempting to attack

something which has never been overcome by his ana-

lyzer although his analyzer has never been trying,

interiorly, to do anything else but attack that bank so

long as the analyzer would operate. The fact that the

preclear's analyzer shuts down whenever he comes into

an area of "unconsciousness" was why the engrams

could take him over and use him as a puppet when they

were restimulated—they simply shut down the analyzer.

Many efforts by many patients have been made to put Dianetics on an autocontrol level. They have all failed and thus far it is believed to be utterly and completely impossible. The preclear in autocontrol reverie may be able to reach some locks; he can certainly reach pleasant experiences and achieve data recall by return; but he cannot attack his own engrams without a standard auditor-preclear arrangement.

508

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY — PART Two

Aside from Dianetic reverie, some preclears have been foolish enough to attempt autohypnosis and thus

reach their engrams. Hypnotism in any form is unwarranted in Dianetics. Autohypnosis used in Dianetics is probably as close to fruitless masochism as one can get.

If a patient places himself in autohypnosis and regresses himself in an effort to reach illness or birth or prenatals, the only thing he will get is ill. Of course, people will try. None are ever convinced until they have tried, once they begin to agitate about autocontrol. But be sure to have a friend and this book handy so that he can audit away the headaches and such that suddenly turn on.

Dianetic reverie, which means with an auditor present, is not dangerous or severe. Autocontrol is often very uncomfortable and often fruitless. It should not be at-

tempted.

The Clear alone can autocontrol his whole time track

back to conception and does when he wants specific data

from anywhere in his life. But he is Clear.

Organic Mental Alterations

There are several things which can happen to the

nervous system, including the brain, which can cause

structural change. These are called, in Dianetics, or-

ganic mental alterations. They are not called "organic

neuroses" or "organic psychoses" because the alter-

ation of structure does not necessarily produce aberr-

tions. There has been a confusion in the past between

behavior caused by organic differences and behavior

caused by engrams. This confusion came about because

the engram bank and the reactive mind were not

known.

Any human being with an organic mental alteration

also has engrams. The behavior dictated by the engrams

and the action caused by alteration are different things.

509

L. RON HUBBARD

Engrams carry dramatizations, delusions, tantrums and

various inefficiencies with them. Alterations establish

inabilities to think or perceive or record or recall. For

instance, the radio set may have new filters and circuits

added to it which change and vary its performance and

reduce it from optimum; these would be engrams. The

radio set might have original tubes or circuits deleted

from it or it might have some of the wires crossed; this

would be organic mental alteration.

The sources of organic mental alteration are as

follows:

i. Variation of the blueprint of structure by reason

of a changed gene pattern. Some parts of the

body would grow too much or too little to

establish any alteration of structure. This is

usually so gross a change that it is obvious. The

feeble-minded and so on may suffer either from

engrams or an altered blueprint, but usually

both.

2. Alteration of the nervous system by disease or

growths, which divides into two classes:

a. Disease destruction as in paresis.

b. Additional construction as in the case of

tumors.

3. Alteration of the nervous system by drugs or

poisons.

4. Alteration by physical disorder as in the case of a

"paralytic stroke" wherein certain tissues are

inhibited or destroyed.

5. Physical change in structure due to injury as in

the case of a head wound.

6. Alteration of structure by surgery as a necessity

to remedy injury or disease.

7. Iatrogenic alterations (caused by doctors) under-

taken under a misapprehension of brain func-

tion. These can be divided into two classes:

510

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

a. Surgical, to include such things as the trans-

orbital leukotomy, prefrontal lobotomy, topec-

tomy and so forth.

b. Shock "therapies" of all kinds including elec-

tric shock, insulin shock, etc., etc., etc., etc., etc.,

etc., etc., etc., etc., etc., etc., etc., etc.

The first six sources of organic mental alteration are

much less common than has been supposed. The body

is an extremely hardy mechanism and its repair facili-

ties are enormous. If an individual can be made to

speak or follow orders at all, it is conceivable that the

techniques of Dianetics can be applied to reduce the

engrams in the engram bank, bringing about consider-

able improvement in the condition and mental ability of

the individual. When these various sources are so severe that they inhibit any use of therapy, and when it is certain that no recourse to therapy is possible and that it is utterly impossible to reach the engram bank by standard technique, hypnotism or drugs, such cases can be considered beyond help of Dianetics.

Category 7 presents another problem. Here we have selective experimentation at work and it would be flatly impossible to conceive, without months of study of their experimental subjects, how many brands and varieties of operation have been performed and how many odd and bizarre shocks have been used.

All iatrogenic alterations of the nervous system can

be considered under the heading of "reduced ability,"

in other words, inability. In each case something has

been done to reduce the ability of the individual to

perceive, record, recall or think. Any of these compli-

cate a case for Dianetics, but they do not inevitably bar

Dianetics from working.

In shock cases, such as electric shock, tissue may

have been destroyed and the memory banks may in

some way have been scrambled, the time track may be

511

L. RON HUBBARD

altered and other conditions may exist.

In all such iatrogenic alterations, the results of

Dianetics must be considered equivocal. But in all

such cases, particularly those of electric shock, Dia-

netics should be used in every possible way in an

effort to improve the patient.

All shocks and operations should be picked up for

what they are—engrams.

No person who can perform routine tasks or

whose attention can be attracted and fixed should

feel despair or be considered hopeless.

Any person who has been subjected to such treat-

ment may not be able to reach optimum mental effi-

ciency but he may be able to reach a level of rationality

even yet in excess of the current normal. The thing to do is try. In spite of what has happened or what has been done, in the large majority of cases there may be a chance of excellent recovery.*

Organic Derangement

A standard class of prenatal engrams has as its content the worry of the parents that the child will be feeble-minded if not now aborted in earnest. This adds an emotional overload to such engrams and it adds, as importantly, an aberrative condition in the now grown patient that he is "not right," "all wrong," "feeble-

minded" and so forth. The difficulty of aborting the
child is nearly always underestimated: the means used
are often novel or bizarre: the worry because the child
has not come out of the womb after the abortion attempt
is acute, and the concern that he is now damaged
beyond repair all combine to make severely aberrative

* Attempted abortion sometimes may do strange things to a
brain. This can be considered under the heading of injury. Most
sonic recalls can be recovered. If various recalls cannot be
recovered, engrams can still be removed. Intelligence in such
cases will rise and is often already extremely high. —LRH

engrains and, because of their content, engrains which are difficult to reach.

The aberrative quality of the "feble-minded" species of remark is, of course, high. The worry that the child may be born blind or deaf or otherwise incapacitated is common. The former class of engramic remarks can bring about actual feble-mindedness; the latter concern over blindness and so on bring about, at best, impaired visio and sonic recall.

The shut-off of the recalls is occasioned as well by an engramic belief in the society at large that the unborn child is blind, unfeeling and not alive. This

belief is introduced into AA (attempted abortion) engrams by people's self-justification remarks while attempting an abortion: "Well, he can't see, feel or hear anyway." Or, "It doesn't know what's going on. It's blind, deaf and dumb. It's a sort of growth. It isn't human."

The greater part of all sonic and visio recall shut-off has as its source the remarks made at such times or by painful emotion and other engramic data. Hundreds of hours of therapy may pass before these recalls turn on.

The bulk of all shut-offs will turn on in the course of therapy. There are thousands of engramic remarks and emotional situations which will deny the preclear his

recall and that recall can be expected ordinarily to

restore.

A very low dynamic patient (for people have various

native strengths of the dynamic) may have recalls shut

off rather easily. A high dynamic patient would require

much more aberration before the recalls are closed

down. These recalls can be turned on simply by running

out the physically painful and painful emotion engrams.

It must not pass unremarked, however, that the

abortion attempts actually can, if rarely, derange the

brain and nervous mechanisms beyond the fetal ability

L. RON HUBBARD

to repair. The result of this is actual, physiological

disability.

Children and adults now classified as feebleminded

may then be separated into two groups: the actual,

physiological class and the aberrated class. Further,

recall shut-offs must be classified into two classes as

well, regardless of the dynamic and intelligence of the

individual: those occasioned by brain damage received

during an attempted abortion and those which are

solely aberrational and derived from engramic com-

mands and emotion.

The ability of the fetus to repair damage is phenomenal. Brain damage can ordinarily be repaired perfectly regardless of how many foreign substances were introduced into it. Just because the brain was touched in an attempted abortion is no reason to suppose that the recall shut-off has this as a source, for this is the rarer of the two causes.

It is understood that this is being read by many with recall shut-offs and it is understood that it may well produce a considerable upset. But remember this, sonic and visio recall are not vital to a nearly full Release.

This comment about organic damage does not mean that a Release cannot be effected which will leave the

person more competent and happier, for this can always

be done regardless of the recalls. And remember this,

recalls almost always turn on even if it takes five

hundred hours or more. This condition is only remarked

because it will be found in some few cases.

The "tests" and "experiments" with human brain

vivisection in institutions are not, unfortunately, valid.

For all the pain and trouble and destruction caused by

these "experiments," they were done without a proper

knowledge of aberration and mental derangement.

None of such data is of any value beyond showing that

the brain can be cut in various ways without entirely

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

killing the man. For the patients used responded both to

engramic disorder and the physical disorder caused by

the psychiatrist, and there is no way to differentiate

between these after the operation except by Dianetics.

Conclusions drawn from this data are then invalid con-

clusions, for the response of the patient after the opera-

tion might have stemmed from a number of sources:

engramic, the engram of the operation itself, attempted

abortion damage early in life, brain disability on ac-

count of the operation and so forth. Hence, draw no

conclusions that impairment of conceptual thinking, for

instance, results only when a part of the brain is

removed, that recall is shut off only when the brain is

vivisectioned and so on. From a scientific standpoint no

such "findings" were conclusive of anything except that

the brain can be damaged late in life without entirely

destroying a man and that surgery of any kind often brings

about a mental change in the patient. True, it may have

been discovered that this or that portion of the switch-

board called the brain, when removed, removed also

some ability to perform.

It will be of interest to those associated with emergency hospital work particularly that the healing and recovery of any patient can be enormously benefited and the term of illness shortened by removing the engram occasioned at the moment of injury.

The accident case sometimes dies, in a few days, from shock, or does not recover and will not heal swiftly. In any injury—a burn, cut, a bruise of whatever kind—a trauma⁸³ lingers in the injured area. The moment of the injury created an engram. This engram

83. trauma: a painful emotional experience or shock, often producing a lasting psychic effect and, sometimes, a neurosis.

L. RON HUBBARD

inhibits the release of the trauma. The fact that the injured part still hurts is an organic restimulator which depresses the ability of the patient to recover.

Using reverie or merely working the patient with his eyes closed, and working the patient as soon after the injury as possible, the doctor, nurse or relative can return the injured person to the moment when the injury was received and usually recover and exhaust the incident as a usual engram. Once the engram of the injury is reduced, the general mental tone of the patient im-

proves. Further, the injured area is no longer inhibited from healing.

Some experimental work on this demonstrated that some burns would heal and disappear in a few hours when the engram which accompanied their reception was removed. On more serious injuries tests showed definite and unmistakable acceleration of the rate of healing.

In operations, when anesthetics have been used, Dianetics is useful in two ways: (1) as a preventive measure and (2) as a recovery measure. In the first, no conversation of any kind should be held around or with

the "unconscious" or semiconscious patient. In the second, the trauma of the operation itself should be recovered and relieved immediately afterwards.

A Problem in Mutual Therapy

R and his wife C cleared each other in eight months with Dianetics, working four hours a night, four nights a week, each of them auditing the other for two hours of the four. This mutual arrangement had been complicated by the fact that whereas R was very eager to be cleared, his wife was quite apathetic about the work: he had managed only after much persuasion to get the cases started.

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

He was a high dynamic case with much emotion

encysted; she was an apathy case who entirely neglected

her troubles (black panther mechanism). He was trou-

bled with a chronic ulcer and anxieties about his job;

she was troubled with a general allergic condition and a

chronic carelessness in domestic affairs. They were not

to any great degree mutually restimulative, but they had

problems about tacit consent, avoiding the subjects

which had most upset them while together, such as a

miscarriage she had had and the loss of their home by

fire many years before, as well as other shocks. Further they were faced by R's intensity on the one hand and his introversion, which caused him to slight her therapy, and C's apathy on the other hand, which at once aided R's effort to take more time as the preclear than she and which made her less interested in being a good auditor.

Further complication took place because C did not understand the Auditor 's Code or its use and on several occasions had become angry and impatient with R when he was in session and returned, an attitude which tended to force R into an anger valence.

Along this uncertain course therapy had been con-

tinuing. R was then informed of tacit consent and told

he had better release some of their mutual painful

emotion. He thereafter addressed the engram of the

burning home and suddenly found himself able to audit

some early sympathy engrams of his wife's which had

not heretofore been available. It was discovered that her

allergies stemmed from a father sympathy computation

and that R was the pseudofather. This resulted in a

marked improvement in C's case. She began to suffer

less from her allergies, and a chronic heart pain she had

had so long that she no longer heeded it vanished as

well. She became interested in being a good auditor and

studied the subject. She became slightly annoyed with

517

L. RON HUBBARD

R when he demanded more than his share of therapy

time. (This increase of interest is always true of any

apathy case which began with neglect of engrams.)

R, however, was much inhibited by her periods of

anger and found that he now operated almost exclu-

sively under autocontrol, a condition wherein he de-

cided what should be run and what should not be run in

himself. This autocontrol is, of course, useless, since if

he knew about his aberrations and the data in his

engrams, they would not be engrams. He, therefore, started on a period of refusing to display any emotion since she had mocked him about it, would not follow her directions and was, in short, obeying the engrams which she had given him when angry with him during past sessions. C was advised to pick up the moments of anger she had displayed as an auditor during therapy and when these were reduced, it was found that R worked well again and cooperated.

His ulcer stemmed from an attempted abortion. His father, an extremely aberrated individual, had sought to abort the baby when it was seven months in the womb.

The mother remonstrated⁸⁴ that the baby might be born

alive. The father said that if it were alive when born he

would kill it as soon as it came out. He had said,

further, that the mother had to hold still while he

operated. On another occasion the father had said that

he would lock the mother in a closet until she decided to

abort the child. (This case was much complicated be-

cause the mother had been afraid to tell the father and

had pretended not to be pregnant for three months,

giving the husband the belief that the child, seven

months along, was actually only four months along.

Therefore, there was much secrecy in the case, much

84. remonstrated: presented and urged reasons in opposition or

complaint; protested.

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

confusion and conflicting data.) This meant that R had

a severe holder in the prenatal area: he was held by the

engram which included a penetration of his stomach.

This was the key engram, which is to say other en-

grams, by the mechanism of similar somatic and con-

tent, had gathered around it to suppress it. This was the

tangle of incident which C was confronting unknow-

ingly: it had become more tangled by her anger. R

would now cooperate but his time track had wound into

a ball around the holder engram, the key. Two exodon-

tistries for the removal of wisdom teeth with nitrous

oxide anesthesia were also suppressing the prenatals.

C worked for some time trying to get at the late

extraction engrams, which contained an enormous

amount of conversation between the dentist and his

assistants and R's mother, who, unfortunately for his

sanity, had accompanied him to the dentist's office.

R was made intensely uncomfortable by the contin-

ual restimulation of engrams which yet could not be

reached. He was no more uncomfortable than he had

often been in the past and his discomfort would have

been absent had C understood and followed the Audi-

tor's Code. The case made no progress for several

weeks.

C's therapy was progressing. It was intensely re-

stimulative to R to work upon her and increased his

discomfort, but the more he worked on her the better

auditing she did and the more intelligent she was (her

IQ went up about fifty points after five weeks of

therapy). C desired to know how she could break the

impasses⁸⁵ in his case and was informed that she was

now practicing tacit consent, for she had many times

85. impasses: situations offering no escape, as a difficulty with-

out solution, an argument where no agreement is possible, etc.;

deadlocks.

L. RON HUBBARD

been needlessly thoughtless of R long before therapy

was undertaken and she now realized what she had done

to him and yet could not bring herself to face the fact

that she was a responsible party to so much of his

unhappiness. She had quite ordinarily used angry lan-

guage to him which she well knew would "push button"

him into doing something or into retreating from a

quarrel, which language had been restimulative to him

long before therapy.

C thereupon entered into painful emotion engrams

late in R's life and, by working early physically painful

engrams which said R could "feel nothing" alternately

with late engrams when he was feeling intensely on an

emotional plane but could not exhibit it, began to

release the emotion in the case. R then showed steady

improvement. Late painful emotion was released and

early prenatals would show to be reduced, at which

more late emotion would be visible for reduction.

It was suddenly disclosed in the case that the reason

R was so easily upset by C lay in the person of a nurse

who had attended R during his tonsillectomy when he

was five years of age. C had some similarity of manner-

ism to this nurse. This was a sympathy engram, and

when it was released the time track began to straighten

out and the abortion engrams could be more easily

contacted.

It so happened that R had been well off his time

track most of his life, his memory occluded, his recall

in poor condition. This was found to lie in the hidden

key engram, the abortion attempt wherein his father had

vowed to kill him if he came out and had added that the

child could not see, feel or hear anything anyway,

engramic material which was demonstrated by R's in-

ability to move on his time track.

The moment the key was found—two hundred and

eighty hours of therapy had elapsed—R came back on

520

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

the time track, could move on it, and the erasure of his

engrams proceeded in an orderly fashion.

C had been cleared about two months before R

reached the final engram. C's allergies, however, disap-

peared long before her case was cleared completely,

and R's ulcer and some other psychosomatic difficulties

also vanished well before his case was finally cleared.

A Problem in a Restimulated Case

G was cleared in ten months of sporadic sessions.

His case had the initial diagnosis of nonsonic, nonvisio,

pain and emotional shut-off, permanent light trance,

permanent "regression" at the age of three years. This

is to say that the instant he went into reverie he was

startled and frightened to find himself in a dental chair,

three years old, and having a tooth pulled, an engram in

which he had been situated, unknowingly, about half of

his ensuing life. It had been the partial cause of his

chronic tooth decay and his inability to sleep as negation

against the anesthetic. The situation was obvious since he

immediately began to wrestle about and lisp, which con-

dition was instantly remedied by running the engram so

that he could come to present time, which he did.

He had had considerable difficulty in life, was a

high dynamic but manifested apathy. It was discovered

after seventy-five hours, at which time release took

place, that his wife was sometimes his pseudogrand-

mother and also, by ambivalence, was his pseudo-

mother. As his sympathy computation demanded that he

be ill so that his grandmother would stay with him and

as his contrasurvival engrams demanded that his mother

was only nice to him when he was ill, the reactive

computation added up to the fact that he must be ill

continually, which demand had been obeyed by his body

for twenty-three years. All this was recovered and remedied, of course, only by reducing engrams.

521

L. RON HUBBARD

The erasure began to take place at the end of about two hundred hours of therapy and was proceeding when the case suddenly stopped all progress. For fifty or more hours of therapy, few engrams could be located; those which were located could not be reduced, no painful emotion could be reached and whatever engrams were reached and reduced were located and treated only because the auditor in this case used highly

skilled forcing techniques which are almost never nec-

essary and should not be employed save in psychotic

cases. Such endeavor had not been necessary at the

beginning of the case. Something was obviously wrong.

On close questioning it was discovered that G's wife

was violently opposed to Dianetics, that she never lost any

chance of leveling the most scathing⁸⁶ attacks against it to

G and particularly when he was in the company of

friends. She derided⁸⁷ him as being psychotic. She sought

a lawyer to give her a divorce (announcing it after he had

entered therapy but actually having had continual consul-

tation on it with a lawyer for two years past) and generally

agitated and disturbed G to such an extent that he was

continually receiving painful emotional engrams even

though he did not display any emotion against her.

They had a child, nine years of age, a boy. G was

very fond of the boy. The child had had an unusual

number of childhood illnesses and suffered from eye

trouble and chronic sinusitis; he was backward in

school. The wife was somewhat sharp with the child.

Anything he did made her nervous.

The auditor in the case, on learning the facts about

her attitude toward her husband in general and Dia-

netics in particular, held a conference with her about

86. scathing: very harsh or bitter.

87. derided: laughed at in contempt or scorn; made fun of;

ridiculed.

522

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

her husband. She was found to be unopposed to therapy

for herself. Shortly after the conference, G and this

woman had a brief quarrel in which G made the remark

that she must be aberrated. She took intense affront⁸⁸ at

this and said that he must be the one who was crazy

since he was interested in Dianetics. He countered with

the fact that of the two he must be the least aberrated

since he was taking steps to do something about it.

Further, he pointed out that she must be aberrated or she would not be as quarrelsome with the child as she was, a fact which definitely indicated that she must have a block on her second dynamic, sex.

The following day he came home from work and found she had withdrawn the money from the bank and gone to another town, taking the boy with her. He followed and found her staying with some of her relatives. She had told them that he beat her and had gone so crazy that he had to have therapy. The truth of the matter was that he had never touched her brutally in his life. In this meeting, before witnesses, she began to rave and revile any "system of psychiatry" which be-

lieved in prespeech memory. He pointed out to her that

many schools of the past had believed in prespeech

memory, that the whole background of psychiatry had

long talked about "memories of the womb" without

knowing what they were, and so forth.

Her relatives, seeing him so calm about it, forced

her to return home with him. En route she made a

dramatic gesture, although in no way threatened, of

committing suicide by leaping out of the car.

The auditor in the case had a private conversation

with her on her return. He had somewhat belatedly

deduced the fact that there was something in her life

which she was afraid her husband would find out and

88. affront: open insult.

523

L. RON HUBBARD

that, confronted with a science which could recover all

memory, she had become wildly emotional about it.

She at length admitted, under close questioning, that

this was the case, that her husband must never know.

She was so disturbed that the auditor, with her consent,

gave her a few hours of therapy. It was instantly dis-

covered that her father had many times threatened to

kill her mother and that her father had not wanted her.

Further, it was found that her father's name was Q and

that her engram bank was strewn with remarks such as

"Q, please don't leave me. I will die without you."

Additionally, when she was no longer in session, she

suddenly volunteered what was to her a hysterically

humorous fact that all her life she had been having

affairs with men named Q no matter what their shape or

size or age. This was far from a Release but in view of

the fact that his other patient, G, was jeopardized by all

this unnecessary hubbub⁸⁹ and that therapy was being

stalled, the auditor further questioned her. She divulged

that she had tried many times to abort their son because

she was terribly frightened that he would be a blond

whereas she and her husband had dark hair. Further, the

engrams of that child, she knew, contained data which

she considered incriminating beyond mere abortion;

while pregnant she had had intercourse with three men

other than her husband.

The auditor pointed out to her that this guilt feeling,

no matter how real, was still engramic in her and that it

was doubtful if her husband would kill her on receipt of

these tidings.⁹⁰ He told her that she was condemning a

child to a second-rate existence and that she was reduc-

ing her husband to apathy by her fears and causing the

auditor far more work than was necessary. In her

89. hubbub: tumult; uproar.

90. tidings: news; information.

524

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY — PART Two

husband's and the auditor's presence she confessed her

infidelity⁹¹ and learned with some amazement that her

husband had known about it for years. He had not

known about her attempts on their child.

She was requested to study a therapy manual and

clear the child which, with her husband's help, she did.

The auditor continued G on to Clear, who then cleared

his wife.

Advice to the Auditor

The hidden source of human aberration was hidden for a number of very specific reasons. The auditor will encounter all of these and, although with these techniques the ability of the reactive engram bank to deny him is precisely nil, he should know the nature of the beast he has under attack.

The mechanisms of protection which the engram bank had—although they are not very good now that we know how to penetrate this armor of insanity's cause—are as follows:

1. Physical pain.
2. Emotion in terms of captured units.
3. "Unconsciousness."
4. The delayed character of the key-in.
5. Delay between restimulation and illness.
6. Utter irrationality.

Of the physical pain we know much—that the mind,

in memory, sought to avoid it just as the mind in life

seeks to avoid it as an outside source: hence, memory

blockage.

Emotion of loss piles up to make a buffer between

the individual and the reality of death.

"Unconsciousness" is not only a mechanism of

91. infidelity: unfaithfulness or disloyalty to another; especially,

sexual unfaithfulness of a husband or wife; adultery.

525

L. RON HUBBARD

hiding data, it is also a block to memory which cannot

jump the gaps of past moments when the fuses were

blown.

An engram might slumber for the better part of a

lifetime and then, given the correct set of restimulators

in the right moment of physical weariness or illness,

manifest itself, making an apparent cause of insanity or

lesser aberration many years after the actual incident

had taken place.

Another aspect of the bank protective mechanism

was the restimulator lag, which is to say that when a

keyed-in engram was restimulated it often required two

or three days for action to take place. (Example: Say a

migraine headache has as its restimulator a rhythmic

bumping sound; that sound is heard by the individual

who has the engram; three days later he suddenly has a

migraine.) Given this lag, how could one locate the

cause of a specific restimulation of a sporadic illness?

The utter irrationality of an engram, the ultimate in

irrationality, that everything equals everything else in

the engram and that these are equal to things in the exterior environment which are only vaguely similar is a feat of idiocy which any sentient man might be expected to overlook as a "thought process."

Man has been looking for this source for some thousands of years; but he was looking for something which was complicated on the grounds that anything which could be so harrowing,⁹² so destructive, so vicious and so capable of producing complex manifestations must therefore have a complex source; on examination it is remarkably simple.

The auditor will have very little to do with trying to draw a line between sanity and insanity, they are such

relative terms. He will be asked to compare Dianetics

92. harrowing: extremely disturbing or distressing; grievous.

526

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY —PART Two

with old standards such as the complex classifications

of Kraepelin:³ it can be done but it has the usefulness of

Aristotelian natural history, of interest only to the

historian.

If an individual is incapable of adjusting himself to

his environment so as to get along with or obey or

command his fellows, or, more importantly, if he is

incapable of adjusting his environment, then he can be

considered to be "insane." But it is a relative term.

Sanity, on the other hand, closely approaches, with

Dianetics, a potential absolute meaning, for we know

the optimum mind. Modifications of education and

viewpoint may make the rational action of one person

appear irrational to another but this is not a problem of

sanity—it is a problem of viewpoint and education, with

which the auditor will have but small concern.

Thus the patients the auditor will encounter will fall

into the three general Dianetic classes of nonsonic

recall, imaginary recall and sonic recall. The question

of sanity does not arise: the question of how difficult or how long the case may be is fairly well determined by the degree of these three conditions.

However, the auditor will find that he may have in his hands a truly "insane" case, one which is "psychotic." The treatment of such a case depends on which of the three above classes the psychotic patient may be entered. The problem is to deintensify the engrams of the patient as swiftly as possible.

The conditions and mechanisms which hide the engram bank do not vary: they are uniformly present in every patient, in every human being. The techniques of Dianetics may be improved upon—and what scientific

technique, particularly in its first few years of existence,

93. Kraepelin: Emil Kraepelin (1856-1926), German psychia-

trist; divided mental disturbances into various classifications.

527

L. RON HUBBARD

cannot—but they also do not perform selectively but are

applicable to all individuals.

Hence, if we have an "insane" patient, the funda-

mental problem does not change and Dianetic tech-

nique works as in any other case. The task is to reduce

the intensity of charge in the case so that it can be

resolved by standard technique.

Insane patients are often found stuck on the time track, in which case a holder is fed to them, one kind after another, until they are moving again. If the patient is regressed, he has become so thoroughly stuck that he has lost touch with the present time. Any patient can begin to relive instead of merely return and the auditor, as the remedy for this, merely snaps at them that they can remember this, which places them in a returned status again. Insane patients are often found listening to one engram over and over, in which case it is again only necessary to fix attention and feed them holders until they are once more moving on the track. Insane patients

are sometimes discovered completely off the time track,

listening to demons or seeing illusion. The problems

are always the same: use repeater technique when, by

one means or another, their attention has been fixed,

and then either get them moving on the track or get

them back on the time track. The schizophrenic is

usually a long way off his time track.

The best way to deintensify a case so that it can be

entered in routine therapy is to discover and discharge

painful emotion engrams. If ordinary means fail, get

the help of a medical doctor, place the patient under

nitrous oxide or sodium pentothal and reach a deep

level of trance where the patient will be found, ordi-

narily, to be capable of moving on his track even though

he was off his track when awake. Find a late despair

engram and discharge it as described in the chapter on

emotion. The technique for deep trance is no different

528

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

except that very cautious safeguards must be taken to

say nothing which will aberrate the patient further but

to limit all conversation to therapy patter, being very

careful to include the canceller.

The insane patient is obeying some engramic com-

mand, perhaps many, no matter what he is doing. That

command may dictate, by the patient's misinterpretation, some strange action; it may dictate demons; it may dictate anything. But diagnosis merely consists of observing the patient in order to discover, by his actions, what the engramic command might be.

This volume does not cover Institutional Dianetics beyond these few remarks, but an auditor who knows the fundamentals in this volume and with any understanding can bring about a "sanity" in patients in a short time which the boards of these institutions normally consider a miraculous recovery. The patient, however, is very far from a Release, and many more hours should be spent in discharging further painful

emotion and reducing engrams before an auditor should

consider it safe to permit him to leave therapy.

The auditor should be extremely cautious, at least

for the next twenty years, about any case which has

been institutionalized, for he may be getting a case with

iatrogenic psychosis—caused by doctors—in addition to

the patient's other engrams. Dianetics may help a mind

a little in which the brain has been "ice picked" or

"apple cored," but it cannot cure such insanity until

some clever biologist finds a way to grow a new brain.

Electric shock cases are equivocal: they may or may not

respond to treatment, for brain tissue may have been

burned away to a point where the brain cannot function

normally. In entering any such case, the auditor will be

perplexed by the scrambled condition of the standard

bank, to say nothing of the circuits by which he should

529

L. RON HUBBARD

be able to reach the engram bank. Syphilis⁹⁴ and other

brain erosions should be similarly classified and should

be approached or undertaken only with the full knowl-

edge that Dianetics may not be able to help the dismem-

bered*5 machine at all. There have been many thousands

of these brain "operations" and hundreds of thousands

of electric shock treatments: thus the auditor should be alert not to engage upon what may be a hopeless cause when there exist so many cases which can better be helped. Any case which has been institutionalized should be suspected. And if anything unusual in the way of memory scramble or lack of coordination is observed, searching inquiry may reveal hidden institutionalization. Further, an auditor called upon to assist a case which is about to be institutionalized should always be wary. The case which is being sent to an institution may be a case which has been in one before, regardless of the protestations of relatives or friends that such is not the circumstance.

Similarly, combat exhaustion⁹⁶ cases should be warily undertaken, for the case was probably processed before quitting the service, at which time electric shock or brain operation or narcosynthesis may have been applied without the knowledge or consent of the patient.

These warnings are given not because the auditor will be in any particular physical danger—patients seldom do anything but cooperate, sane or insane, when Dianetics is applied, even if they snarl about it—but because much work may be expended only to discover

94. syphilis: a contagious venereal disease affecting first some local part, secondly, the skin and mucous membrane and, thirdly, the bones and muscles and brain.

95. dismembered: divided into parts; cut to pieces; mutilated.

96. combat exhaustion: (psychiatry) a neurotic condition in

which one is anxious, irritable, depressed, etc., often as a result

of having been in combat or battle for a long time.

530

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

that the entire mental machinery has been wrecked

beyond repair.

If the auditor undertakes an electric shock case, he

should address his primary attention to the release of

that shock as an engram, for there is all manner of

careless chatter contained in these institutional en-
grams, which may further inhibit treatment. This is
aside from the fact that any electric shock, anywhere in
the body, has a tendency to derange the engram bank
and bind it so that its incidents are more than usually
snarled.

For no other reason than the advance of Dianetics,
and the conservation of an auditor's time, it should also
be remarked that the third-degree methods of some
police departments and general police abuse of crimi-
nals or ordinary citizens may have to be released in a
case before it can be further treated. Prison terms may
contain large despair charges sufficient to derange the

mind and yet may be hidden by the patient under the

mistaken idea that the auditor is interested or will be

disappointed in his "character."

Various other things enter into the engram bank

which would not be suspected as obstacles to therapy

unless mentioned. Hypnotism can be extremely aberrant

and may hold up a case. An auditor should have

some working knowledge of it so that he can release the

engrams it makes, not so he can work Dianetics. Hyp-

notism is the art of implanting positive suggestions in

the engram bank. Here they may append themselves to

engrams and become locks on those engrams. As most

engram banks contain a sample of most common

words, hypnotism is almost certain to be aberrative.

The reduction of analytical power by artificial means

places the subject in an optimum condition for the

receipt of an engram. The hypnotist uses the forgetter

mechanism with most of his suggestions and most

531

L. RON HUBBARD

people have similar engramic remarks which make it

impossible for the hypnotist's suggestion to release.

Hypnotism can be considered as a "high-powered" lock

and may be a serious obstacle in the patient's engram

bank. With clearing, the suggestions, having no an-

chords of pain below them in engrams, vanish as locks.

But hypnotic suggestions may have to be found and

cleared before a case can proceed. Hypnotism is very

commonly used in this society and it is very often the

case that, with the forgetter mechanism, the patient is

unable to recall whether he had ever been hypnotized or

not. Return technique will discover ,,,, . It ~ater tech-

nique, making the patient return with repetition

of hypnotic patter (by the patient) such as "Go to sleep,

go to sleep, go to sleep," can be depended upon to

locate it.

Not all hypnotism is in the parlor. Perverts quite

commonly use it despite the fact that the "moral"

nature is supposed to rise in a hypnotized subject.

Incidents even with people of repute have been found in

patients when examining their childhood. These inci-

dents were often entirely occluded to the patient, so

thoroughly cowering were the commands contained in the

hypnotic suggestion.

Dianetics and hypnotism can be combined, but so

can Dianetics and astronomy. The auditor will find

himself working with hypnotic patients and will have to

be very careful with patter in order to install minimal

words of his own in the engram bank so as not to turn

Dianetics into hypnotism.

Any benefit derived from hypnotism is in the field of research or the installation of a temporary manic engram. The latter has far more harm than value. Hypnotic anesthetic is vastly overrated. And hypnotism as a parlor game is a thing which no society should tolerate, for it may be sufficiently destructive to cause the

532

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

engrams to restimulate to a point of insanity. And the hypnotist never knows the content of the engram bank. Any good hypnotist, if he can conquer his desire to talk, should make a good auditor: but if he tries to combine

Dianetics and hypnotism he will find himself with a very thoroughly sick patient on his hands. Never install a positive suggestion of any kind in a patient no matter how much he may beg for one. It has proven nearly fatal.

An entire case can be worked in deep amnesia trance. It is often possible to waken a sleeping person into a deep trance simply by speaking to him quietly several nights in succession at the same hour and finally getting him to respond to the invitation to talk. Dianetic therapy can then be entered upon and pursued and will succeed particularly if the auditor is not careless enough to artificially restimulate a late physical pain engram, treating in the postbirth life mainly engrams of

painful emotion. If the person on whom the therapy is being done is aware of the action, he can be put into reverie so that earlier data can be reached, "I" being more powerful than the weak if wise attention units which constitute basic personality. He is alternately worked in amnesia trance and then in reverie. The case will resolve eventually even if reverie is not used. But there are grave responsibilities with amnesia trance: a canceller must always be installed and used in every session. Minimal conversation must be employed. All auditor desires should be stated as questions if possible, as these are not aberrative to the degree that commands

are. This method has been successful and can be used,

but reverie, even if it appears slower, even if sonic is not

present, is far more satisfactory for the excellent and

incontrovertible⁹⁷ reason that the patient recovers more

97. incontrovertible: not open to question or dispute; indisput-

able.

533

L. RON HUBBARD

swiftly and recovers on a steady upgrade, whereas

amnesia trance may incapacitate him for days together,

when incidents are apparently lifted in deep trance but

nevertheless "hung up" in the awake state. Amnesia

trance is definitely not advised: it has been subjected to

much research and has been found to be both uncom-

fortable for the patient and harassing to the auditor.

However, if other methods cannot be used for one

reason or another (and none of those reasons include the

desire of the preclear who, if the auditor would let him,

might crave drugs, hypnotism and positive suggestion in

an effort to escape his engrams and who, if allowed,

would have himself a wonderfully messy case for the

auditor to unsnarl), amnesia trance can be employed,

but always with the greatest caution and always with the

full knowledge that the patient's recovery is retarded by

as much as a factor of three, for working on a level with
the engram bank leaves the analyzer circuits unused in
the discharge. Reverie is best.

External Problems with Patients

It may happen that a patient who has made progress
suddenly ceases to make further progress. The answer
may lie elsewhere than therapy. The environment of the
preclear may be so intensely restimulative that he is
distracted, always in restimulation and thus works
slowly. It may be discovered, in such a case, that the
preclear (as in one case) has made a bargain with a wife
or husband who desires divorce that he or she wait until

the preclear is cleared. Other situations of a life nature

can place an environmental value on not being cleared.

The auditor has no business with the private lives of his

preclears, but in a case where therapy itself is made

difficult by existing situations, the auditor, with his

time at stake, has every right to discover the reason. All

these reasons will compute into some environmental

advantage in not being Clear. Removing the preclear

temporarily from his home, for instance, may change

his environment and advance therapy. The auditor has a right to ask that, Clear or not, the patient resolve the problem on his own initiative. It is common with pre-clears that they do not realize that they are Releases, for so glittering is the goal of Clear that they cease to compare themselves to the normal which they have already overpassed.

A patient can commonly be expected to introvert⁹⁸ to a very marked degree in the course of Dianetic therapy.

As the case progresses this introversion reaches an acute stage about three-quarters or thereabouts through and thereafter recedes. "Ambiversion" is a marked characteristic of the Clear. When introversion has been

marked, a fairly good gauge of the advance of the case

is in the preclear's interest in exterior things.

Nearly all preclears talk a great deal about their

engrams up to the point when they are very solid

Releases. If they don't or won't talk about their en-

grams in common conversation, the auditor can suspect

something highly protected in the engram bank con-

cerning the necessity to hide something: the auditor can

act accordingly. Although the auditor may weary of

such conversation, it nevertheless reveals much new

material to him if he observes the phrases which the

preclear uses about engrams.

It is very, very true that aberration is caused by what

has been done to not what has been done by the patient.

The actions of the patient in dramatizing, in committing

crimes and so forth are not aberrative to the patient.

Therefore the preclear's activities need be no concern

98. introvert: look in on oneself.

99. ambiversion: a condition or character trait that includes

elements of both introversion and extroversion.

535

L. RON HUBBARD

whatever of the auditor's. Whole cases have been com-

pleted without the auditor's knowing what the preclear

did for a living. While responsibility for his actions is necessarily demanded of him by an aberrated society, antisocial activity is the result of engrams which dictate it. The patient is not responsible for what he himself has done. Cleared, the matter is different. A Clear can be considered entirely responsible for his own actions, for he can compute rationally on the basis of his experience. But the aberree has little or no real control over his actions. Therefore, the auditor should make it plain that he does not care what the aberree who becomes a preclear has done in life. The problem on hand between the auditor and the preclear is an engram

bank which contains, exclusively, what other people

have done in life and what has been done to the preclear

in moments when he could not protect himself. This

approach is not only truth, it has a therapeutic value,

for in so explaining himself an auditor can often obtain

cooperation which would otherwise be denied.

The auditor should never violate the Auditor's Code

with a patient. Extended terms of therapy inevitably

result from such violations.

Restimulation

The mind is a self-protecting mechanism—but so is

Dianetics. A science of thought which works would so

closely approximate the working principles of the mind

that it would follow in parallels the injunctions¹⁰⁰ and

provisos¹⁰¹ of the mind itself. Such is the case with

Dianetics: The mind is diagnosed by its reaction to

therapy, therapy is improved by the reactions of the

100. injunctions: orders or commands that something must or

must not be done.

101. provisos: stipulations or conditions.

mind to it. This is a working principle of great value

since it explains much observed phenomena and predicts most of the remainder. Part of this parallelism is the self-protection feature.

It is almost impossible to injure a mind: it is an extremely tough organism. Of course, when one begins to hew¹⁰² and saw upon it with metal or poison it with drugs or bacteria or throw its natural armor aside as with hypnotism, unfortunate things can occur.

Charlatanism is almost impossible where Dianetics in any of its principles is being practiced. One either practices all Dianetics and gets results or practices himself into a decline: that is a mechanical, scientific fact. Dianetics, as a self-protecting science, demands

practice by Clears or at least good Releases. A Clear very closely follows in all his conduct the better aspects of the Auditor's Code: his ethical level is very high.

Hence, anyone starting a practice of Dianetics is going to find himself, no matter what his original intention, thrust toward the goal of being a Clear.

There is an excellent reason for this. There is a principle known as restimulation of the auditor. We have an understanding now of what makes an engram come into restimulation. When it comes into restimulation, it forces the pain or the action of the engram into being in the organism. The observation of some percept

in the environment which approximates a recording

(sound or sight or organic sensation) in the engram

brings the engram into greater or lesser play. Similarly,

when an auditor is not cleared himself or when he is not

in therapy himself working toward the goal of a Clear,

he becomes restimulated. He is, after all, listening

constantly to engramic material in a patient. This en-

gramic material is the very stuff of which insanity is

102. hew: to chop or cut with an ax or sword, etc.

made. Anyone has engrams: sooner or later a patient is going to start going over an engram of his own which will approximate the auditor's own engrams. This leads to great discomfort for the auditor unless the auditor is in therapy and can have the discomfort so brought forth released. So long as one is merely working late locks this is not so much the case and has made it possible for practitioners and mental healers of the past to escape much of the penalty of their own aberrations, but when one deals with the root material of these aberrations, a constant hammering by restimulators can bring about a serious condition. This is the mechanism which causes people in asylums¹⁰³ to fall prey themselves to

psychoses, although one must have had them in the first place for them to have been restimulated.

The auditor may run one or two cases without any serious repercussion: indeed, no matter what the repercussion, it can be eliminated by Dianetics. To save his own comfort, however, he should himself be cleared or released as soon as possible. He can work as a Release without too much trouble, and this makes it possible for him to make a mutual compact where he is worked on while he is working the other. A condition can then come about where two preclears are each auditors. This alternation between the couch and the auditor's chair will usually work very well.

Two persons, however, after they have begun work,
may discover that they are mutually restimulative—
which is to say each is a pseudoperson in the other's
engrams or one is restimulated (voice tone, incidents)
by the other. This should be no bar to therapy. It has
been overcome and therapy has gone forward despite
the most severe restimulative circumstances. A common

103. asylums: institutions for the maintenance and care of the
mentally ill, orphans or other persons requiring specialized assist-
ance.

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY — PART Two

avoidance technique on the part of a subject is to claim

the auditor restimulates him: it is not sufficiently im-

portant to stop therapy. It may be, however, that two

people can enter a third into the chain and, by one

clearing the next, considerably ease the tension. The

triangular work plan, where no person is working on

the person who is working him, is quite successful.

A husband and wife who have quarreled long and

often may find it too restimulative to clear each other. It

is possible to do if other arrangements cannot be made

and it is often done: but if therapy does not go well, he

should find a therapy partner and so should she. Mothers who have attempted abortion on their children or otherwise maltreated them can accomplish therapy on those children, but in any case of restimulative circumstance such as this, the greatest precaution must be taken by the auditor to adhere severely to the Auditor's Code—to do otherwise might bring much more stress into therapy than is necessary. In such a case, the mother had better herself have at least a Release accomplished upon her before she attempts to clear her children—and she should not touch those children until they are at least eight.

The subject of auditor-restimulation, where the audi-

tor restimulates the preclear or the preclear restimulates

the auditor, does not include the routine aspect of

therapy that the preclear is always being artificially

restimulated via standard therapy. An engram can be

restimulated by being touched several times and so it

will lift. The auditor-restimulation problem is a specific

one where the auditor is a pseudoenemy, a similarity to

a person who has harmed the patient. Wild antagonism

on the part of a patient to an auditor is usually traced to

this. Some patients have such a hatred of men that only

women can work them, some have such a hatred of

women that only men can work them. But even when

L. RON HUBBARD

there is a wild antipathy, if there exists no other auditor

or person who can be trained quickly as one, therapy

can proceed anyway and it will accomplish results.

Rebalancing a Case

Any case dropped out of therapy will rebalance

itself in a few weeks, which is to say, it will settle to a

new high for the individual. Unless drug hypnotism or

some other Dianetically illegal method is used, all

cases will so rebalance, much benefited. Restimulations

can be expected to die down if they are due to therapy.

The patient will gradually find his own level in the

released state. Cases do not have to be carried forward

to Clear if auditor time is short, but it is of course better

if they are and, indeed, the majority of patients will

insist that they be.

Working Time in Therapy

The usual period of a Dianetic treatment is two

hours. In these two hours, with the usual patient, every-

thing is going to be accomplished which can be accom-

plished on that day. Working every day is not necessary,

but working every two days or every three days is

desirable. Working with periods a week apart is not optimum, for the case tends to rebalance. Further, there is a "sag" in a case, usually every fourth day when it is not worked in periods as short as three days. The fourth day "sag" is a natural mechanical thing: an engram, keyed in, when it is restimulated in life, takes about four days to cut in sharply. In therapy, three days is sometimes required to "develop" an engram. This does not mean that three days have to elapse before it is available and it does not mean that work has to stop for three days, but it does mean that engrams, not being memories and articulate as such, take three days, sometimes, to come to the surface.

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

To be more clear, an engram can be asked for on day one and will be found on day three. Meanwhile the auditor is getting other engrams. This process is so automatic that it requires no attention and will not come to notice except in cases that are being worked once a week. The engram is asked for on day one, is ready to reduce on day three, sags on day four and is rebalanced by day seven.

The three-day aspect is interesting in another sense.

This time of three days is just an observation of the

average behavior of preclears. Precision investigation

may fix it at 2.5 days or 3.6 days (it varies in individ-

uals), but three days is close enough for our purposes.

When one is doing just a release on a case, he will

sometimes find that it is necessary to take a late engram

and run it: the physical pain engram of later life (post-

birth) will appear to rise, will remain constant for three

days and then will "sag." When it sags, the auditor will

have to go back to it and run it again. Taking out these

"sags" will eventually make the later-life engram stay

in a recessed state.

Euphoria often sets in on a case when the auditor

touches an engram which contains a manic. The patient

will then go around saying how wonderful Dianetics is

because he is now in magnificent condition and is so

happy. Watch out. In three or four days this manic will

have sagged back to a depressive state. Be wary if

somebody experiences one of these skyrocket "recover-

ies" for it is about as permanent as the fire of a burning

match. It goes out and leaves very cold ashes. The

auditor, seeing this euphoria, had better enter the case

again and reduce the engram it contains more thor-

oughly or get a more basic engram.

The length of time it takes to clear a person is quite

variable. By blowing despair charges and working a few

early engrams, an auditor can get a better state of being

541

L. RON HUBBARD

in the patient than in any past therapy in twenty or thirty

hours: this is a Release. It compares to two or three

years of past therapeutic work. The length of time it

takes to get a Clear cannot be compared to any past

standard because a Clear is something no past standard

ever dreamed about.

In a sonic case, where recall is in good condition, a

Clear can be obtained in a hundred hours. In a case

which has thoroughly shut-down recalls, anything can

happen up to, in extremity, a thousand hours. Similarly,

the imaginative case which has things which never

happened may be long.

Look at it this way: We can get the results of two or

three years of psychoanalysis in a score or two of hours

of Dianetics, and what we accomplish with Dianetics

does not have to be done again, which is not true with

psychoanalysis. This is the Release. He can go about his

business in a far more competent fashion, his emotional

charges being largely freed. In the Clear we are at-

tempting and can achieve a supernormal state of mind.

Thousands and thousands and thousands of hours were

spent in the education of a man: the expenditure of two

or even ten thousand hours of work to make him rank

above what would formerly have been possible for him

is work well spent. But we do not have to spend

anything like this amount of time. People have been

cleared in anything from thirty hours, when they had

sonic and little volume, to five hundred hours when

they had shut-down recall plus imaginary recall. What

an auditor can do with his first few cases by way of time

is a question mark. He will get to the Clear eventually

and certainly in less than twelve hundred hours in a

severe case. All the time he is working toward a Clear

he is achieving a higher and higher Release which, after

at least fifty hours, rises well above the current norm

and keeps right on soaring. Improvement is such that

542

'MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY — PART TWO

from week to week the change is physiologically no-

ticeable and psychologically startling. If one thinks the

reach for Clear is a short jump and a small gain, then he

has no conception of just how high that goal is.

Most auditors will try for Release at first and are

wise if they do. When their own case is finally cleared,

only then will they suddenly realize that the state was

worth far more time than was expended to attain.

It is impossible to forecast, with a new auditor, just how much time he will consume in making errors, learning his tools, attaining skill. It is therefore impossible to estimate for him how long it will take him to gain a Clear in a patient. A well-trained auditor never takes more than eight hundred hours with the worst of cases: five hundred is high.

Data from Relatives

The auditor will always be plagued by the anxiety of the patient to get data from relatives or friends. The request for this data itself is restimulative both to the preclear and the relative. Mothers have been made very

ill by being given the restimulators of their own past

illnesses by the child who has "suddenly found out."

It is a uniform experience that the data obtained

from relatives, parents and friends by the preclear is

absolutely and utterly worthless. Here we are depend-

ing upon an aberree's memory when we have at hand,

with Dianetics, a reliable source of accurate material.

Auditors have had cases progress very smoothly and

then suddenly stop progress: on inquiry it is discovered

that the preclear has been running around to his parents

and relatives for material and they, wanting nothing

more than that he forget all about what they have done

to him, throw him red herrings'04 which have to be

104. red herrings: things intended to divert attention from the

real problem or matter at hand; misleading clues.

543

L. RON HUBBARD

carefully eliminated. These are the villains of the piece,

the people who have done the things to the preclear

which made him an aberree. If one expects accurate

data from them, one might as well expect the moon to

be green cheese.

If the auditor wants data from these people and

requests it, bypassing the preclear, he may get some-

where. But any data so received has a value which, in

intelligence, is used to label "Incompetent Source—

Improbable Material."

Warn a preclear not to bother his relatives and

parents and explain to him that he can make them ill by

asking for data, on the restimulator principle. If we

want confirmation of the data received, the only way to

get it is put the parent or relative in therapy. At such

time, we shall get the basic dramatization sources: in

the prenatal life and childhood of the parent. This is a

problem of research, not of therapy.

If the auditor has Mama available, he can run off the

child's birth and then Mama giving birth, keeping the

two apart, and get his check on the accuracy of therapy.

And there are other data that can be so compared, using

proper safeguards.

The subjective reality, not the objective reality, is

the important question to the auditor. First, last and

always, does the patient get well?

Stopping Therapy

The woman scorned has a violent rival in the pre-

clear on whom therapy has been stopped by the audi-

tor's decision.

Keeping the preclear in therapy, no matter how

seldom are the sessions, satisfies in some measure the

effort his basic personality makes to fight clear of the
aberrations.

The basic personality, the file clerk, the core of "I"

544

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY — PART Two

which wants to be in command of the organism, the
most fundamental desires of the personality, may be
considered synonymous for our purposes. There is an
enormous surge of this basic self—which is really the
individual himself—to conquer the engrams. The en-
grams, borrowing life from their host, appear as things
which do not want to be conquered. As mechanistic as

all this actually is, the auditor will often find himself wondering at the resistance the engrams can make and marveling at the efforts of the basic personality to conquer the engrams. He works with the basic personality, the individual himself, and ignores the engramic efforts to interfere. But there is a situation in which the basic personality seems to give free play to the engrams in an effort to accomplish therapy.

In work, a "patient" might have been skeptical, sarcastic or even vicious to the auditor. Or the patient may have been thought to be completely neglectful of his engram bank. Or the patient may even rage that he

hates therapy. For some of these reasons the auditor may

injudiciously decide to cease working the patient. The

patient is so informed. For a short while, perhaps, the

patient may manifest no reaction, but in a few minutes,

a few hours or a few days, basic personality, denied a

route out, may begin to use every weapon to hand to

compel the auditor to resume therapy.

Disturbed by cessation of therapy, even though he

may have insisted upon its being stopped, the ex-patient

may begin either to rapidly decline or to attack, to his

face or behind his back, the auditor and even therapy

itself. The woman scorned has rarely made such thor-

ough upsets as ex-patients who have been refused con-

tinuance of therapy. Auditors have been personally
reviled, have had other preclears searched out and
undermined by violent attacks upon therapy itself, have

545

L. RON HUBBARD

been targeted by all manner of accusations and whis-
pering campaigns and have been made most uncomfort-
able by preclears who have had further therapy denied
to them before a Release had taken place. Even solid,
legitimate Releases, whose psychosomatic ills have dis-
appeared and who should be quite cheerful, have been
observed to create turbulence when the auditor would

not take them through to Clear. Any number of mechanisms may be used by the ex-patient, as many mechanisms as men use to force other men into action. One of the mechanisms is a resumption of apathy and a "swift decline." Another is wild campaigning against therapy.

Another is personal attack of the auditor. Each has, as its provable intention, the resumption of therapy.

The mind knows how the mind works. And the mind which has tasted a way out of pain and unhappiness may be expected, if that way is blocked, to use all methods to cause therapy to be resumed.

No matter how thoroughly disagreeable the ex-patient has been, the moment the auditor starts therapy

upon him again, the attitude alters. No further destructive efforts are made against the auditor or therapy but all is almost as well as it was before the cessation was declared.

Do not suppose, however, that the preclear, if he has been neglectful, recalcitrant¹⁰⁵ or generally uncooperative before, will now embrace therapy as a chastened¹⁰⁶ patient. Far from the case, he is now at least as difficult to work as he was before plus some additional antagonism engendered¹⁰⁷ by the cessation order.

In such a case the auditor is damned if he does and

105. recalcitrant: disobedient, resisting authority or discipline.

106. chastened: restrained; subdued.

107. engendered: brought into being; brought about; caused;

produced.

546

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

double-damned if he doesn't. But there is a way out of

this. The phenomenon of "transference," where the

patient simply transfers his griefs to the practitioner, is

not the mechanism here at work; transference is a

different thing, bred of a thirst for attention and a

feeling of needed support in the world. Transference

can be expected to keep up forever if permitted; the patient of a doctor, for instance, may go on and on having illnesses just to keep the doctor around. Transference may occur in Dianetic therapy, the patient may lean on the auditor solidly, beg the auditor for advice, appear to hold out engrams in an effort to keep the auditor working hard and available and interested; all this is the result of a sympathy computation and is aberrated conduct. The clever auditor will not give advice or attempt to run anyone's life, for a person works well only as a self-determined organism. In Dianetic therapy, no matter what the attitude of the patient, no matter how great his "desires to be ill" or

his transference of burden, no matter about even his

vicious remarks to the auditor during sessions, the

condition cannot obtain forever. Basic personality is

trying to get through; "I" is trying to integrate self.

Even indifferent work will eventually release enough

charge from a case and reduce enough engrams to bring

a higher stability to the patient. Basic personality gets

stronger and stronger and therefore more self-reliant.

The introversion occasioned by continual effort to reach

the interior world of the engram bank deintensifies and

extroversion comes more and more into being as the

case advances. The way out is to work the patient

smoothly and well and one day he will be well released

or Clear. But meanwhile, if you stop therapy on anyone,

don't be surprised at anything that happens; you can

only remedy it by resuming the case.

547

L. RON HUBBARD

Auditor Evaluation

The auditor must do much evaluation to himself. He

does not evaluate or force upon his preclear any compu-

tation. If the preclear computes that this was what was

making him ill, then this is what the auditor accepts.

Explaining to the preclear what it was in the engram

which affected him so and so is not only a waste of time

but also makes the preclear confused. The reason an

auditor evaluates is to make sure he is not accepting

imagined data or incomplete data as engrams.

An incident will not lift unless the data in it is

correct: this is automatic. Change just one syllable in

the incident and it will stick. Or, if it seems to go away,

it will be back. So there is no fear that any incident

which decreases with recounting is incorrect. The data

in it must be more or less correct or it would not so

reduce. Thus the auditor who challenges incidents, data

or otherwise plays god is going to have a thoroughly

fouled-up case on his hands before he goes very far,

and he is going to have a subject who is not progress-

ing. If the subject begins to run an engram where

Mama is having intercourse with five Eskimos, let him

run it and never, never, never, never tell him that you

feel it was untrue. If you tell the subject you think he is

imagining things, you may give him a serious setback.

Tell him you think Mama had her reasons; and you have

sided with the opposition: You are not attacking the

engram, you are helping Mama attack the subject. To

criticize, correct or otherwise judge the preclear has no

slightest part in Dianetics and will do more to slow up a

case than any other single action. An auditor who

challenges the material given him may be practicing

witchcraft or Chinese acupuncture¹⁰ or shamanism or

108. acupuncture: Chinese practice of pricking the tissues of the

body with fine needles to relieve pain or as a local anesthetic.

548

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

voodoo,¹⁰⁹ but he is not practicing Dianetics. And he

will not get results. One remark to the subject such as,

"I think that you are mistaken in believing your mother

would try to abort you," or "I feel that you are imagin-

ing it," may set your preclear back fifty hours. The

auditor does not criticize or judge the preclear, nor does

he evaluate for the preclear that person's material.

Auditing is all done privately and to oneself. If the patient has just recounted his fifth prenatal train wreck, you may be sure you have run into a lie factory in some engram. The wrong way to go about correcting this is communicating it to the preclear. The right way to go about it is to find the lie factory, an engram containing such a remark as, "Tell me anything! Tell me anything. I don't care so long as you say something. But for God's sakes don't tell me the truth, I can't stand it!" Or, "You can't tell him the truth. It would hurt too much."

There are a thousand forms of lie factory. And they are not too uncommon.

Never tell the preclear why you are looking for anything. If you say you want a lie factory, the lie factory will make up a lie factory. If you say you want an emotional charge, you will inhibit any emotional charge from discharging. Simply make a quiet estimate of the situation, reduce everything which seems valid and keep on trying to get the reason why the case is not functioning as well as possible.

The test for validity of an engram is not plot. Plot is worthless. Engrams are just collections of remarks contained in periods of "unconsciousness." It makes no difference whatever whether these remarks agree with the way the auditor thinks a life should be run or the

109. voodoo: a form of religion based on belief in witchcraft and magical rites, practiced by some people in the West Indies and America.

549

L. RON HUBBARD

way a preclear should look up to his parents. Plot is something writers put in stories. Auditors have nothing to do with it. An engram is basically illogical and irrational; don't try to read rationality into one! If the parents were known to be fine, upstanding members of the community and the engrams seem to indicate that Mama nightly played the prostitute, accept the en-

grams.

Validity is very simply established. Ask these ques-

tions of the engram:

1. Does it have a somatic?

2. Does the somatic undulate, which is to say,

undergo a running change?

3. Does it reduce? (If it does not, the content the

preclear is running is wrong or the engram is

way up the chain and has others before it.)

4. Does the engramic content agree with the pa-

tient's aberration?

5. Does the somatic agree with psychosomatic ills

the patient is known to have had?

6. Does it bring relief to the patient? And this last

is more important than all the rest.

Because mental healers of the past have grandly

said, "Oh, this does not fit with my idea of how life is

run" is no reason an auditor should run Dianetics off

the rails. Mental healers of yesteryear did not get

results. Dianetics gets results: and one of the most

important reasons why Dianetics gets results is that it is

not trying to warp life to fit Dianetics but is applying

Dianetics to life. Many new and startling things will

come to the notice of the auditor. His motto, as seen on

an ancient English crest where a ninety-foot raven stood

upon a castle, could read, "Be surprised at nothing."

The Kinsey report did not begin to tell the story

you, as an auditor, will get in Dianetics. Because the

mother, by herself, is neither the face she showed Junior

550

MECHANISMS AND ASPECTS OF THERAPY—PART Two

nor the face she showed society, and because Mother

and Father, by themselves, do not conduct themselves as

they might be supposed to have done in society is

insufficient reason to force a preclear to go on being an

aberrant.

Continually in the psychiatric texts we come upon

patients who tried to tell psychiatrists about prenatal life and who were told, with droll"0 solemnity that the incidents were imaginary. Patients who had been given up on all fronts by all existing schools because their data was not tailored to fit the belief of those schools have recovered fully and achieved optimum mental condition, well above that of their former mentors, with Dianetics, partially because Dianetics does not set itself above the facts of life. He not only requires the patient to face reality by running the engrams but he also requires himself to face reality by accepting the fact that whatever the content, if it fits any of the above conditions listed, it is valid in therapy.

Auditing means to listen; it also means to compute.

Computing on a case consists of establishing where the patient departs from optimum rationality in his conduct of life but, more important, where physically painful and painful emotion engrams exist and how they can be approached and reduced.

Patients discover some astonishing things about their parents and relatives when they are in therapy. Often they discover, like one patient who had believed he had daily been beaten by his father that life was actually much better than it had seemed.

Premarital conception cases are very common, with the patient yet unborn discovering himself at his par-

ents' wedding. And these cases are often very difficult
to resolve since they contain so much secrecy in their
engrams.

110. droll: amusing in an odd or ironic way.

551

L. RON HUBBARD

The lie factory mechanisms will often try to give

Mama extra lovers and try to make Papa into a raving

beast, but a lie factory is very easy to detect: the

incidents brought forth do not run like engrams: the

second time over their content is widely changed, they

do not have somatics and their content is not aberrative.

In short, the test is whether or not one has an actual

engram, not whether or not the engram makes sense.

For Father could well have been a raving beast in a

boudoir¹" and Mother could well have had coitus with

the boarders: and Father could well have been a tame

lamb for all the reputation Mother gave him postbirth

and Mother could well have been a frigid prude despite

the wild tales the preclear might have heard. The truth

will come out in the reduction but its truth is no concern

of the auditor's beyond getting up engrams.

First, last and always, get engrams, get them as

early as possible for pain, later for emotion, get them,

erase them, discharge them, clear them! That they did

not compute as true data was what drove the aberree

into being an aberree. Leave plot to writers: our task is

therapy.

But don't "buy garbage": ask for the somatic, see if

it varies as the preclear utters the words. Test for

engrams. And devil take the plot.

111. boudoir: a woman's bedroom, dressing room or private

sitting room.

Dianetics—Past and Future

The History of Dianetics

The history of Dianetics would be the history of a voyage of discovery, of an exploration into new and nearly uncharted¹ realms, terra incognita, the human mind, a land which lies an inch behind your forehead.

The voyage has taken many years and the labor has been long, but we have charts now and can go and return at will.

Observations of savage and civilized races in this and far climes² formed the foundation for the anthropological³ research: the writings of a few men in the last four thousand years formed the scholarly pilots. The

ancient Hindu writings, the work of the early Greeks

and Romans including Lucretius, the labors of Francis

Bacon, the researches of Darwin and some of the

thoughts of Herbert Spencer compose the bulk of the

philosophic background. Inevitable absorption from our

current culture provided much unnoticed information.

The remainder has been what the navigator calls, "off

the chart."

In 1935 some of the basic research was begun: in

1938 the primary axioms were discovered and formulated.

1. uncharted: not shown or located on a map; unexplored;

unknown.

2. climes: regions or realms, especially with reference to their

climates.

3. anthropological: pertaining to anthropology, the science that

deals with the origins, physical and cultural development, biolog-

ical characteristics, and social customs and beliefs of human-

kind.

553

L. RON HUBBARD

For the next several years these axioms were tested in

the laboratory of the world. The war interrupted the

work, as wars will, being chaos, but shortly after the

cessation of actual hostilities, research was renewed.

Within a year the fundamentals of this science as they

applied to the human mind had been integrated. They

were tested on a long series of random patients and each

test further refined the work, but each application

brought specific results.

Five years after the initial resumption of labor, in

1950, the work was prepared for release, all tests

having brought forth the conclusion that Dianetics is a

science of mind, that it does disclose hitherto unknown

laws about thought and that it has worked on every type

of inorganic mental and organic psychosomatic illness.

Further, in the refinement of form attained, it was

proven possible for the work to be used easily by people

not lengthily trained.

The goal we have here reached is a science which is workable and which can be worked with success by briefly taught individuals. This goal has not hitherto been attained or even approached.

Once one has gained a foothold on unknown lands, more things become known to him and with each new datum his horizon further widens, including broader bodies of knowledge. Dianetics cures, and cures without failure. And there are further goals.

Education, medicine, politics and art and, indeed, all branches of human thought, are clarified with Dia-

netics. And even so that is not enough.

Dianetics has, as yet, a brief history: it has a strong

youth: it forecasts a better tomorrow. Before it is much

older it will have included even more within its scope.

The history of Dianetics is scarce begun.

Plan A included the perfection of the science, its

554

DIANETICS—PAST AND FUTURE

testing on patients of all kinds and, finally, the dissemi-

nation of Dianetics as pertaining to therapy. That plan

ends with the release of this book.

Plan B includes a further research into life force, an attempt at resolution of some of the ills not yet embraced such as cancer and diabetes, and the perfection of techniques discovered and their dissemination. That will end Plan B.

Plan C includes an effort to discover a higher echelon of universal origin and destination, if the problem is one of origin and destination, and the factors and forces involved to the end of securing a better understanding and useful application of the knowledge so gained, if gained, and if so gained, its dissemination.

A portion of Plan B is the organization of a foundation so that the research can be more swiftly accom-

plished.

The history of Dianetics has just begun. What other things begin with the origin of a science of mind only tomorrow can tell.

Judiciary Dianetics

This brief summary of Judiciary Dianetics is included in this present work as an aid to the auditor.

Judiciary Dianetics covers the field of adjudication⁴ within the society and amongst the societies of man. Of necessity it embraces jurisprudence⁵ and its codes and establishes precision definitions and equations for the establishment of equity. It is the science of judgment.

Jurisprudence and its adjudications are constructed

on the cornerstones of right and wrong, good and evil.

Definition of these is inherent in Dianetics: by these

4. adjudication: (law) the act of a court in making an order,

judgment or decree.

5. jurisprudence: the study of law or of a particular part of law.

555

L. RON HUBBARD

definitions a correct solution can be reached with re-

gard to any action or actions of man.

The fundamental test of rationality is the ability to

differentiate right from wrong. The fundamental factors

in establishing censure are good and evil. Without

precision definition of these four factors any structure

of law or judgment is rendered forceless and becomes

involved through its introduction of arbitrary factors

which seek to adjudicate by introducing errors to nullify

errors. Penal codes which will answer all needs can

only be written when precision, scientific definitions

exist for the four factors, and civil equity which will not

lead to injustice can only then be established and

formulated.

The problems of jurisprudence and, indeed, all

judgment, are inextricably interwoven with the problems of behavior.

An ideal society would be a society of unaberrated persons, each conducting their lives within an unaberrated culture: for either the person or the culture may be aberrated. The aberrations of the culture enter into the equations of conduct as irrational factors both from the door of education and of social customs and jurisprudence. It is not enough that an individual be himself unaberrated, for he discovers himself within the confines of a society which itself has compounded its culture into many unreasonable prejudices and customs.

The establishment of actual source for wrong and

evil is a fundamental problem of all jurisprudence. The actual source unfortunately lies in the irrationalities of those in past generations who, working with limited knowledge and oppressed by their environs, sought solutions with equations which contained false and indefinite factors. These generations, long entombed, cannot be brought to bar.⁶ We are the heirs to all the

6. brought to bar: held accountable.

ages of the past and that is good: but we are heirs as

well to all the irrationalities of the past and that is evil.

Under such circumstances and in the absence of broad

reason, adjudication by the auditor of the preclear as

relates to evil or wrong actions cannot be performed

with accuracy. The criminal and the insane, the hypo-

chondriac and the wife-beater, the merciless dictator

who seeks to shake the world and the street cleaner who

only sits and weeps are all, each one, gripped and

driven by their own sources of unreason, by the world

which has entered into the hidden depths of their pain-

wracked minds and which, in the form of social aberration,

pounds against them from without.

The auditor is interested in what has been done to,

not done by his patient; for whatever the patient has

done is forever beyond recall and was not the source but

was only the manifestation of his griefs.

Given a society of unaberrated persons, given a

culture from which has been deleted all unreason, then

and only then can man be truly responsible for his acts,

then and only then. But we must take the shadow of the

responsibility now for the fact of it. A man does not

have to surrender to his engrams.

Perhaps at some distant date only the unaberrated

person will be granted civil rights before law. Perhaps

the goal will be reached at some future time when only

the unaberrated person can attain to and benefit from citizenship. These are desirable goals and would produce a marked increase in the survival ability and happiness of man.

Even now the codes of jurisprudence can be reformed and it can be ascertained with precision whether the act which brought the individual before law was an aberrated act, or stemmed from an aberration of culture, or was an act which was committed to the detriment of another or of society. Surely the process of

punishment can be refined so as to sentence the individual not to further aberration as a prisoner or a ruined man but to a higher plane of reason through the deletion of the aberration.

The past acts of an individual who has been cleared should be stricken from his record even as his illnesses have been, for with the cause removed there can be no point in retribution unless society itself is so aberrated that it desires to operate on sadistic principles.* There is more than idealism here, for it can be shown that aberration in individuals and the society rises in progressive ratio to the amount of punishment employed.

Efforts to resolve problems of jurisprudence which

yet did not embrace precision definitions for right and

wrong, good and evil, had recourse only to a principle

known in Dianetics as the introduction of an arbitrary.

Broad, unchangeable rules were thrust into problems in

an effort to resolve them and yet each new rule further

drove reason aside so that more rules were needed. An

arbitrary structure is one in which one error has been

observed and an effort has been made to correct it by

introducing another error. In progressive complexity,

new errors must be introduced to nullify the evil effects

of old errors. A culture, to say nothing of jurispru-

dence, grows complex and unwieldy in progressive ratio

to the number of new evils it must introduce in an effort

to nullify old evils. At last there can be no reason; there
can be but force and where there lives no reason and yet
lives force, there is naught but the maelstrom of an
insane rage. Where there dwells an insane rage, still

* Our present society is not aberrated in this respect: the
insane man is not held guilty or responsible for his acts.

Lacking definition of a precise scientific nature for insanity
and failing to recognize that all irrational acts are temporary
insanity, -the society has not been able to carry out its
fundamental intention. —LRH

unresolved, there must at length come apathy; and

apathy, dwindling down, inevitably reaches death.

We are here at a bridge between one state of man

and a next. We are above the chasm which divides a

lower from a higher plateau and this chasm marks an

artificial evolutionary step in the progress of man.

The auditor is at that bridge; when cleared he will be

at its higher end. He will watch much traffic cross. He

may see customs, laws, organizations and societies

attempt to avoid the bridge but, being swept along,

tumble into a nothingness below.

In his attitude toward his precursors or toward society

at large, he can gain nothing by reprimanding and
judging past error in the light of current sentience. Not
only can he gain nothing but he can inhibit progress. It
is a remorseless fact that the attack upon unreason has
begun. Attack unreason, not the society or the man.

Dianetics and War

The social organisms which we call states and na-
tions behave and react in every respect as though they
were individual organisms. The culture has its analyti-
cal mind, the combined sentience of its citizens in
general and its artists, scientists and statesmen in par-
ticular. The social standard memory bank is the data

accumulated along the generations. And the social organism has as well its reactive mind as represented by the prejudices and irrationalities of the entire group.

This reactive mind is served by an engram bank wherein lie past painful experiences and which dictates reactive action on certain subjects whenever those subjects are restimulated in the society. This, all too briefly, is an analogy used in Political Dianetics.

The social organism behaves in a manner which can be graphed on the Tone Scale; it has its survival dynamic and its suppressors, its internal suppression

due to engrams and its urge toward an infinity of optimum duration. Criminals, traitors and zealots constitute, for instance, internal engrams which suppress the survival potential on the Tone Scale.

There is a precision definition for each social level as related to the Tone Scale. A free society working in complete cooperation toward common goals would be a tone 4 society. A society hindered by arbitrary restrictions and oppressive laws would be a tone 2 society. A society managed and dictated to by the whims of one man or a few men would be a tone 1 society. A society

governed by the mystery and superstition of some mys-

tic body would be a tone 0 society. The potential of

survival in each case can be seen anywhere in history.

Any golden age is a tone 4. Oppressive practices,

individual greeds and miscalculation in general reduce

the society by introducing into it dissatisfied elements.

To cope with these, in the past, further oppression has

been used. The survival of the society reduced further.

With more oppression came new engrams and so down

the Tone Scale slipped the chances of long survival.

And with this reduction of potential came pain as the

lower zones were entered.

Societies rise and fall on the Tone Scale. But there is

a danger point below which a society cannot go without

reacting as would an individual so suppressed: the

society reaches a break point and goes mad. This point

is around 2.0.

The quarrel of society with society, nation with

nation, has many causes, all of them more or less

irrational. There have been many times when one soci-

ety was forced to crush another less sentient than itself.

But with each clash, new engrams were born both in the

international scene and within the societies themselves.

War is an international tone 1. It is no more rational

than any individual who, reaching a general and

DIANETICS — PAST AND FUTURE

chronic tone 1, is placed in an institution or, temporarily tone 1, commits some crime and is thereafter imprisoned. But there is no gaoler⁷ to societies; there is at this time only death and so they die and so they have died.

Before this time no tool could be employed by a nation but force when faced with another nation gone mad. By contagion of aberration, both nations then went mad. No nation ever fully won a war. No nation ever finally triumphed by force of arms. No nation ever averted war by posing threat or exhibiting defense.

Man is now faced, by these pyramiding⁸ hatreds,
with weapons so powerful that man himself may vanish
from the Earth. There is no problem in the control of
these weapons. They explode when and where man
tells them to explode. The problem is in the control of
man.

There is no national problem in the world today
which cannot be resolved by reason alone. All factors
inhibiting a solution of the problem of war and weapons
are arbitrary factors and have no more validity than the
justified explanations of a thief or murderer.

The farmer of Iowa⁹ has no quarrel with the store-

keeper of Stalingrad.¹⁰ Those who say such quarrels

exist lie.

There are no international concerns which cannot be

resolved by peaceable means, not in the terms of supra-

national" government, but in the terms of reason.

7. gaoler: jailer.

8. pyramiding: increasing rapidly and on a widening base.

9. Iowa: a north central state of the US; its chief products are

agricultural.

10. Stalingrad: former name of Volgograd, a city on the Volga

River in the Soviet Union.

11. supranational: of, for, involving or over all or a number of

nations.

561

L. RON HUBBARD

*• Jockeying¹² with indefinable ideologies,³ playing
with mass ignorance, nonexistent entities like night-
mares march the world in the form of the gods of Ism.⁴

No self-interest can be so great as to demand the
slaughter of mankind. He who would demand it, he
who would not by every rational means avert it, is
insane. There is no justification for war.

Behind the curtains of language and different cus-
toms, populaces are taught to recognize no kinship with

other populaces. Taught by their own terrors and governed by their own aberrations, leaders hold up other isms as detestable things.

There is no perfect political state on Earth today, there is not even a good definition of a perfect political creed. States are the victims of internal and external aberrations.

' Dianetics addresses war because there is in fact a race between the science of mind and the atom bomb.

There may be no future generation to know which won.

Rationality alone can guide man past these threats to his extinction.

Insanity does not exist without a confusion of defi-

nitions and purpose. The solution to the international

problem does not lie in the regulation or curtailment of

weapons nor yet in the restraints of men. It lies in the

definition of political theory and policy in such terms

, that there can be no mistaking the clear processes; it

lies in the establishment of rational goals toward which

12. jockeying: playing tricks with; managing or manipulating in

a tricky way.

13. ideologies: systematic schemes of ideas, usually relating to

politics or society or to the conduct of a class or group, and

regarded as justifying actions, especially those that are held

implicitly or adopted as a whole and maintained regardless of the
course of events.

14. Ism: a doctrine, theory, system, etc., especially one whose
name ends in -ism.

562

DIANETICS—PAST AND FUTURE

societies can collectively and individually work; and it
lies in an intersocial competition of gains so great that
none become dispensable to any other.

Man's primary fight is not with man—that is insan-
ity. Man's primary fight is with those elements which
oppress him as a species and bar his thrust toward high

goals. Man's fight is with the elements, with space and
time, and with species which are destructive to him. He
has hardly begun his conquest. He is just now armed
with tools enough and science enough to make good his
conquest of the universe. He has no time to bicker and
indulge in tantrums and yah-yah¹⁵ across back fences
about atom bombs.

The harnessing of atomic power puts other worlds
within his reach. Why haggle for this one? The late
discoveries in the field of photosynthesis bid fair¹⁶ to
feed and clothe him royally even though he number a
thousand times his present two billions on Earth. For
what reason can he quarrel? Why?

Two rational men will enter into a contest of gain
and worth and production. Are these mighty nations,
these powerful, fearful, thundering "giants," actually
small and poorly educated, barely sane little boys
screaming insults at each other over the possession of a
dead cat? What of armies? Armies die. If might makes
right, then Rome still rules the world. Who fears now
this archaeological" curiosity that was Rome?

There is a higher goal, a better goal, a more glori-
ous victory than gutted towns and radiation-burned
dead. There is freedom and happiness and plenty and a
whole universe to be won.

15. yah-yah: slang term for bickering.

16. bid fair: seem likely (to be or do something).

17. archaeological: of archaeology, the scientific study of the life

and culture of ancient peoples, as by digging up the remains of

ancient cities, etc.

563

L. RON HUBBARD

He who would not see it is far from worthy to rule.

He who would indulge his hates is too insane to advise.

How much can man conquer? He loses if he con-

quers man. He wins if he conquers his own fears and

conquers then the stars.

Attack the natural enemies of man, attack them

well, and war of man with man cannot thereafter be a

problem. This is rationality.

Dianetics is not interested in saving the world, it is

interested only in preventing the world from being

saved. One more time would be fatal! Dianetics is not

against fighting; it defines what may be fought. Those

things include the sources of man's travail within the

individual, within the society and the enemies of all

mankind. Man, bewildered, has not known his ene-

mies. They are visible now; attack!

The Future of Therapy

In twenty or a hundred years the therapeutic technique which is offered in this volume will appear to be obsolete. Should this not prove to be the case, then the author's faith in the inventiveness of his fellow man will not have been justified. We have here something which has not before existed, an invariably working science of mind. The application methods cannot but be refined.

All sciences begin with the discovery of basic axioms. They progress as new data are discovered and as the scope of the science is widened. Various tools and techniques rise up continually, improved and re-improved. The basic axioms, the initial discoveries of

Dianetics, are such solid scientific truths that they will be altered but little. The data discovered by those axioms is already large and daily expanding. The techniques of using that data as represented in this volume will, before much more time elapses, be modified and improved. Their virtue just now is that these techniques

564

DIANETICS — PAST AND FUTURE

work and produce good, solid, scientific results.

Once upon a time somebody set up the basic principles which had to do with fire. There had not been controlled fire before. Cooking, heating and finally

metallurgy¹⁸ made a new culture. The basic principles of fire are not much altered. The techniques employed in handling fire soon after it was discovered by man would be considered somewhat obsolete to us now. We have matches and lighters and fuels today, but just after fire was understood and began to be used, the bow-drill fire-maker¹⁹ and flint²⁰ and steel would have been considered marvelous inventions: even so, man was already using fire and had been using it with profit for some time both as a weapon and as a household utility when the bow-drill and flint and steel were discovered or invented.

In the case of the wheel, basic principles were laid down which have not altered to this day. The first workable wheel must have been rather unwieldy and unfair. But compared to no wheel it was a miracle.

Thus with Dianetic therapy. The basic principles, axioms and general discoveries of Dianetic therapy; forms of organization not before possessed by man. Not unlike the first fires and the first wheels, the therapy technique can be enormously improved. It works now; it can be used now with safety and effectiveness.

There are two definite drawbacks to this present

18. metallurgy: the scientific study of the properties of metals

and alloys, the art of working metals or of extracting them from

their ores.

19. bow-drill fire-maker: an ancient device for making fire by

friction. It consisted of a stick resting in a hollow in a piece of

wood which was given a sawlike motion by a loop in a little bow,

producing glowing wood dust.

20. flint: a fine-grained, very hard rock, usually gray, that

produces sparks when struck with steel, and that breaks into

pieces with sharp cutting edges.

565

L. RON HUBBARD

technique. It demands more skill of the auditor than

should be necessary and it is not as swift as it could be.

The auditor should not be required to do any computing

whatever and, indeed, a therapy technique could be

envisioned where no auditor at all was necessary, for he

is vital at the present time. A complete Clear should

take but a handful of hours. The problems here are

those of improvement in terms of less skill required and

less work.

One might say that it is an imposition²¹ upon a

mathematician and philosopher to require him to re-

solve all the problems himself and to put forth all

improvements. Indeed, it is an imposition that he be

required to develop any technique of application at all,

for there should be in any society an apportionment of
labor.

When the basic axioms and computations were finished, it was impossible to release them for there were none to whom such research could be released for application. Thus the work had to be carried out to its furthest extent of not only experimentation but the development and proof of the techniques of application.

One might here use an analogy of bridge engineering. Let us suppose that two plateaus exist, one higher than the other, with a canyon between them. An engineer sees that if the canyon could be crossed by traffic,

| the hitherto unused higher plateau, being much more
it fertile and pleasant, would become the scene of a new
i culture. He sets himself the task of building a bridge. It
| had been supposed that no bridge could be built across
is the canyon and indeed, since those on the lower plateau
| could not see the higher level, the existence of the
If higher plateau itself was denied. The engineer, by evolv-
i ing new principles of bridge building and discovering

;J 21. imposition: a burden imposed unfairly.

I 566

new significance in his materials, manages to throw a
bridge across the canyon. He himself crosses and he
inspects the plateau carefully; others cross over his
bridge and examine the new terrain with delight. Still
more and more cross the bridge. The bridge is solid
and, if not wide, can yet safely be negotiated. It has not
been built for heavy, fast traffic. But it contains the
basic principles and axioms by which the canyon can be
spanned again and again. Many people begin to ap-
proach the canyon and look up.

What sort of an opinion would you have of the
society on the lower plateau if they but moaned and
wept and argued and gave no hand at all in the matter of

widening the bridge or making new bridges?

In this handbook we have the basic axioms and a
therapy which works.

For God's sake, get busy and build a better bridge!

567

APPENDIX

Dianetics: The Bridge

to Clear

It all began with one man and his book—one which,
year after year, continues to prove its extraordinary
importance to man and society.

In the opening pages of Dianetics, L. Ron Hubbard

unveiled his breakthroughs, not with superfluous fan-

fare, but with this clear and simple challenge to his

reader: "You are beginning an adventure. Treat it as an

adventure. And may you never be the same again."

He closed, not with a customary "The End," but by

issuing yet another challenge: to "get busy," apply the

basic axioms of Dianetics by which the canyon of human

travail can be spanned, "and build a better bridge!"

Both in terms of practicality and popularity, no other

book has created the impact Dianetics has.

Forty-plus years and more than fifteen million copies

sold since its release in May of 1950, Dianetics' enor-

mous and ever-growing readership continues to astonish

even the most unflappable of publishing industry ob-

servers and the most skeptical of book critics. It is the

only self-improvement book in publishing history to

consistently reign at the top of bestseller lists interna-

tionally almost a half-century after its initial publica-

tion. (Even the feat of rocketing to the top of bestseller

lists when it was first released is eclipsed by the amaz-

ing fact that Dianetics today sells more copies in one

month than it did in all of 1950.)

But to millions of readers whose lives have been im-

proved through the practical wisdom embodied in this

book, there could be no lesser course for Mr. Hubbard's

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

work. Throughout the world people are achieving greater

self-respect and a more positive attitude by reading

Dianetics and applying its techniques. They are daily

gaining the self-esteem, confidence, trust and belief in

themselves that comes with moving toward the state of

Clear.

Through Dianetics auditing, the goal of Clear has

been achieved by tens of thousands of people. You will

find Clears literally everywhere these days. They are

teachers, businessmen, doctors, housewives, attorneys,

engineers, nurses, construction workers, celebrities, mili-

tary personnel, marketing and administration person-

nel, secretaries, athletes, civil servants, etc. Clearing

knows no social caste, income class, race, color or

creed.

Dianetics' unparalleled emergence began a year be-

fore the book's release with Mr. Hubbard's manuscript,

"The Original Thesis" (today entitled The Dynamics of

Life). This was a compilation of his sixteen-year study

of the human condition. He gave a few copies to friends,

and they promptly made duplicates and sent it to their

friends who, in turn, copied it and sent it to others.

Passed hand to hand, the basic breakthroughs of Dia-

netics quickly became known the world over. Word

began to spread: the source of human aberration had

been discovered and a technology of the mind that

worked had been developed.

The first published article on Dianetics, entitled

"Terra Incognita: The Human Mind," appeared in the

Winter/Spring 1949-1950 issue of the Explorers Club

Journal. While also writing essays on Dianetics for

other publications, Mr. Hubbard soon found his time

consumed with letters to answer and a steadily increas-

ing flow of requests for more information flooding his

office and home.

DIANETICS: THE BRIDGE TO CLEAR

The response validated what he had long recognized:

for eons man has possessed the most sophisticated computer in existence—the human mind—yet man's concept of it was barbaric. Never before had a popular text on the mind been written for the people. No owner's manual existed to unleash the mind's true power and capability.

Thus his decision: he would write, for broad public consumption, a book detailing his discoveries and the technology he had developed. With the release of his

book, Dianetics, every man and woman would soon

have such an owner's manual for their personal use.

In January 1950, renowned syndicated columnist

Walter Winchell heralded what was to become known

simply as "The Book": "There is something new coming

up in April called Dianetics," he wrote. "A new science

which works with the invariability of physical science in

the field of the human mind. From all indications, it will

prove to be as revolutionary for humanity as the first

cave man's discovery and utilization of fire."

Winchell's prescience was undeniable. The world's

response to the May 9 Dianetics release was both instan-

taneous and overwhelming. Overnight the book became

a nationwide bestseller, with twenty-five thousand letters and telegrams of congratulations pouring in to the publisher. The book hit the New York Times bestseller list where it remained week after week, month after month.

By late fall of 1950, there were 750 groups across the country applying Dianetics techniques, while newspaper headlines proclaimed, "Dianetics Taking US by Storm," and "Fastest Growing Movement in America."

Then, more increasingly came headlines reporting, "Husbands Are Auditing Their Wives; Neighbors Form Discussion Groups" and "Dianetics Fans Deluge Schools," the latter referring to the influx of Dianetics

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

readers into Elizabeth, New Jersey, site of the first

Hubbard Dianetics Research Foundation.

An early Dianeticist who was among the first wave

into Elizabeth, recounts her first experiences with Dia-

netics, starting in May 1950:

"I read all of Dianetics and insisted that my friends

read it also. A friend of mine audited me literally out of

the book.

"The first session was fantastic. For the first time in

my life I became aware of the fact that I was and could

become truly free of this mess of pain and confusion and

really live 100 percent. As a side effect I got rid of

migraine headaches which had plagued me and effec-

tively ruined my life."

Dianetics' enthusiastic following clamored for coast-

to-coast author appearances. Most of Dianetics' first

year saw Mr. Hubbard lecturing, demonstrating Dia-

netics auditing and assisting in the servicing of the tens

of thousands of enthusiasts beating a path to Foundation

doors nationwide.

By year's end, more than 150,000 copies of "The

Book" had been sold and Dianetics clubs had been

established throughout the US, in Canada, Finland,

Sweden, England, Germany, Switzerland, South Africa,

Australia, Guatemala and Peru.

By its first anniversary in May of 1951, Dianetics

was in its seventh printing. Writing for America's Better

Homes & Gardens magazine, Professor Frederick L.

Schumann reported "the Hubbard book was a national

sensation," adding detailed personal testimony to the

"flourishing co-auditor's course" that he observed first-

hand at the Elizabeth Foundation.

Through the 1960s, Dianetics gained a foothold in

all English-speaking countries. More than 850,000

hardback copies had been sold by the time the first

Dianetics paperback edition was printed in 1968. And,

572

DIANETICS: THE BRIDGE TO CLEAR

with the paperback's printing and worldwide distribution came a period of tremendous growth for Dianetics.

By 1977, ten years after the release of the Dianetics paperback, sales had soared to 2.6 million copies. In the meantime, both the number of Dianetics organizations (328) and number of countries in which organizations were delivering Dianetics auditing (55) had trebled.

And, in the late 70s, Mr. Hubbard completed important technical refinements of Dianetics auditing procedure, ad-

vancing a powerful series of techniques and procedures called New Era Dianetics. Based on thirty years of experience and application with the subject, the breakthroughs of New Era Dianetics resulted in a vast increase in the speed and accuracy of Dianetics auditing.

In the 80s, "Dianetics" became a household word due to its sheer popularity and miracle results. The book shot back onto the bestseller lists internationally, where it remains today. On September 7, 1986, it made publishing history by returning to the New York Times bestseller list—36 years after the first copy was published. Its stunning rise to number one on the New York

Times list was accomplished in March of 1987. The

book's one-hundred-week stay on the Publisher's

Weekly bestseller list earned for Dianetics and its

author the magazine's prestigious Century Award.

By the end of 1987, purchases of Dianetics passed

the ten million mark, quadrupling 1977's total.

Through the years, 22 foreign-language editions of

Dianetics have been published. Each has had their own

stream of successes to parallel—and contribute to—the

book's overwhelming public popularity.

In 1988, for instance, the Chinese edition of Dia-

netics received a welcome reminiscent of the book's

1950s reception in the West. In the first three weeks on

China's bookstands, more than 120,000 copies of Dia-

netics were sold. By the fourth month, more than a

573

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

quarter-million copies were bought. Three printings of

the book were needed before the year was out.

As the 90s unfold, more than 1,100 organizations

exist to provide Dianetics service to an ever-growing

number of people. Dianetics, meanwhile, remains sol-

idly atop bestseller lists worldwide.

More countries continue to usher in a new era with

Dianetics. Released in Japan in June 1991, Dianetics

enjoyed remarkable success within weeks. It immediately went to number one for new releases on the U.S. bestseller list of the Economic Journal, Japan's leading business newspaper. Hungary followed suit by selling out all 30,000 of its first-run books.

Today, Dianetics is in every library in the US. The US Library of Congress prides itself in maintaining the full collection of L. Ron Hubbard's works. Leading universities and intellectual institutions proudly collect both his fiction and nonfiction. The distinguished Huntington Library houses Dianetics and other works by Mr. Hubbard along with the Gutenberg Bible and the Canterbury Tales.

Dianetics is required reading at a major US univer-

sity's religious studies class and has been among the

most requested L. Ron Hubbard works by more than 160

university professors. In 1992, Mr. Hubbard was post-

humously presented an Honorary Doctorate in Literature

from Moscow State University, where an entire hall of

the university was dedicated to him. There, students

from around the world study Dianetics in all its transla-

tions, along with other L. Ron Hubbard works.

Press reports tell of Dianetics being recommended in

reader surveys as a book that the US president and first

lady should read, of its being spotted in the office of a

championship-winning major league baseball manager, of

its having saved the careers of actors, artists, musicians.

The list goes on—and grows daily.

574

DIANETICS: THE BRIDGE TO CLEAR

But, looking through Dianetics' indomitable publishing milestones and grass-roots popularity to the real heart of the subject, one must consider what it takes to build and maintain such enduring momentum. What is it about Dianetics that has created such dedicated excitement?

A simple answer like, "Read the book and you'll understand," would draw little argument from a fellow reader. But it takes more than the flicker of a reader's

recognition of truth to generate the sustained ardor the

Dianetics adventure has won over the decades. It takes

results that prove, over and over again, the worth of

both message and methodology.

Roomfuls of personal testimonials exist in any or-

ganization where Dianetics auditing has been delivered

over the years. Each of these success stories speaks of

an undeniable change for the better in one's life. Some

accounts dramatically detail lifesaving experiences that

would never have occurred without the application of

Dianetics technology.

Here is just one example:

"I was very ill for months in the hospital. I was

under intensive care for weeks with a bleeding ulcer
infection and kidney failure. My heart stopped three
times and I died three times. I also was unconscious for
over a week, and I basically did not want to live. The
doctors were going to give up on me and stop the
treatment. The nurses did not expect me to live.

"My wife had a very hard time with it and she
couldn't even call to see how I was doing; she had to
have someone else call for her. She then received some
Dianetics auditing and came to grips with it, at which
point she was able to come into my room in the hospital
and give me some auditing. She came in every day.

"I soon started becoming more aware of my environ-

ment and had a determinism to survive. It made life bright

enough to live. Many other people helped me get through

575

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

it by using L. Ron Hubbard's technology. I am now re-

covered and would not have lived if it weren't for the tech-

nology by L. Ron Hubbard that helped us get through it."

Here is another example from a Dianetics auditor

who was able to salvage a friend's marriage:

"I consider my ability to help others even more

important than the changes Dianetics has made in my

own life. What I can confront and handle in a few

minutes would put any psychiatrist to utter shame. I will

briefly describe for you an example.

"I have a friend whose marriage had gone on the

rocks. He was cheating on his wife, drinking excessively,

taking drugs and, as you may guess, had become very

abusive of her.

"She, on the other hand, spent tons of money, worked

for one of the top fabric designers in New York and led a

very unhappy life.

"She decided at one point a few years ago that she

wanted to handle her side of things and came to Los

Angeles to receive auditing. She was very uncertain,

though, about how her husband would respond to this,

and whether he would be able to do the same.

"I called him on the phone as she was flying back to

New York.

"The training I have, although easily learned and in

far less time than that of any psychiatrist, was tested

thoroughly as he screamed at me across the miles. But,

he told me things he never told anyone else; and he flew

immediately to Los Angeles to handle his life.

"And, in one forty-five-minute session, he handled

the reason he had become an alcoholic.

"Two people lead a happier life now—and those who

live around them. I find no greater pleasure than to help

others. It is a pleasure present in all of us who help

others with the brilliant discoveries of the mind made by

L. Ron Hubbard."

576

DIANETICS: THE BRIDGE TO CLEAR

Such stories leave long-lasting impressions on both the individuals involved and their family, friends and associates who directly observe its often dramatic effects.

Dianetics not only affects individuals, but society itself. Through hands-on application and direct observation, it has increasingly become an accepted methodol-

ogy in many spheres of activity. Years after a health

professional's discovery of a workable Dianetics axiom,

it will become noticed by media and tabbed a "new"

breakthrough.

One such example is the concept of prenatal influ-

ences, so integral to the unburdening of a case in

Dianetics auditing. L. Ron Hubbard made key discover-

ies in Dianetics concerning prenatal awareness that are

proven and workable as evidenced by professional opin-

ions on the subject and testimonies of miracle results

through Dianetics auditing.

But, before Dianetics, it was unheard of to attribute

certain illnesses to prenatal trauma. As an immediate result of the book, however, more than forty articles appeared in the early 50s supporting the fact of prenatal experience influencing an individual after birth. Doctors today commonly accept the fact that a variety of conditions such as psychosomatic ills, alcohol abuse and drug addiction influence the health and well-being of the unborn.

Another example: the ill effects of utterances made near an unconscious person. In hospitals throughout the world, Mr. Hubbard's guidelines regarding silence during operations have been adopted. A British journal reports that three scientists from leading universities

have found that anesthetized persons can be affected by

what they hear while "under."

To prevent shocks to a child that could leave permanent damage, Mr. Hubbard in Dianetics advised silence

577

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

in the delivery room and, in subsequent studies, the

laying of the newborn on the mother's abdomen before

the cord is cut.

One of the world's leading obstetricians, Frederick

Leboyer, wrote in 1974, "As for hearing, nothing could be

simpler: be silent . . . This apprenticeship of silence—

so indispensable for mothers—is just as important for those who perform the delivery: the obstetricians, the attendants."

In a natural birth, Leboyer advised, "The baby emerges . . . and we settle the child immediately on its mother's stomach. What better place could there be? . . . To sever the umbilicus when the child has scarcely left the mother's womb is an act of cruelty whose ill effects are immeasurable."

When a Dianeticist asked Leboyer for a quote to appear in a book she was writing on pregnancy and childbirth, he responded, "I shall feel most honored being quoted together with Ron Hubbard, whose work I

greatly admire."

With Dianetics, Mr. Hubbard has resolved problems of the human mind on both an individual and societal level. Yet still unanswered by Dianetics were many questions that people had been asking about the nature of man since the beginning of recorded history.

Particularly with respect to the mind's mental image pictures, the question was posed: Who was looking at these mental image pictures and being adversely affected by them?

Mr. Hubbard set out to answer this question and, in 1951, demonstrated that man was neither his body nor

his mind, but a spiritual being. One doesn't have a soul

or spirit, he concluded. One is a spirit.

This life force is the source of all that is good,

decent, creative and beautiful in the world: the individ-

ual being himself. Although he has a mind and a body,

he is himself a spiritual being.

578

DIANETICS: THE BRIDGE TO CLEAR

These breakthroughs form the basis of the religious

philosophy of Scientology, of which the Dianetics tech-

nology is a vital and basic branch. Contained within

Dianetics and Scientology is an exact route to higher

levels of ability. Through study of materials on all aspects of life itself and through auditing addressing the mind and the spirit, greater states of existence are possible.

The development and codification of both Dianetics and Scientology can now be found in scores of books, more than fifteen thousand pages of technical writings and more than six thousand taped lectures—all by Mr.

Hubbard. This extraordinary collection of materials is available to anyone in the world through their local

Hubbard Dianetics Foundation or Scientology church or mission.

Standard delivery of Mr. Hubbard's precision technology is the hallmark of these Dianetics and Scientol-

ogy groups. These organizations help each student to fully understand and apply the principles found in Dianetics and subsequent materials. They provide audio and video tapes of Mr. Hubbard's lectures and auditing demonstrations. They train today's auditors to professional standards and they deliver Dianetics auditing daily. These organizations are where Clears are made.

Today the door is wide open to Clear, no matter how remote one may seem from the nearest Hubbard Dianetics Foundation. In the US, one call to the toll-free Dianetics information line (see listing in the pages to follow) can guide you to your next step.

In a troubled world searching for answers, Dianetics

provides them—and more. It spells hope for man and a

technology for a better world.

By reading Dianetics, you have walked the first step

to Clear. By all means, take your next.

"And may you never be the same again."

579

Glossary

Aberration: a departure from rational thought or behavior. From the Latin, *aberrare*, to wander from; Latin, *ab*, away, *errare*, to wander. It means basically to err, to make mistakes, or more specifically to have fixed ideas which are not true. The word is also used in its scientific sense. It means departure from a straight line. If a line should go from A to B, then if it is "aberrated" it would go from A to some other point, to some other point, to some other point, to some other point, to some other point and finally arrive at B. Taken in its scientific sense, it would also mean the lack of straightness or to see crookedly as, in example, a man sees a horse but thinks he sees an elephant. Aberrated conduct would be wrong conduct, or conduct not supported by reason. When a person has engrains, these tend to deflect what would be his normal ability to perceive truth and bring about an aberrated view of situations which then would cause an aberrated reaction to them. Aberration is opposed to sanity, which would be its opposite. This is the most fundamental level of aberration: "If the food smells good, go away from it!" This is directly against the survival intention of the organism.

aberree: aberrated person.

aborigine: any of the first or earliest known inhabitants of a region; native.

ahreact: (psychoanalysis) release (repressed emotions) by acting out, such as in words, action or the imagination, the situation causing the conflict.

Achilles' heel: a portion, spot, area or the like, that is especially or solely vulnerable. In Greek mythology, Achilles was an illustrious Greek warrior. He had been dipped in the river Styx (one of the mythological rivers of hell) by his mother, which rendered him invulnerable except in the heel by which she held him. He was fatally wounded by an arrow in that heel.

599

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

ACTH: a hormone that was sometimes used to combat symptoms of rheumatoid arthritis; it stimulates the production of other hormones in the body.

acupuncture: Chinese practice of pricking the tissues of the body with fine needles to relieve pain or as a local anesthetic.

acute: brief and severe.

ad absurdum: to the point of ridiculousness.

adjudication: (law) the act of a court in making an order, judgment or decree.

adrenaline: a hormone secreted by the adrenal gland, that stimulates the heart, increases muscular strength, etc.

Aesculapian: of Aesculapius, the god of medicine and healing in ancient Greek and Roman mythology.

affinities: the attractions which exist between two human beings, or between human beings and other life organisms.

affront: open insult.

aggregations: groups or masses of distinct things or individuals.

Alexander: Alexander III, known as Alexander the Great: (356-323 B.C.) king of Macedonia (ancient kingdom located in what is now Greece and Yugoslavia).

algae: a group of plants, either one-celled or many-celled, often growing in colonies. Algae contain chlorophyll (the green coloring matter of plants) and other pigments, but have no true root, stem or leaf. They are found in water or damp places and include seaweed, pond scum, etc.

alloy: to weaken or spoil by adding something that reduces value or pleasure.

ally: in Dianetics it basically means someone who protects a person who is in a weak state and becomes a very strong influence over the person. The weaker person, such as a child, even partakes the characteristics of the ally so that one may find that a person who has, for instance, a bad leg, has it because a protector or ally in his youth had a bad leg. The word is from French and Latin and means to bind together.

ally computation: little more than a mere idiot calculation that anyone who is a friend can be kept a friend only by approximating the conditions wherein the friendship was realized. It is a computation on the basis that one can only be safe in the vicinity of certain people and that one can only be in the vicinity of certain people by being sick or crazy or poor and generally disabled.

altitude: a difference in level of prestige—one on a higher altitude carries conviction to one on a lower altitude merely because of altitude. The auditor may find himself unable to gain sufficient altitude with some patients to work them smoothly and he may have so much altitude with others that they believe everything he says. When he has too little altitude, he is not believed; when he has too much, he is believed too well.

altruistic: having unselfish concern for the welfare of others.

ambivalent: having two valences (ambi- is Latin for "both"). See also valence in this glossary.

ambi version: a condition or character trait that includes elements of both introversion and extroversion.

ammonium chloride: a white, crystalline compound produced by the reaction of ammonia with hydrochloric acid: it is used in medicine, and also in dry cells, dyes, etc.

amniotic fluid: the fluid surrounding the embryo or fetus.

amniotic sac: the membrane sac enclosing the developing fetus and amniotic fluid.

amour: (French) love.

amulet: something worn on the body because of its supposed magic power to protect against injury or evil; a charm.

analogue: thing or part that is similar or comparable in certain respects.

analogy: explanation of something by comparing it point by point with something similar.

analytical mind: the conscious, aware mind which thinks, observes data, remembers it and resolves problems. It would be essentially the conscious mind as opposed to the unconscious mind. In Dianetics the analytical mind is the one which is alert and aware and the reactive mind simply reacts without analysis. Also called the analyzer.

analyzer: see analytical mind

anemia: a deficiency in the oxygen-carrying material of the blood resulting in a paleness, generalized weakness, etc.

anthropological: pertaining to anthropology, the science that deals with the origins, physical and cultural development, biological characteristics, and social customs and beliefs of humankind.

antipathy: a strong or deep-rooted dislike.

apprised: given notice; informed; advised.

apropos of: with reference to; in respect or regard to.

601

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

arbitrary: based on one's preference, notion, whim, etc.; capricious.

archaeological: of archaeology, the scientific study of the life and culture of ancient peoples, as by digging up the remains of ancient cities, etc.

Aristotelian logic: Aristotle's method of logic, characterized by the syllogism, an argument or form of reasoning in which two statements or premises are made and a logical conclusion is drawn from them. Example: All mammals are warmblooded (major premise); whales are mammals (minor premise); therefore, whales are warmblooded (conclusion).

Aristotle: (384-322 B.C.) Greek philosopher noted for his works on logic, ethics, politics, etc.

arthritis: a condition causing inflammation, pain and stiffness in the joints.

articulate: well formulated; clearly presented.

asthma: a generally chronic disorder characterized by wheezing, coughing, difficulty in breathing and a suffocating feeling.

astigmatism: a defect in an eye or lens preventing proper focusing.

astral self: also called astral body: a second body, per some forms of philosophical or religious thought, said to belong to each individual, formed of a substance which is above or beyond perception by the senses and which pervades all space. Per these beliefs, the astral body accompanies the individual through life, is able to leave the human body at will, and survives the individual after death. Astral bodies are actually just somebody's delusion. They are usually mock-ups which the mystic then tries to believe real. He sees the astral body as something else and then seeks to inhabit it in the most common practices of "astral walking."

asylums: institutions for the maintenance and care of the mentally ill, orphans or other persons requiring specialized assistance.

atheist: a person who denies or disbelieves the existence of a supreme being or beings.

atom bomb: a bomb that uses the energy from the splitting of atoms to cause an explosion of tremendous force, accompanied by a blinding light.

attention units: quantity of awareness. Any organism is aware

602

GLOSSARY

to some degree. A rational or relatively rational organism is aware of being aware. Attention units could be said to exist in the mind in varying quantity from person to person.

attenuated: weakened or reduced in force, intensity, effect, quantity or value.

attrition: a wearing down or weakening of resistance, especially as a result of continuous pressure or harassment.

auditing: the application of Dianetics processes and procedures to someone by an auditor. To audit is both to listen and to compute.

auditor: 1. a person trained and qualified in applying Dianetics processes and procedures to individuals for their betterment; called an auditor because auditor means "one who listens." 2. a person who is authorized to audit (to check or examine) accounts.

Auditor 's Code: a collection of rules (do's and don'ts) that an auditor follows while auditing someone, which assures that the preclear will get the greatest possible gain out of the auditing he is having.

autocontrol: autohypnosis or an attempt to process oneself without an auditor. If attempted in Dianetics, autohypnosis is probably as close to fruitless masochism as one can get. If a patient places himself in autohypnosis and regresses himself in an effort to reach illness or birth or prenatals, the only thing he will get is ill.

autonomic nervous system: a system of nerves in the body which regulates involuntary action, as of the intestines, heart and glands. Autonomic means "self-ruling" or "independent."

bacillus: loosely, any of the bacteria, especially those causing a disease.

Bacon, Francis: (1561-1626) English philosopher and essayist who insisted that investigation should begin with observable facts rather than with theories.

bank: see reactive mind

banked: (of a fire) covered with ashes or fuel to make it burn long and slowly.

Bara, Theda: stage name of Theodosia Goodman (1890-1955), US actress who played parts of evil women in forty films between 1915 and 1919.

barber basin medicine: reference to the practice of surgery by barbers in earlier centuries. Generally untrained in medical

603

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

procedures, their "treatments" were very painful with severe infections and often death resulting from unsanitary conditions.

Barrymore: referring to the Barrymore family, American actors of English-Irish descent, one of the most famous families in the history of the American stage: Maurice Barrymore (1847-1905) and his three children—Lionel (1878-1954), Ethel (1879-1959) and John (1892-1942).

basic: the first engram on any chain of similar engrams; basic is simply earliest.

basic-basic: the first engram of the first chain of engrams.

basic personality: the individual himself. The basic individual is not a buried unknown or a different person, but an intensity of all that is best and most able in the person.

bastion: something serving as a stronghold.

battery: a group of similar things arranged, connected or used together; set or series; array.

bawled out: (slang) scolded angrily.

bedevilment: the act of plaguing diabolically; torment; harassment.

Bedlam: an old insane asylum (in full, St. Mary of Bethlehem) in London, infamous for the brutal ill-treatment inflicted upon the insane.

beneficent: doing good or causing good to be done; conferring benefits; kindly in action or purpose.

Benzedrine: (trademark) an amphetamine, a drug used as a stimulant.

Bergson, Henri: (1859-1941) French philosopher. Awarded Nobel Prize for literature (1927).

beset: encompassed; surrounded; assailed; possessed detrimentally: said of the difficulties, perils or obstacles which surround an action, work or course.

bid fair: seem likely (to be or do something).

biochemistry: the chemistry of living organisms.

blasphemy: abuse of or contempt for God or sacred things.

blithely: in a manner without thought or regard; in a carefree way; heedlessly.

Blood and Sand: title of a silent movie featuring Rudolph Valentine.

boarders: people who regularly get meals, or room and meals, at another's home for pay.

boil-off: becoming groggy and seeming to sleep. This manifestation denotes that some period of the person's life

604

GLOSSARY

wherein he was unconscious has been slightly restim-ulated.

bona fide: authentic; true.

bootleg: made, sold or transported unlawfully. The term arose from the practice of hiding a liquor bottle in the leg of one's boot.

bootstraps: means of advancing oneself or accomplishing something.

bosun: a ship's petty officer in charge of rigging, boats, anchors, etc.

boudoir: a woman's bedroom, dressing room or private sitting room.

Boulder Dam: officially Hoover Dam, one of the highest dams in the world, on the Colorado River between the southern tip of Nevada and Arizona.

bouncer: an engramic command (such as "Can't stay here" or "Get out!") which sends the preclear up the track toward present time.

bow-drill fire-maker: an ancient device for making fire by friction. It consisted of a stick resting in a hollow in a piece of wood which was given a sawlike motion by a loop in a little bow, producing glowing wood dust.

bowlers: stiff felt hats with rounded crown and narrow brim, worn chiefly by men. Also called derbies.

brace and bit: a tool for boring, consisting of a removable drill (bit) in a rotating handle (brace).

bracketed: of a target, having had its range determined by placing shots both short of the target and beyond it. Used figuratively.

brackish: somewhat salty, as the water of some marshes near the sea.

British Guyana: country in northeastern South America: formerly a British colony, it became independent and a member of the Commonwealth in 1966.

brought to bar: held accountable.

bubonic plague: a very dangerous contagious disease, accompanied by fever, chills and swelling of the lymphatic glands. It is carried to humans by fleas from rats or squirrels.

Bund: a street running along the waterfront in Shanghai (a seaport in eastern China).

buoyant: lighthearted, cheerful.

bursitis: inflammation of a bursa, a pouch between joints or

605

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

between muscles or skin, etc., and bones, for lessening friction.

Caesar, Julius: (1007-44 B.C.) Roman general and statesman. As part of his military conquests, he invaded Britain in 55 and 54 B.C. Became Roman dictator in 49 B.C.

calculus: (mathematics) a method of calculation in higher mathematics; a way of making calculations about quantities which are continually changing, such as the speed of a falling stone or the slope of a curved line. Calculus measures little bits of things in order to find out what the whole thing will do. That is the whole theory of calculus.

Caligula: (A.D. 12-41) Roman emperor (37-41). His reign was marked by extreme cruelty and tyranny.

caliper: a compass for measuring the diameter of tubes or of round objects.

canceler: a contract with the patient that whatever the auditor says will not become literally interpreted by the patient or used by him in any way. It prevents accidental positive suggestion.

capricious: characterized by or subject to whim; impulsive and unpredictable.

cargo: load.

carmine: red or purplish red; crimson.

case: a general term for a person being treated or helped. Case also refers to a person's condition, which is monitored by the content of his reactive mind. A person's case is the way he responds to the world around him by reason of his aberrations.

cataclysm: any great upheaval that causes sudden and violent changes, as an earthquake, war, etc.

catalyst: a person or thing acting as the stimulus in bringing about or hastening a result.

catarrhal: having to do with inflammation of a mucous membrane, especially of the nose or throat, causing an increased flow of mucus.

caustic: severely critical or sarcastic.

censure: criticize severely.

cervix: a neck-shaped, anatomical structure, as the narrow outer end of the uterus.

chain: a series of incidents of similar nature or similar subject matter.

chain fission: (fission means a splitting apart, dividing) larger atoms such as atoms of uranium can fission (split) into

606

GLOSSARY

smaller atoms such as atoms of iodine and bromine. This process can be designed so that each fission will cause another fission, thereby setting off a chain reaction. The atomic bomb is an example of a chain fission. Used figuratively.

charge: harmful energy or force accumulated and stored in the reactive mind, resulting from the conflicts and unpleasant experiences that a person has had.

charlatan: an assuming empty pretender to knowledge or skill; a pretentious impostor.

chary: cautious, wary.

chastened: restrained; subdued.

chattel: slave or any movable possession (as opposed to a house or land).

Cheops: king of ancient Egypt for 23 years (around 2900 B.C.). Cheops was famous as the builder of the Great Pyramid in Egypt, which is one of the Seven Wonders of the World. Egyptian pyramids were built as royal tombs: each monarch built his own pyramid.

chess: a game of skill played on a checkered board by two players, each possessing an initial force of 16 pieces, including a piece called a "king." There are individual rules of movement for each different kind of piece. Players make alternate moves, each seeking to attack the other's king in such a manner that no escape or defense is possible, thus ending the game.

chloroform: a colorless liquid with a sharp, sweetish smell and taste. Chloroform evaporates quickly and easily. When its vapor is inhaled, it makes a person unconscious or unable to feel pain.

chronometer: an instrument for measuring time precisely; highly accurate kind of clock or watch, as for scientific use.

cinch: (colloquial) a firm grip.

circuit: a part of an individual's bank (a colloquial name for the reactive mind) that behaves as though it were someone or something separate from him and that either talks to him or goes into action of its own accord, and may even, if severe enough, take control of him while it operates.

clairvoyance: the ability to perceive things that are not in sight or that cannot be seen.

Clear: the Clear is an unaberrated person. He is rational in that he forms the best possible solutions he can on the data he

607

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

has and from his viewpoint. The Clear has no engrams which can be restimulated to throw out the correctness of computation by entering hidden and false data. Clear is the goal in Dianetics therapy, a goal which some patience and a little study will bring about.

climes: regions or realms, especially with reference to their climates.

coach-and-four: a coach pulled by four horses.

cohabit: live together in a sexual relationship when not legally married.

coitus: sexual intercourse.

colloquial: characteristic of or appropriate to ordinary or familiar conversation rather than formal speech or writing; informal.

comatic: of a coma (a period of deep, prolonged unconsciousness usually resulting from a severe injury or illness).

combat exhaustion: (psychiatry) a neurotic condition in which one is anxious, irritable, depressed, etc., often as a result of having been in combat or battle for a long time.

compulsions: irresistible, repeated, irrational impulses to perform some act.

concourse: concurrence in action or causation, cooperation; combined action.

condenser: a device storing a charge of electricity. Also called a capacitor.

confounded: damned; a mild oath.

Confucianism: the system of morality taught by Confucius, a Chinese philosopher (551-479? B.C.).

conjunctivitis: inflammation of the conjunctiva, the mucous membrane lining the inner eyelid and part of the eye.

consecrated: set apart or declared as holy.

consternation: a sudden, alarming amazement or dread that results in utter confusion; dismay.

constitute: establish or set up; make (a person or thing) something.

contaging: a verb coined from the word contagious, describing the act of spreading or tending to spread from person to person.

cordite: a smokeless explosive used as a propellant in bullets and shells.

corn: (informal) old-fashioned, trite or mawkishly (weakly emotional) sentimental material, as a joke, a story or music.

608

GLOSSARY

corn-and-games: reference to the practice in ancient Rome of feeding people and providing official public amusement (circuses in the arena) in an attempt to prevent unrest. Also known as "bread and circuses."

corner: a monopoly acquired on a stock or a commodity so as to be able to raise the price.

coronary: of or pertaining to the human heart, with respect to health.

corporal punishment: (law) physical punishment, as flogging, inflicted on the body of one convicted of a crime: formerly included the death penalty, sentencing to a term of years, etc.

counter-checking: controlling or confirming by a second check.

cowed: subdued by frightening with threats or force.

craven: cowardly.

crazy house: a fun house: an attraction at an amusement park consisting of a series of rooms and passageways with sloping or moving floors, distorting mirrors and other devices designed to surprise or amuse.

credence: belief as to the truth of something.

crocheted: done in a kind of needlework in which loops of a thread or yarn are interwoven by means of a single hooked needle.

crow: boast in triumph; exult.

cry, a far: only remotely related; very different.

culpable: deserving blame; blameworthy.

cyanide: a very poisonous chemical substance.

cytology: the scientific study of cells.

Dalton, Jack: member of an outlaw gang in the nineteenth-century American West; also a character in early westerns.

Dante: originally Durante, Alighieri: (1265-1321) Italian poet. Wrote Divina Commedia, recounting an imaginary journey by the author through hell, purgatory and paradise.

Dark Ages: the Middle Ages, especially the earlier part from about A.D. 476 to about the end of the 10th century: so called from the idea that this period in Europe was characterized by intellectual stagnation, widespread ignorance and poverty, and cultural decline.

debauchery: indulgence in harmful or immoral pleasures.

decks: decorates; dresses up.

decried: spoken out against strongly and openly; denounced.

deep analysis: depth therapy: a form of psychotherapy that

609

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

attempts to work through unconscious conflicts to resolve problems in behavior.

demon: a mental mechanism set up by an engram which takes over a portion of the analyzer and acts as an individual being. A bona fide demon is one who gives thoughts voice or echoes the spoken word interiorly or who gives all sorts of complicated advices like a real, live voice exteriorly.

denyer: a species of command which, literally translated, means that the engram doesn't exist. "I'm not here," "This is getting nowhere," "I must not talk about it," "I can't remember," etc. A command which makes the pre-clear feel there is no incident present.

derangements: disturbances of the functions of the mind; mental disorders; insanities.

derelict: neglectful of duty; delinquent; negligent.

derided: laughed at in contempt or scorn; made fun of; ridiculed.

dermatitis: inflammation of the skin.

dervish: a member of any various Moslem orders of ascetics (ones who lead a life of austere self-discipline, especially as an act of religious devotion or penance), some of which employ whirling dances and the chanting of religious formulas to producer collective ecstasy.

descriptive: representing or delineating by a picture or figure.

designing: crafty, conniving.

devil take the ____ : a phrase used as a curse, wish of evil or the like.

diabetes: a disease in which sugar and starch are not properly absorbed by the body.

Dianetics: Dianetics spiritual healing technology. It addresses and handles the effects of the spirit on the body and can alleviate such things as unwanted sensations and emotions, accidents, injuries and psychosomatic illnesses (ones that are caused or aggravated by mental stress). Dianetics means "through the soul" (from Greek dia, through, and nous, soul). It is further defined as "what the soul is doing to the body."

dime-store: of or purchased at a dime store or five-and-ten-cent store—a store that sells a wide variety of inexpensive merchandise, originally with many articles priced at five or ten cents.

dipsomaniac: a person suffering from an uncontrollable craving for alcohol.

610

GLOSSARY

direful: dreadful; awful; terrible.

disavow: deny any knowledge or approval of, or responsibility for; disclaim; disown.

dismembered: divided into parts; cut to pieces; mutilated.

disposition: state of mind regarding something; inclination.

Dixie, whistle: engage in wishful thinking. Dixie is a lively song about the Southern states of the United States, written in 1859 by Daniel D. Emmett (1815-1904). It was used to build enthusiasm for the South during the Civil War.

doilies: small mats, as of lace or paper, put under a dish, vase or the like, as a decoration or to protect a surface. Named after a 17th-century draper (dealer in cloth and dry goods) whose name was Doily or Doyley.

donjon: the fortified main tower of a castle.

dopey: tired, sleepy, foggy (as though doped).

douche bag: a small syringe having detachable nozzles for administering a douche: a jet or current of water, sometimes with a dissolved medicating or cleansing agent, applied to a body part, organ or cavity (such as the vagina) for medicinal or hygienic purposes.

dramatis personae: the characters in a play or story (used here to refer to people present in the engrams of the aberree).

dramatization: the duplication of an engramic content, entire or in part, by an aberree in his present time environment. Aberrated conduct is entirely dramatization. The degree of dramatization is in direct ratio to the degree of restimula-tion of the engrams causing it. When dramatizing, the individual is like an actor playing his dictated part and going through a whole series of irrational actions.

dranuner: humorous spelling of drama, a series of events so interesting, vivid, etc., as to resemble those of a play.

droll: amusing in an odd or ironic way.

dross: inferior, trivial or worthless matter.

Drunkard: a play written by William H. Smith and "A Gentleman" in the late 1800s, a moral domestic drama of American life.

DTfc: delirium tremens: a violent delirium (temporary state of extreme mental excitement, marked by restlessness, confused speech and hallucinations) resulting chiefly from excessive drinking of alcoholic liquor and characterized by sweating, trembling, anxiety and frightening hallucinations. Delirium tremens comes from Latin, and means literally "trembling delirium."

dub-in: the manifestation of putting, unknowingly, perceptions which do not in actual fact exist, in the environment. (It is a phrase taken from the motion picture industry, meaning to record dialogue and various sounds and then integrate them into the film after it has been shot. This is done for scenes where the original recording is faulty, for scenes where it is simply more convenient to add dialogue and other sound later, and for films playing abroad which require new dialogue in the native language of the host country.)

dynamic: 1. the tenacity to life and vigor and persistence in survival. 2. the urge, thrust and purpose of life— Survive;—in its four manifestations: self, sex, group and mankind.

dynamic principle of existence: survival. The goal of life can be considered to be infinite survival. Man, as a life form, can be demonstrated to obey in all his actions and purposes the one command "Survive!" It is not a new thought that man is surviving. It is a new thought that man is motivated only by survival.

dynasties: successions of rulers who are members of the same family.

eccentricity, unusual or odd behavior, or a peculiar habit.

ectoplasm: the luminous substance believed to emanate from a spiritualistic medium.

effusion: a pouring forth.

egocentric: viewing everything in relation to oneself; self-centered.

Einstein, Albert: (1879-1955) German physicist, US citizen from 1940; formulated the theory of the conversion of mass into energy, opening the way for the development of the atomic bomb.

Ellis, Henry: (1859-1939) English criminologist and psychologist who conducted studies in psychology and sociology of sex.

embroil: throw into confusion; complicate.

embryo: 1. an early or undeveloped stage of something. 2. a child in the womb in the first eight weeks of its development.

Emersonian: of Ralph Waldo Emerson: (1803-1882) American essayist, poet and lecturer. Emerson was part of the tran-scendentalist movement, which advised people to look for God-given power within themselves. His best-known essay

612

GLOSSARY

is "Self-Reliance." Many in the nineteenth century took inspiration from Emerson, especially through his brief and pointed sayings and urgings, such as "Hitch your wagon to a star."

encysting: enclosing in or as if in a cyst or sac.

endocrine: designating or of any gland producing one or more internal secretions that are introduced directly into the bloodstream and carried to other parts of the body whose functions they regulate or control.

engendered: brought into being; brought about; caused; produced.

engrain: a mental image picture which is a recording of an experience containing pain, unconsciousness, and a real or fancied threat to survival. It is a recording in the reactive mind of something which actually happened to an individual in the past and which contained pain and unconsciousness, both of which are recorded in the mental image picture called an engram. It must, by definition, have impact or injury as part of its content. These engrams are a complete recording, down to the last accurate detail, of every perception present in a moment of partial or full unconsciousness.

engram command: any phrase contained in an engram.

enjoin: order, command.

ensigns: in the US Navy, commissioned officers of the lowest rank.

equilibrium: mental or emotional balance; evenness of mind or temper; composure.

equipage: a carriage drawn by horses and attended by servants.

equivocal: questionable; suspicious.

erase: cause an engram to "vanish" entirely by recountings, at which time it is filed as memory and experience.

erudition: exhibition of knowledge not easily understood by the average person.

estrogen: a sex hormone or other substance capable of developing and maintaining female characteristics of the body.

et al.: and others.

ether: a drug used to produce anesthesia, as before surgery.

evolutes: evolves; develops.

excreta: waste matter excreted from the body, as sweat or urine.

exodontistry: the extraction of teeth.

facetious: joking or trying to be jocular, especially at an inappropriate time.

613

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

facile: acting, working or done easily, or in a quick, smooth

way; fluent; ready. faculty: an ability, natural or acquired, for a particular kind of

action. fan: (Western US, chiefly cowboy use) slap the flanks (of a horse

or other animal) repeatedly with a hat to get it to move or

move faster. fan-tan: a Chinese gambling game in which a pile of coins,

counters or objects is placed under a bowl and bets are

made on what the remainder will be after they have been

counted off in fours. Farragut, David Glasgow: (1801-1870) US admiral who won

the battles of New Orleans and Mobile Bay for the Union

in the US Civil War. feigned: pretended, simulated; sham. fetishes: objects, ideas, etc., eliciting unquestioning reverence,

respect or devotion. fetus: in man, the offspring in the womb from the end of the

third month of pregnancy until birth. fidelity: accuracy; exactness. file clerk: Dianetic auditor's slang for the mechanism of the

mind which acts as a data monitor. Auditors can get

instant or "flash" answers direct from the file clerk to aid

in contacting incidents. Technically the name of the file

clerk might be "bank monitor unit" but that phrase is too

unwieldy. fireplugs: street hydrants to which hoses can be attached for

fighting fires. flash answer: the first thing which comes into a person's head

when a question is asked of him. flint: a fine-grained, very hard rock, usually gray, that produces

sparks when struck with steel, and that breaks into pieces

with sharp cutting edges. flippant: joking or trying to be funny when one should be more

serious or show more respect. flounder, out like a: in a faint; unconscious. (Flounder is a

slang term for the corpse of a drowned man.) flushed: revealed; brought into the open; driven out.
foibles: minor weaknesses or failings of character; slight flaws

or defects. forebear: ancestor. forgetter mechanism: a forgetter mechanism is "Put it out of

my mind," "If I remembered it I would go mad," "Can't

614

GLOSSARY

remember," and just plain "I don't know," as well as the master of the family of phrases, "Forget it!" Any
engram command which makes the individual believe he can't remember.

fostered: helped to grow or develop; stimulated; promoted.

frigid: habitually failing to become sexually aroused, or abnormally repelled by sexual activity: said of a
woman.

fuse: a wire or strip of easily melted metal, usually set in a plug, placed in a circuit as a safeguard: if the
current becomes too strong, the metal melts, thus breaking the circuit.

Galen: (ca. A.D. 130-200) Greek physician whose works were for centuries the standards for anatomy
and physiology. Though Galen gave good descriptions of some of the human body's different parts and
their functions, his observations and conclusions on the circulation of the blood were far from correct.

galvanometer: an instrument for detecting and measuring small electric currents.

gamut: the entire range or extent, as of emotions.

gaoler: jailer.

garners: acquires; gathers or collects.

Gaslight: a play by Patrick Hamilton (later called Angel Street) in which a man tries to drive his wife insane.

gauge: thickness or diameter, as of sheet metal or wire. A #12 gauge copper wire is approximately three thirty-secondths of an inch thick.

Gauls: any of the Celtic-speaking people of Gaul, ancient region in western Europe consisting of what is now mainly France and Belgium.

Gay Nineties: the 1890s, a period of sudden affluence in the US brought on by the industrial revolution.

genesis: the way in which something comes to be; beginning; origin.

genetic: of or having to do with genetics, the branch of biology that deals with heredity and the way that animals and plants pass on to their offspring such characteristics as size, color, etc.

Genghis Khan: (1162-1227) Mongol conqueror of much of Asia and eastern Europe. He and his armies were totally ruthless in their actions and were said to have killed over a million people in one city alone.

615

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

geometric progression: a sequence of terms, such as 1, 3, 9, 27, 81, etc., each of which is a constant multiple of the immediately preceding term.

germane: closely or significantly related; relevant; pertinent.

glad-hander: one who is demonstrative in his personal contacts; one who acts more friendly or more optimistic than necessary; one, as a politician, who pretends friendliness.

gnome: (folklore) any of a race of small, misshapen, dwarflike beings, supposed to dwell in the earth and guard its treasures.

godhead: godhood; divinity.

golden age: the period in which a nation, etc., is at its highest state of prosperity, or in which some human art or activity is at its most excellent.

Goldi: a people, traditionally hunters and fishermen, who inhabit the valley of the Amur River in southeastern Siberia and northeastern Manchuria (a region and former administrative division of northeast China).

gold panning: separating (gold, etc.) from gravel by washing it in a pan.

gonads: bodily organs that produce gametes (mature sperm or eggs capable of participating in fertilization).

Goodwife Sofie: made-up name for a woman who was the mistress of a household. Goodwife is an archaic title of respect for a woman.

Grand Coulee Dam: a large, concrete dam located on the Columbia River in central Washington.

gregarious: living in herds or flocks.

grippe: influenza.

grist to (one's) mill: something employed to one's profit or advantage, especially something seemingly unpromising.

grizzly: short for grizzly bear: a large, ferocious, brownish, grayish or yellowish bear of western North America, having a shoulder hump and long front claws.

grouper: species of command which, literally translated, means that all incidents are in one place on the time track: "I'm jammed up," "Everything happens at once," "Everything comes in on me at once," "I'll get even with you," etc.

G-2: military intelligence section of the Army or Marine Corps.

gyrations: actions of turning round, wheeling or whirling.

hallowed: regarded as holy; honored as sacred.

Hamlet: hero of the play Hamlet, a tragedy (first printed 1603)

GLOSSARY

by William Shakespeare. Hamlet is a young prince who avenges the murder of his father.

harlot: a prostitute.

harridan: a scolding, vicious woman; hag; shrew.

harrowing: extremely disturbing or distressing; grievous.

Harvey, William: (1578-1657) English physician and anatomist, discoverer of the mechanics of blood circulation.

havoc, cry: sound an alarm. Used figuratively.

hawk: make an effort to raise phlegm from the throat; clear the throat noisily.

hazarded: offered (a statement, conjecture, etc.) with the possibility of facing criticism, disapproval, failure or the like; ventured.

"Heads I win, tails you lose": descriptive of a one-sided arrangement. The phrase comes from a game of flipping a coin into the air and betting on which side will land uppermost. Heads refers to the side of a coin bearing the date and the main design (often a representation of a head); tails refers to the reverse side of a coin.

hebephrenia: (psychiatry) a form of aberration characterized by childish or silly behavior.

Hegelian: of Hegel (Georg Wilhelm Friedrich Hegel [1770-1831], German philosopher) or his philosophy. Hegel put forth a philosophy based on the principle that an idea or event (thesis) generates its opposite (antithesis) leading to the reconciliation of opposites.

helium: one of the chemical elements, a very light, inert, colorless gas; it is used for inflating balloons, etc.

Hercules: a mythical Greek hero of fabulous strength and courage who, after completing 12 heroic feats assigned to him (including killing several legendary monsters), became immortal.

hew: to chop or cut with an ax or sword, etc.

hexed: bewitched; practiced on by witchcraft.

Hindu: of Hinduism, a religious and social system which developed in India about 1400 B.C. , with belief in reincarnation, worship of several gods, and the caste system (rigid, hereditary social classes) as a basis of society.

Hindu trinity: Hindu representation of the three manifestations of the Supreme Being—Brahma, Vishnu and Siva—each with a specific cosmic function: Brahma was associated with creation; Vishnu was associated with preservation and renewal; and Siva with destruction and disintegration.

617

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

Hippocrates: (460?-370? B.C.) Greek physician, known as "the father of medicine."

histamine: a substance released by the tissues in allergic reactions: it dilates blood vessels, stimulates gastric secretion, etc.

holder: any engram command which makes an individual remain in an engram knowingly or unknowingly. These include such things as "Stay here," "Sit right there and think about it," "Come back and sit down," "I can't go," "I mustn't leave," etc.

hound: hunt or chase with or as with hounds; chase or follow continually; nag.

hubbub: tumult; uproar.

Hume, David: (1711-1776) Scottish philosopher and historian. Hume was known for his skepticism. He maintained that all knowledge was based on either the impressions of the senses or the logical relations of ideas.

hurrah's nest: state of utmost confusion; a mess.

hyacinth: a plant of the lily family, widely cultivated for its cylindrical cluster of fragrant flowers in a variety of colors.

hydraulic rams: devices by which the energy of descending water is utilized to raise a part of the water to a height greater than that of the source.

hyoscine: same as scopolamine, an alkaloid used in medicine as a sedative, hypnotic and sometimes with other drugs to relieve pain.

hypnoanalysis: (psychoanalysis) the use of hypnosis or hypnotic drugs in combination with psychoanalytic techniques.

hypochondriac: a person who continually shows unnecessary anxiety about his health.

hysterical: (psychiatry) of or characteristic of hysteria, a psychiatric condition variously characterized by emotional excitability, excessive anxiety, sensory and motor disturbances, or the unconscious simulation

of organic disorders, such as blindness, deafness, etc.

iatrogenic: means illness generated by doctors. An operation during which the doctor's knife slipped and accidentally harmed the patient might cause an iatrogenic illness or injury since the fault would have been with the surgeons.

ideologies: systematic schemes of ideas, usually relating to politics or society or to the conduct of a class or group,

618

GLOSSARY

and regarded as justifying actions, especially those that are

held implicitly or adopted as a whole and maintained

regardless of the course of events. idiosyncrasy: a characteristic, habit, mannerism or the like that

is peculiar to an individual. idyllic: pleasing and simple; pastoral (characteristic of rural life,

idealized as peaceful, simple and natural) or picturesque. ilk: class; kind; sort. impaction: the action of becoming, or condition of being,

impacted (pressed closely into or in something) or firmly

fixed in. impasses: situations offering no escape, as a difficulty without

solution, an argument where no agreement is possible,

etc.; deadlocks.

impedimenta: things which impede or encumber progress; baggage. imponderables: things that cannot be conclusively determined

or explained.

imposition: a burden imposed unfairly.

incontrovertible: not open to question or dispute; indisputable. Indian rope trick: a magic trick in which the magician makes a

rope seem to suspend in midair and either goes up the rope

and disappears or sends other things up which disappear. indolence: the quality or state of disliking or avoiding work;

idleness; laziness.

inductive: of or using induction, logical reasoning that a general law exists because particular cases that seem to be

examples of it exist. inextricably: in a way incapable of being disentangled, undone,

loosed or solved.

infame: very bad reputation; notoriety; disgrace; dishonor. infidelity: unfaithfulness or disloyalty to another; especially,

sexual unfaithfulness of a husband or wife; adultery. injunctions: orders or commands that something must or must

not be done.

in kind: in proper or good condition. in re: in regard to. insidious: spreading or developing or acting inconspicuously

but with harmful effect. instanter: immediately; at once. insulin shock: a state of coma resulting from reduced blood

sugar when insulin (a substance which helps the body use

sugar and other carbohydrates) is present in excessive

619

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

amounts. Insulin shock is used by psychiatrists as one form of shock therapy in "treating" mental illness.

intelligence officer: a military officer responsible for collecting and processing data on hostile forces, weather and terrain.

intimation: hint; indirect suggestion.

introvert: look in on oneself.

inversion: acute awareness of self.

Iowa: a north central state of the US; its chief products are agricultural.

Ism: a doctrine, theory, system, etc., especially one whose name ends in -ism.

jauntings: trips; excursions.

jettison: throw off (something) as an obstacle or burden; discard.

Jimmie the Cob: a made-up name for a criminal. Cob is British dialect for "leader; chief."

jockeying: playing tricks with; managing or manipulating in a tricky way.

jog: stir or jolt into activity or alertness, as by a hint or reminder.

jub-jub bird: imaginary creature from the poem "Jabber-wocky" by Lewis Carroll.

jurisprudence: the study of law or of a particular part of law.

Keats, John: (1795-1821) English poet, considered one of the greatest English poets. His poems are unequalled for dignity, melody and richness of imagery.

keep: the strongest, innermost part or central tower of a medieval castle.

key in: make active. A key-in is a moment when the environment around the awake but fatigued or distressed individual is itself similar to the dormant (inactive) engram. At that moment the engram becomes active.

key out: cause an engram (or engrams) to drop away without being erased.

Kinsey, Alfred Charles: (1894-1956) American scientist who investigated the sexual behavior of men and women. In 1947 and 1948, he published books on his findings— *Sexual Behavior in the Human Male* and *Sexual Behavior in the Human Female*—popularly known as the Kinsey Reports, which shattered existing conceptions of the nature and extent of American sexual practices.

620

GLOSSARY

kleptomaniac: a person suffering from an uncontrollable tendency to steal things, with no desire to use or profit by them.

Korzybski, Alfred: (1879-1950) American scientist and writer; developed the subject of general semantics, a methodology that attempts to improve human behavior through a critical use of words and symbols.

Kraepelin, Emit: (1856-1926) German psychiatrist; divided mental disturbances into various classifications.

Krafft-Ebing, Baron Richard von: (1840-1902) German neurologist and author of works on sexual pathology.

latitude: freedom from narrow restrictions; freedom of opinion, conduct or action.

leads: electrical conductors (usually wires) conveying current from a source to a place of use.

leprosy: a chronic, infectious disease caused by a bacterium that attacks the skin, flesh, nerves, etc.: it is characterized by ulcers, white scaly scabs, deformities and wasting of body parts.

lesbianism: homosexual relations between women.

Lesbos: Greek island in the Aegean Sea. The word lesbian derives from the ancient Greek name of this island, from the eroticism and homosexuality attributed to Sappho (ancient Greek poetess) and her followers.

Leucippus: Greek philosopher of the fifth century B.C.

lichens: any of a large group of plants that look somewhat like moss and grow in patches on trees, rocks, etc.

lick: overcome or defeat, as in a fight, game or contest.

lie factory: technically, a phrase contained in an engram demanding prevarication (the telling of lies)—it was originally called a fabricator.

liner: a steamship, passenger airplane, etc., in regular service for a specific line.

llamas: South American animals related to the camel but smaller and without humps: the llama is used as a beast of burden and for its wool, flesh and milk.

lock: an analytical moment in which the perceptics of the engram are approximated, thus restimulating the engram or bringing it into action, the present time perceptics being erroneously interpreted by the reactive mind to mean that the same condition which produced physical pain once before is now again at hand.

621

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

Locke, John: (1632-1704) English philosopher who argued against the belief that human beings are born with certain ideas already in their minds. He claimed that, on the contrary, the mind is a tabula rasa (blank slate) until experience begins to "write" on it.

"loop": literally, a length of film or magnetic tape whose ends have been joined to form an endless strip, so that continuous repetition of the recording is made possible (e.g., in rehearsing the synchronization required for dubbing a foreign-language soundtrack). Used figuratively.

Lorentz-FitzGerald-Einstein equations: mathematical equations developed by Hendrik Lorentz and George Francis FitzGerald, closely related to the work of Einstein. These formulas, also known as the Lorentz-FitzGerald contraction, contain the hypothesis that a moving body exhibits a contraction in the direction of motion when its velocity is close to the speed of light.

Direction of Motion

Low Speeds Approaching Speed of Light

"loud": (colloquial) too vivid; flashy.

loused up: botched; spoiled; ruined.

Lucretius: (987-55 B.C.) Roman poet who was the author of the unfinished *On the Nature of Things*, a

didactic (instructional) poem in six books, setting forth in outline a complete science of the universe. The purpose of the work was to prove, by investigating the nature of the world in which man lives, that all things—including man—operate according to their own laws and are not in any way influenced by supernatural powers.

lugubrious: very sad or mournful, especially in a way that seems exaggerated or ridiculous.

622

GLOSSARY

Lysol: (trademark) a brand of clear, brown, oily solution used as a disinfectant and antiseptic.

Macbeth: title character of a play by Shakespeare, tortured by his guilt for murders he committed rising to power in Scotland.

maelstrom: an agitated or tumultuous state of affairs.

malignant: causing or likely to cause death, especially by spreading unchecked through the body.

maligned: spoken evil of; defamed; slandered.

mange: a skin disease affecting hairy animals, caused by a parasite and characterized by intense itching, scabs and loss of hair.

manic: having or characterized by abnormal excitability, exaggerated feeling of well-being, flight of ideas, excessive activity, etc.

manic-depressive: (psychiatry) having a mental disorder marked by alternating extremes of excitement

and depression.

marijuana: the dried leaves and flowers of the hemp plant, used in cigarette form as a narcotic or hallucinogen.

masochistic: of, concerning or pertaining to the getting of sexual pleasure from being dominated, mistreated or hurt physically or otherwise by one's partner.

Matterhorn: a mountain on the border of Switzerland and Italy.

Mauser: a brand of military or hunting rifles.

maw: anything thought of as consuming, devouring, etc., without end.

mawkish: sentimental in a tearful way, so as to be sickening.

Maxwell, James Clerk: (1831-1879) Scottish physicist, responsible for the theory that electricity and light are the same in their fundamental nature.

Mazda and Ahriman: the deities in Zoroastrianism, the religious system of the Persians before their conversion to Islam. Mazda is the spirit of universal good and Ahriman is his archrival as the spirit of evil.

media-media: average.

melancholy: a gloomy state of mind, especially when habitual or prolonged; depression.

mellerdrammer: humorous spelling of melodrama, any sensational writing, speech or action with exaggerated appeal to the emotions.

memory: anything which, perceived, is filed in the standard memory bank and can be recalled by the analytical mind.

mentors: wise and trusted counselors or teachers.

623

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

Mesmer, Franz Anton: (1734-1815) Austrian physician who developed the practice of mesmerism—hypnotism.

metallurgy: the scientific study of the properties of metals and alloys, the art of working metals or of extracting them from their ores.

metaphysics: a branch of philosophy that deals with the nature of existence and of truth and knowledge.

meted: distributed or apportioned by measure; allotted; doled (usually followed by out).

mien: a person's manner or bearing.

migraine: a type of intense, periodically returning headache, usually limited to one side of the head and often accompanied by nausea, visual disorders, etc.

militate: are directed (against); operate or work (against or, rarely, for): said of facts, evidence, actions, etc.

misdirector: any engram command which makes the patient move in a way or direction on the track which is contrary to instructions of the auditor or the desires of the analytical mind of the patient.

Moloch: in the Bible, an ancient god of the Phoenicians, etc., to whom children were sacrificed by burning. Moloch has come to mean anything demanding terrible sacrifice.

monomaniac: one who suffers from an obsession with one idea or interest.

moored: fixed firmly; secured.

mores: the customs, or customary practices, rules, etc., regarded as essential to or characteristic of a group.

morning sickness: nausea occurring in the early part of the day, especially as a characteristic symptom in the first months of pregnancy.

morphine: a drug made from opium, used for relieving pain.

motif: dominant idea or feature.

motor strip: the mind's control system through the motor controls. There are two panels on each side of the skull, one on top of the other, and they control opposite sides of the body. One of the panels on each side is where the thoughts register, and the other panel is where the muscle control is set up.

mumbo jumbo: senseless or pretentious language, usually designed to obscure an issue, confuse a listener or the like.

myelin sheathing: the fatty layer of tissues coating the nerves.

myopia: inability to see clearly what is far away—near-sightedness.

624

GLOSSARY

mysticism: the beliefs or practices of those who claim to have experiences based on intuition, meditation, etc., of a spiritual nature, by which they learn truths not known by ordinary people.

Napoleon: Napoleon Bonaparte (1769-1821), French military leader and emperor of France (1804-1815). He led a brilliant campaign of French domination in Europe but ended in ruin, spending the last years of his life as a prisoner on a lonely British island.

narcosynthesis: the practice of inducing sleep with drugs and then talking to the patient to draw out buried thoughts.

Nation, Carry: (1846-1911) American temperance agitator, famous for her use of a hatchet to break up saloons.

nebulously: hazily, vaguely, indistinctly or confusedly.

neurology: the science of the nerves and the nervous system, especially the diseases affecting them.

neurons: the main units that make up the nerves. They consist of cell bodies with threadlike parts that carry signals to and from the cells.

neuroses: emotional states containing conflicts and emotional data inhibiting the abilities or welfare of the individual.

neurotic: one who is insane or disturbed on some subject (as opposed to a psychotic person, who is just insane in general).

Newton, Sir Isaac: (1642-1727) English mathematician and natural philosopher. One of the greatest geniuses the world has known, he made three scientific discoveries of fundamental importance: first, the method of change in varying quantities, which forms the basis of modern calculus; second, the law of the composition of light; third, the law of gravity.

Nineveh: capital of the ancient empire of Assyria, situated on the east bank of the Tigris River, opposite modern Mosul, Iraq. Nineveh contained magnificent palaces and sculpture, which have been unearthed in archaeological excavations.

nirvana: in Buddhism, the highest state of consciousness, in which the soul is freed from all desires and attachments.

nitrous oxide: a colorless gas that dulls pain, and in some patients produces exhilaration and occasionally uncontrollable laughter; laughing gas. It is used as an anesthetic.

nomenclature: the set of terms used to describe things in a particular subject.

625

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

nonpartisan: not an adherent or supporter of a person, group, party or cause; objective.

obstetrical: of or regarding obstetrics, the branch of medicine concerned with the care and treatment of women during pregnancy, childbirth and the period immediately following.

occasioned: given occasion or cause for; brought about.

ocularly: of or relating to the sense of sight.

odor: repute; esteem.

ogreish: like or having the characteristics of an ogre: (in folklore and fairy tales) a man-eating monster, usually represented as a hideous giant; hence, anything likened to such a monster in appearance or character.

Old Man of the Sea: character in the story of "Sinbad the Sailor" in The Arabian Nights. A seemingly harmless old man, he climbs onto the shoulders of the obliging Sinbad and refuses to get off. He clings there for many days and nights until Sinbad escapes by getting him drunk.

olfactory: of or relating to the sense of smell.

Olympian: of, resembling, characteristic of or suitable to the gods of Olympus (mountain in northeastern Greece); majestic or aloof.

omnipresent: present everywhere at the same time.

opium: a drug made from the juice of certain poppies, smoked or chewed as a stimulant or narcotic, and used in medicine as a sedative.

opossum playing: pretending to be dead, a trick used by opossums (small, tree-dwelling mammals which are active at night) to defend themselves from predators.

opportunism: the policy or practice, as in politics, business or one's personal affairs, of adapting actions, decisions, etc., to expediency or effectiveness regardless of the sacrifice of ethical principles.

orthopedics: the branch of surgery dealing with the treatment of deformities, diseases and injuries of the

bones, joints, muscles, etc.

pagan: non-Christian; refers to those peoples who worshipped many gods, such as the Greeks and the Romans.

pain-drive theory: the theory that pain, deprivation or other unpleasant consequence imposed on or experienced by an organism responding incorrectly under specific conditions establishes, through avoidance, the desired learning or behavior.

626

GLOSSARY

pallid: lacking in spirit or vitality; dull.

palsy: paralysis, especially with involuntary tremors.

panacea: a remedy for all kinds of diseases or troubles.

pandering: ministering to others' passions or prejudices for selfish ends.

paragon: a model or pattern of excellence or of a particular excellence.

paranoid-schizophrenic: (psychiatry) of or concerning a mental condition resembling paranoia (form of psychosis in which a person imagines that he is being persecuted or that he is very great or important) but also characterized by autistic (concerning a state of mind characterized by daydreaming, hallucinations and disregard of external reality) behavior and gradual deterioration of the personality.

parathyroid: a hormone important in controlling of the calcium-phosphate balance of the body.

Parcheesi: a trademark for a board game in which the moves of pieces on a board are determined by the throwing of dice.

paresis: a brain disease of syphilitic origin, characterized by mental deterioration, speech disturbances and progressive muscular weakness. See also syphilis in this glossary.

Pasteur, Louis: (1822-1895) French chemist and bacteriologist; he proved that decay and putrefaction are caused by bacteria and developed serums and vaccines for such diseases as cholera and rabies.

Pasteuretta pestis: organism causing bubonic plague. See also bubonic plague in this glossary.

paternity: the state of being a father; fatherhood.

pathologically: in a manner caused by or having to do with disease. See also pathology in this glossary.

pathology: the science or the study of the origin, nature and course of diseases.

patter: the special vocabulary of a particular activity.

Pavlov, Ivan Petrovich: (1849-1936) Russian physiologist; noted for behavioral experiments on dogs.

pedantic: having unnecessary stress on minor or trivial points of learning; displaying a scholarship lacking in judgment or sense of proportion.

penicillin: a very powerful drug for destroying bacteria.

penis envy: (psychoanalysis) the repressed wish of a female to possess a penis.

peptic ulcers: open sores in the stomach.

perceptive: any sense message such as a sight, sound, smell, etc.

627

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

percepts: recognizable sensations or impressions received by

the mind through the senses. phenobarbital: a medicinal drug used to calm the nerves and

induce sleep. Philip: Philip II: (382-336 B.C.) king of Macedonia, father of

Alexander the Great. phlebotomy: the act or practice of bloodletting as a therapeutic

measure. photosynthesis: the process by which green plants use sunlight

to convert carbon dioxide (taken from the air) and water

into complex substances. pilloried: held up to public ridicule or scorn. pine tar: a thick, dark liquid obtained by destructive distillation

(decomposition by heat in the absence of air) of pine

wood, used in ointments, tar paints, etc. Pittsburgh: city in southwest Pennsylvania. pituitrin: the various substances secreted by the pituitary gland,

located at the base of the brain, which have important

influences on growth and bodily functions. placate: stop from being angry; appease; pacify; mollify. plankton: the small animal and plant organisms that float or

drift in water, especially at or near the surface. Plankton

serves as an important source of food for larger animals,

such as fish. platitudes: flat, dull or trite remarks, especially those uttered as

if they were fresh or profound.

polarity: (figurative) the possession of two opposite or contrasted principles or tendencies. polysyllables: words having several, especially four or more,

syllables.

portends: is an indication of; signifies. post: the starting gate at a racetrack. postulates: things assumed to be true, especially as a basis for

reasoning. poultice: a hot, soft, moist mass, as of flour, herbs, mustard,

etc. Sometimes spread on cloth, applied to a sore or

inflamed part of the body. preclear: from pre-Clear, a person not yet Clear; generally a

person being audited, who is thus on the road to Clear; a

person who, through Dianetics auditing, is finding out

more about himself and life. predisposition: a state of mind or body that renders a person

628

GLOSSARY

liable to act or behave in a certain way or to be subject to certain diseases.

prefrontal lobes: portion of the brain directly behind the forehead.

prefrontal lobotomy: (psychiatry) an operation in which the white fibers joining the prefrontal and frontal lobes to the interior region of the brain are severed.

prenatal: existing or taking place before birth.

prerelease: any patient who is entered into therapy to accomplish a release from his chief difficulties, psychosomatic or aberrational.

prescience: knowledge of events or actions before they happen.

present time: the time which is now and becomes the past as rapidly as it is observed. It is a term loosely applied to the environment existing in now.

press-agentry: publicity produced by a press agent's work or skill, especially in making a person or thing seem more desirable, admirable or successful.

preterm: before the end of the period a pregnancy normally lasts.

procreation: bringing living things into existence by the natural process of reproduction.

progeny: children, descendants or offspring collectively.

promiscuous: having sexual relations with many people.

provisos: stipulations or conditions.

pseudo-: combining form meaning "closely or deceptively similar to (a specified thing)," as in pseudonurse, pseudomother, pseudofather, etc.

psychic: of or pertaining to the human soul or mind; mental (opposed to physical).

psychometry: measurement of psychological variables, as intelligence, aptitude and emotional disturbance.

psychoses: severe forms of mental disorder; insanities.

psychosomatic: psycho of course refers to mind and somatic refers to body; the term psychosomatic

means the mind making the body ill or illnesses which have been created physically within the body by derangement of the mind.

punk water: another name for spunk water, rainwater that collects in hollow tree stumps, popularly thought to be a cure for warts.

pygmy: a very small person.

pyramiding: increasing rapidly and on a widening base.

629

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

Q: symbol used to represent an undefined, but observable as existing, form of energy or force.

quinine: a bitter medicinal drug used to treat malaria and in tonics.

rationalization: justified thought—the excuses one makes to explain his irrational behavior.

reactive mind: a portion of a person's mind which works on a totally stimulus-response basis, which is not under his volitional control, and which exerts force and the power of command over his awareness, purposes, thoughts, body and actions. Stored in the reactive mind are engrams, and here we find the single source of aberrations and psychosomatic ills. Also called bank.

recalcitrant: disobedient, resisting authority or discipline.

recourse: a turning or seeking for aid, safety, etc.

recriminative: accusing in return.

red herrings: things intended to divert attention from the real problem or matter at hand; misleading clues.

reduce: take all the charge or pain out of an incident. This means to have the preclar recount the incident from beginning to end (while returned to it in reverie) over and over again, picking up all the somatics and perceptions present just as though the incident were happening at that moment. To reduce means, technically, to render free of aberrative material as far as possible to make the case progress.

remonstrated: presented and urged reasons in opposition or complaint; protested.

Renaissance: the great revival of art, literature and learning in Europe in the 14th, 15th and 16th centuries, based on classical (Greek and Roman) sources. It began in Italy and spread gradually to other countries and marked the transition from the medieval world (from about A.D. 500 to 1450) to the modern.

repeater technique: the repetition of a word or phrase in order to produce movement on the time track into areas of disturbed thought containing that word or phrase. After the auditor has placed the patient in reverie, if he discovers the patient, for instance, insists he "can't go anyplace," the auditor makes him repeat the phrase. Repetition of such a phrase, over and over, sucks the patient back down the track and into contact with an engram which contains it.

630

GLOSSARY

repressions: commands that the organism must not do something.

restimulation: the reactivation of a past memory due to similar circumstances in the present approximating circumstances of the past.

restimulators: approximations of the reactive mind's content or some part thereof continually perceived in the environment of the organism.

retribution: punishment one deserves for a wrong that he has done.

returning: "sending" a portion of one's mind to a past period on either a mental or combined mental and physical basis and reexperiencing incidents which have taken place in one's past in the same fashion and with the same sensations as before.

reverie: the state of reverie is actually just a name. It is a label introduced to make the patient feel that his state has altered and that he has gone into a state where his memory is very good or where he can do something he couldn't ordinarily do before. The actuality is that he is able to do it all the time anyway. It is not a strange state. The person is wide awake, but merely by asking him to close his eyes he is technically in reverie.

reviled: criticized angrily in abusive language.

rheostat: an electrical instrument used to control current by varying resistance.

rheumatic fever: a disease more common among children than adults, characterized by fever, pains in the joints and often damage to the heart.

riding habits: dresses or suits worn by horseback riders.

Rohmer, Sax: pseudonym of Arthur Sarsfield Ward (1883-1959), English author of mystery thrillers, especially a series centering about fictional character Dr. Fu Manchu.

Ross, Ronald: (1857-1932) British physician.

Rousseau, Jean Jacques: (1712-1778) Swiss-born French philosopher, author, political theorist and composer, who argued that nature is good and civilization bad.

sack race: a race in which each contestant jumps ahead while his or her legs are confined in a sack.

sadism: the getting of sexual pleasure from dominating, mistreating or hurting one's partner.

sakes: remembrances.

631

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

salvoed: fired at with a number of guns or artillery pieces at one time.

sanitaria: establishments for treating chronic diseases.

sarcastic: sneering; bitterly cutting; taunting.

scathing: very harsh or bitter.

schematic: of, or having the nature of, a scheme, schema, plan, diagram, etc.

schizophrenic: (psychiatry) person suffering from schizophrenia, a mental illness in which an individual is being two people madly inside of himself. It is a psychiatry classification derived from the Latin schizo, meaning "split," and the Greek phren, meaning "mind."

scholastic: one who narrowly adheres to traditional teachings, doctrines or methods.

school tie: a necktie striped in the colors of a specific English public school, especially as worn by a graduate to indicate his educational background.

Schopenhauer, Arthur: (1788-1860) German philosopher. He maintained that the desires and drives of men, as well as the forces of nature, are manifestations of a single will, specifically the will to live, which is the essence of the world. Schopenhauer asserted that since operation of the will means constant striving without satisfaction, life consists of suffering and that only by controlling the will through the intellect, by suppressing the desire to reproduce, can suffering be diminished.

Scientology: Scientology philosophy. It is the study and handling of the spirit in relationship to itself, universes and other life. Scientology means scio, knowing in the fullest sense of the word and logos, study. In itself the word means literally knowing how to know. Scientology is a "route," a way, rather than a dissertation or an assertive body of knowledge. Through its drills and studies one may find the truth for himself. The technology is therefore not expounded as something to believe, but something to do.

self-determinism: the state wherein the individual can or cannot be controlled by his environment according to his own choice. He is confident in his interpersonal relationships. He reasons but does not need to react.

semantic: of, pertaining to or arising from the different meanings of words or other symbols.

seminal: pertaining to, containing or consisting of semen.

632

GLOSSARY

sensory strip: the sensory strip could be considered the "mental" side of the switchboard, and the motor strip the physical side. See also motor strip in this glossary.

Sententious, Dr.: made-up name for an "authority." Sententious: putting on an air of wisdom; dull and moralizing.

sentient: of, having or capable of feeling or perception; conscious.

seven, gets a: reference to the game of craps (the throwing, or shooting, of dice), in which a first throw of seven wins.

sextant: an instrument used by navigators for measuring the angular distance of the sun, a star, etc., from the horizon, as in finding the position of a ship.

Shakespeare, William: (1564-1616) English poet and dramatist of the Elizabethan period (1558-1603), the most widely known author in all English literature.

shaman: a priest or witch doctor among certain peoples, claiming to have sole contact with the gods, etc.

shift, makes: manages or does the best one can (with whatever means are at hand).

short shrift: little attention or consideration in dealing with a person or matter.

shoulder to the wheel, put a: work energetically toward a goal; put forth effort.

Siberian: of Siberia, a part of the Soviet Union in north Asia, extending from the Ural Mountains to the Pacific.

signal: not average or ordinary; remarkable; notable.

Simple Simon: a foolish character in the well-known anonymous nursery rhyme: "Simple Simon met a pieman, going to the fair; Says Simple Simon to the pieman, 'Let me taste your ware. . . .'"

sinusitis: inflammation of one or more sinus cavities in the skull.

Sioux: of or having to do with a member of a tribe of American Indians living on the plains of northern United States and southern Canada.

soapbox: of, pertaining to, or characteristic of a speaker or speech from a soapbox: any improvised platform used by a person making an informal, often impassioned speech to a street audience, as on a current, controversial issue.

Socrates: (ca. 469-399 B.C.) Greek philosopher and teacher who believed in a "demon" whose voice warned him whenever he was about to make a wrong decision.

633

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

solicitous: anxious and concerned about a person's welfare or comfort.

somatic: bodily or physical. Because the word pain is restimulative, and because the word pain has in the past led to a confusion between physical pain and mental pain, the word somatic is used in Dianetics to denote physical pain or discomfort of any kind.

somatic strip: a physical indicator mechanism which has to do with time. The auditor orders the somatic strip. The somatic strip can be sent back to the beginning of an engram and will go there. The somatic strip will advance through an engram in terms of minutes counted off by the auditor, so that the auditor can say that the somatic strip will go to the beginning of the engram, then to the point five minutes after the engram began, and so forth.

sonic: recall by hearing a past sound with the "mind's ear."

sonorous: resonant, giving a deep, powerful sound.

sooth: truth.

Spartans: the citizens of Sparta, a city in ancient Greece, who would permit a child to live only if he showed potential of becoming an asset to the state.

specious: seeming to be good, sound, correct, logical, etc., without really being so; plausible but not genuine.

Spencer, Herbert: (1820-1903) English philosopher. One of the few modern thinkers to attempt a systematic account of all cosmic phenomena, including mental and social principles.

spinbin: (slang) a mental institution.

squalling: the condition or action of crying or screaming loudly and harshly.

Stalingrad: former name of Volgograd, a city on the Volga River in the Soviet Union.

standard memory bank: recordings of everything perceived throughout the lifetime up to present time by the individual except physical pain, which is not recorded in the analytical mind but is recorded in the reactive mind.

stigma: a mark of shame, a stain on a person's good reputation.

stimuli: things that rouse a person or thing into activity or energy or that produce a reaction in an organ

or tissue of the body.

stock: cattle or other farm or range animals; livestock.

stogies: long, slender, roughly made, inexpensive cigars.

634

GLOSSARY

Stoics: people who maintain or affect the mental attitude advocated by the Stoics, a Greek school of philosophy, founded by Zeno about 308 B.C. , holding that human beings should be free from passion and calmly accept all occurrences as the unavoidable result of divine will.

strychnine: a bitter, highly poisonous substance, used in very small doses as a stimulant.

suffrage: the right to vote, especially in a political election.

sulfa: any of a group of chemical compounds with antibacterial properties.

suppressor: the exterior forces which reduce the chances of the survival of any form.

supranational: of, for, involving or over all or a number of nations.

surgical: pertaining to or involving manual or operative procedures.

swami: lord; master: a Hindu title of respect, especially for a Hindu religious teacher.

syllogism: a form of reasoning in which a conclusion is reached from two statements, as in "All men must die; I am a man; therefore, I must die."

sylvan: of or characteristic of the woods or forests. Used figuratively, as Rousseau's philosophy of the "natural man."

symbiotic: having to do with the living together of similar or dissimilar organisms for mutual benefit.

symbolic logic: a modern type of formal logic using special mathematical symbols to stand for propositions and for the relationships among propositions.

syphilis: a contagious venereal disease affecting first some local part, secondly, the skin and mucous membranes and, thirdly, the bones and muscles and brain.

tabloid: a newspaper usually half the normal size, with many pictures and short, often sensational, news stories.

tacit consent: in the case of two preclears working on each other, each one assuming in his turn the auditor's role, a condition can arise where each prevents the other from contacting certain engrams. This is tacit consent. A husband and wife may have a mutual period of quarrels and unhappiness. Engaged upon clearing each other, working alternately as auditor, they avoid, unknowingly, but by reactive computation, the mutual period, thus leaving in place painfully emotional engrams.

635

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

tactile: of or using the sense of touch.

talisman: an object supposed to bring good luck.

tapped: penetrated, opened up, reached into, etc., for the purpose of using something or drawing something off.

technology: the methods of application of an art or science as opposed to mere knowledge of the science or art itself.

telepathy: communication from one mind to another without the use of speech or writing or gestures, etc.

temporize: effect a compromise; negotiate.

tenderfoot: a raw, inexperienced person; novice.

termagant: boisterous, quarrelsome, scolding; shrewish.

terra incognita: an unknown land; a region or subject of which nothing is known.

testosterone: a male sex hormone.

test tube: a tube of thin, transparent glass closed at one end, used in chemical experiments, etc. Used figuratively.

thalamus: the interior region of the brain where sensory nerves originate.

6: theta, the eighth letter in the Greek alphabet. Greek for thought or life or the spirit.

three-thousand-cycle note: a ringing sound with three thousand vibrations, or cycles, per second.

thyroid: a hormone that regulates the body's growth and development.

tidings: news; information.

time track: the time span of the individual from conception to present time on which lies the sequence of events of his life.

token: a very special kind of restimulator; any object, practice or mannerism which one or more allies used. By identity thought the ally is survival; anything the ally used or did is, therefore, survival.

tomes: large or scholarly books.

Tone Scale: a scale which shows the emotional tones of a person. These, ranged from the highest to the lowest, are, in part, serenity (the highest level), enthusiasm (as we proceed downward), conservatism, boredom, antagonism, anger, covert hostility, fear, grief, apathy.

tongue, slips of the: mistakes in speaking, as inadvertent remarks.

tonnage: weight, measured in tons.

topectomy: (psychiatry) an operation which removes pieces of brain somewhat as an apple corer cores apples.

GLOSSARY

Torquemada, Tomas de: (1420-1498) first Grand Inquisitor of Spain. The Spanish Inquisition, established under Ferdinand and Isabella in 1478, was centralized by Torquemada after his appointment in 1483 as Grand Inquisitor. He gained the reputation, partly deserved, partly exaggerated, of great cruelty in his conduct of the Spanish Inquisition, which reportedly was responsible for the burning of some two thousand persons between 1481 and 1504.

track: see time track.

tractability: state of being easy to manage or deal with; docility.

transcends: goes beyond the limits of; oversteps; exceeds.

transference: (psychoanalysis) the process in and by which a person's feelings, thoughts and wishes shift from one person to another, especially this process in psychoanalysis with the analyst made the object of the shift.

transorbital leukotomy: (psychiatry) an operation which, while the patient is being electrically shocked, thrusts an ordinary dime-store ice pick into each eye and reaches up to rip the analyzer apart.

trauma: a painful emotional experience or shock, often producing a lasting psychic effect and, sometimes, a neurosis.

travail: (figurative) trouble, hardship or suffering.

treats: deals with a subject in writing or speech; speaks or writes (of).

tripe: (slang) anything worthless, offensive, etc.; nonsense.

truck: dealings; business.

trundle bed: a low bed moving on small wheels. It can be pushed under a regular bed when not in use.

tuberculosis: an infectious wasting disease affecting various parts of the body.

uncharted: not shown or located on a map; unexplored; unknown.

undimensional: without measurable extent or limit.

usurps: appropriates wrongly to itself (a right, prerogative, etc.).

Utopian: of or like a Utopia, any idealized place, state or situation of perfection.

vacillation: a wavering in mind or opinion.

vain: without sense or wisdom; foolish; senseless.

valence: personality. The term is used to denote the borrowing of the personality of another. A valence is a substitute for

637

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

self taken on after the fact of lost confidence in self. A preclear "in his father's valence" is acting as

though he were his father.

valence shift: getting the preclear moving around from one valence to the other.

valence wall: a sort of protective mechanism by which the charge of the case is compartmented to permit the individual to work at least some of the time.

vector: a physical quantity with both magnitude and direction, such as a force or velocity.

^feda: the most ancient sacred writings of the Hindus.

veritable: having all the qualities or attributes of the specified person or thing.

vignette: a short description or character sketch.

virus: a microscopic agent that can reproduce only within the cells of living hosts—mainly bacteria, plants and animals.

visio: recall by seeing a past sight with the "mind's eye."

vivisection: cutting into or dissecting.

volatile: moving suddenly and often from one idea, interest, feeling, etc., to another; changeable.

volley: (figurative) a noisy, rapid outpouring or burst of many things at once.

voodoo: a form of religion based on belief in witchcraft and magical rites, practiced by some people in

the West Indies and America.

wash, conies out in the: is revealed; becomes known.

wax: grow bigger or greater; increase.

WCTU: Women's Christian Temperance Union, an organization that campaigns against alcohol use.

weather-vaning: acting like a person or thing that is changeable or inconstant, especially one who veers easily to conform to the prescribed attitudes or popular beliefs of the moment.

well-nigh: very nearly; almost.

welter: a jumble or muddle.

whet: make keen or eager; stimulate.

whip hand: the position of advantage or control.

without: on the outside; outside.

wits: persons characterized by the ability to make lively, clever remarks in a sharp, amusing way.

wreaks: inflicts; causes.

yah-yah: slang term for bickering.

638

GLOSSARY

"Yanks are coming, The": line from the refrain of the song "Over There" by George M. Cohan (1878-1942), American actor, songwriter, playwright and producer. The song is about the American troops sent to Europe to fight in World War I.

yardsticks: standards of measurement or judgment.

Zamba, Dr.: a made-up name for a doctor.

zealot: an excessively zealous person; fanatic.

zombiism: existence as a person who seems to have no mind or will, taken from the voodoo word for a corpse said to have been animated by some power and made to obey commands.

Zulu: a member of a large, formerly warlike, Bantu people of southeastern Africa.

zygote: the first cell of a new individual.

639

Index

AA, see attempted abortion Alexander the Great, 330-331;

A = A = A, 92, 258 see also manic

aberrated personality, AP, 178; allergy(ies), 75, 133, 380

see also aberration; aberree ally(ies), see also ally

aberration(s), see also insanity; computation

neurosis; psychosis antagonist vs., 483-484

attempted abortion auditing with valence shift, 415

and, 190 childhood losses of, 359

classification of, 255-256 denial bv- 353

contagion of, see contagion of departure of or

aberration from- 352- 383

defined, 61, 147 formation during prenatal

diagnosis, 265-266, 273Period- 226-227

educational institutions pseudoally approximates, 343

and> 475 tokens and, 490, 491-492

hypnotism and, 97-98 allv computation, 3'38-344; see

parts of 85also ally; c°mPutation

preclear' and, see preclear Achilles' heel of, 356-357

source of, 61, 80attempted abortion

aberrree(s), 19, 110; see also, _an<!'^L"342

aberration; preclear defimed' 3*L

, .. ' f , . genesis of, 343

abortion, see attemptedresjstive cas£ 5QO

abortion

.. suppressors on time

accident-prone, 220-221track, 425

aches, 133; see also pain; [tadt consent andi 44]

somatic when to suspect, 351-352, 354

ACTH, 131, 140; see also drugaltitude, defined, 475

adrenaline, 138 ambivalence, defined, 379; see

affinity, 152-153; see also also valence

emotion ambiversion, 535

breaking of, 214 amnesia, 80

defined, 153 amnesia trance, 136, 502; see

law(s) of, also hypnosis

has been aberrated, 340analytical mind, see also "I";

hypnosis and, 136mind

restimulation and, 95 analogy as a computing

strengthening of, 432 machine, 65

alcohol, 505 attenuated, 61

640

INDEX

analytical mind, (cont.) assist, 245-246

basic personality"assist" engrain, 329; see also

and, 178 engrain; manic

body and, 70-71, 165 associative restimulator, 337,

computes in490; see also restimulator

differences, 464 asthma, 75, 133, 182, 215

defined, 60». . . , 1C~

, . . . , atheist, 152 dynamics and, 72

incapable of error, 66 attempted abort,on(s) AA,

justification and, 115, 309 n190; see ah° Pre"ata' , ...

monitor and, 65 ^ c°mPutat°n and' 341^-343

necessity level and, 160, 486basic-basic earlier than, 399

nonanalytical moments, 105 chmn ^P68' 417

parasitic demon and, 125 common, 225

remaining unaberrated, 214 indicators of 19°- 342-343

shutdown, murder and action, 190

autocontrol and, 508 mutual AA' defined, 344

drug hypnosis and, 207 attention units, 281

standard memory banks auditing, 350-352; see also

and, 67 therapy

time sense, 78 defined, 551

training pattern auditor(s),

and, 61, 71-72 advice to, 236, 273-274, 525

analyzer, see analytical mindally of pc, 262

anesthesia, anesthetic(s), see attitude, 250, 388-389

also drug; hypnosis defined, 235

all anesthetics are poisons, 105 don'ts, 418-420; see also

hypnotics and anesthesia Auditor's Code

confused, 502 bully patient, 394

used in operations, 86, force computation on pc, 548

194> 516 use command phrase, 389

anger, 162 duty, 250-251

anger-sympathy errors of, 235, 248, 254, 361,

dramatization, 167 398, 447, 548

AP, see aberrated personality evaluation, 253, 265, 548

apathy, gifts to, 427

in engram, 170, 402 goals of, 245, 281

no interest in engrams, impediment of, 261-262

433, 435 must(s),

propitiation and, 426, 429 keep temper, 393

succumbing to engram is, 250 not reveal confidential

arbitrary, introduction of, 120 matter, 436

arbitrary structure, relative of pc, 394

defined, 558 restimulation of, 406, 537

Aristotle's pendulum, 277, 465 role of, 248-249

arithmetic, 466; see also logic tools, 392

arthritis, 75, 133, 142, 272 well-trained, 543

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

Auditor's Code, 252 black panther mechanism, 212

break, 252, 253, 418, 536 body,

remedy, 447, 499 analytical mind and,

Clear and, 252, 537 70-71, 165

why important, 264 , effect of engram on, 345-346

autocontrol, 432, 507-508 pc outside his body, see

autogenetic illness, 132; see also exteriorization

psychosomatic resistance to disease, 145

autohypnosis, 509; see also boil(ing) off, 301, 421, 479; see

hypnosis also unconscious

awareness, see also consciousbouncer, see also command

acute awareness of self, 324 phrase

center of awareness of defined, 298, 300

person, 65 examples of, 300, 454,

level of, 286 460-461

mind and, 235 inK^ regulated by, 317

bank, see reactive mind; use Of_ 388

standard bank Bp xe basic L

bank monitor, defined, 279- brain 141> 509 514

280; see also file clerk brjd m 559 56?

bas,c, 452; see also cham; bu

engram

basic area, 290, 293, 316; see Caesar, 56, 76

also chain; prenatal; time calcium deposits, 20

trackCaligula, 76

basic-basic, 351; see also chain; canceller, 282

engram cancer, 134

auditor tries to reach, case(s), see also preclear

290-291, 351, 387, 398 classifications, 386

case resolution and, 251 computing on, 551

defined, 183 delay, 436, 536

basic personality, UP, see also entrance, see case opening

personality history, 516, 521

defined, 178, 544-547 improvement ratio, 348

file clerk is sample of, 288 Junior, see Junior case

stopping therapy and, 544-547 opening, see case opening

basic purpose, 330, 334; see type, case type,

also dynamic chronic doubter, 472

behavior, see also aberrationcombat exhaustion case, 530

dynamics and, 55 "death instinct" case, 381

irrational, 61 "different" case, 395

rationalization and, 365 foreign-language case, 437

birth, see also engram high euphoria case, 327

engram, 182, 186, 196, 215 incapable of holding

in cleared mother, 231 opinion, 478

prenatal experience and, 176 institutionalized, 530

reduction of, 389Junior, see Junior case

642

INDEX

case(s), (com.) chloroform, 503; see also

type, case type, (COM.)anesthesia

manic case, 327-328 circuit(s), 77, 124-126, 287; see

psychotic case, 527 also demon circuit

resistive case, 500 Clear(s), see also Release

sonic and visio shut-off ambiversion, 535

without "dub-in," 272 compared to contemporary

stuck in present time, 396 norm 243

case opening, 236, 346-347, defined, 16, 161, 242

386; see also case eccentricity and, 498

cell(s), cellular, 73; see also ethica, leve, of> 537

ody gOal jn Djaiietic therapy, 29

engram and, 104, 183 has no -mental voices," 125

organism and, 101imagination, Clear uses, 25

chain(s) (engram chains), see inversion in, 324

also basic; engram length of time, 0 c]ear a

cross engram and, 207 person 541_543

first incident on, 452 te Qn Auditor-s Code

types of, 416-418 252 53?

word chains, 451-452 act's ^ 558

charge(ed)(s), perception in, 17

electrical chargea, m ^ ^

(analogy), 358 sod amj ,99_20()

emotional charge, «» emotion k flto d ^ 2nd

how to get rid of, 390 , . . . »

... . ,,,,,, chain types, 416

pc advance in therapy and, 332 , . lv »»_»»

it-u 1.-U I r » during pregnancy, 207, 226,

child, children, see also fetus; TV? -jos

prenatal , zz/' ^ . . .

accidental mishaps of, 210 lan«uage durm|s

birth,,, birth engram,c,226

"child wonder," 333 cold' common cold' 75' 133

clearing and, 201, 222 colorblindness, 17

dub-in recall, 437 comatic reduction, 423; see also

engrams, 145, 222, 487-488 boil(ing) off

feeble-minded, 191commanded action, 89, 298

healthiest, 231 command(s), engramic, see also

illness(es), 145, 222, 489; see command phrase

also illness anesthesia and, 386

losses of allies, 359 boil-off and, 301

marriage and, 431 effect on pc, 316-317

not possible to spoil with love, engram, command value

152, 202 of, 128-129

prenatal child, see fetus explained, 293

punishment of, 201, 213 more important than action in

restimulators of, 201, 215, 217 engram, 369

self-determined, 202 suppressors by way of engram

childhood, 171-172, 190-191; command, 425

see also child time track regulated by, 317

643

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

command phrase(s), see also Darwin, Charles, 73, 553

bouncer; command,data, datum,

engramic; denyer; grouper; analytical mind and, 60, 65,

holder; misdirector 113,154

classes of, types of, 300, correctness of, 548

458, 480 engram filing system, 445-446

}; don't use command phrases in evaluation of 469

patter, 389file clerk and' 280, 459

compulsion^), compulsive, 83, flash answer and, 413

93' 429 from relatives, 543

computation(s)(al), "held-down seven" and, 28

ally computation, see ally intelligence and, 60

computationtrue datum> doctrine of,

analyzer and, 160154—155

rational, 473 deMt dea(J> se£ alsg succlunb

reactive mind computation, 91a,, ,QSS rf 352 353

secrecy and, 501 ..^ ^ , 3g,

conception 183 fai]ures 59

"conditioning^)," 71-72, moments of 362

urge is away from, 34 confusion, 463,470, 562 *.JL,. 40

conjunctivitis, 182 . . . ,__

. , , , deep analysis, 177

conscious! ness), see also ... ;

awareness; unconscious delirium tremens, DTs, 505

analytical mind and, 86demon(s), 120; see also circuit;

depth of, 165 demon circuit

engram and, 113 classes of 123

posthypnotic suggestion belowdennded, 124

the level of, 93 demon circuits), see also

constipation, 138, 416 circuit; demon

contagion of aberration, see analyzer set up as, 125

also aberration bypassed in narcosynthesis, 178

defined, 193-194 handling of, 352

in birth, 1% parasitic quality of, 328

in education, 476denyer, see also command

in family, 201 phrase; forgetter

in politics and war, 198-199 mechanism

source of, 193-194 action on time track and, 317

contraceptive, 190, 417
cancellor and, 283

coronary trouble, 75; see also defined, 300, 301

heart
examples of, 300, 369,

covert hostility, 429 459-460

cowardice, 250 repeater technique on, 310-311

creative imagination, 26 depressive, 84, 169; see also

criminal(s), 211, 560 manic

criticism, 262 derail(s), 463, 480; see also

Dark Ages, 42 command phrase

644

INDEX

derangement, disease(s), 143-144; see also

of body, 142 illness; psychosomatic

types of, 147 causing organic mental

dermatitis, 133, 272 alterations, 510

diabetes, 134 germ and nongerm theory

diagnosis, 255 of 132

auditor and, see auditor doctor(s),

computing on a case, 551 contagion of aberration

description of Dianetic, 273 from 196

"imaginary" pains, 481 Dianetics and 42°

insane patient, 529 en.Sram cham ^P6' 417

IQ is no great factor in, 274misapprehension of bram

pc's talk about own function by, 510

engrams, 535 recommending abortion, 190

perceptions and, 265-266 ^pey, feeling» 109' see als°

primary factors in, 265-266 boil(ing) off

rule in, 261 doubter, 472, 475

Dianetic, Dianetics, douche(s), douche bag, 190,

abbreviation Dn, 227, 417

auditing, goal, 29, 391 dramatic personnel, 117

branches of, 219 dramatization(s), dramatize(d),

defined, 239 aberree and, 451

diagnosis, described, 273 accidents and, 133

don'ts, 418-420; see also anger-sympathy, 167

Auditor's Code breaking of, 118

first aid, 515 caused by engrams, 115 fundamental and primary error contagion of, 193-194

in practice of, 248 defined, 115-116

history of, 553 example of, 116, 368-369

how to run, 392-394 people under stress and, 194

hypnotism and, 283-284, 509 valence, 115, 116-117, 170

is a parallel to thought, 252 dream(s), 293, 421

Judiciary Dianetics, 555 drug(s), 501; see also

legislation and, 240 anesthesia; hypnosis

main emphasis of, 274 causing organic mental

other practices and, 235, 238, alteration, 510

394, 420 hypnosis, drug, 177, 207

past and future, 553 hypnotics and anesthetics

philosophic background confused, 502

°f. 553 mind's protection and, 235

Preventive Dianetics, 219 patient who pleads for, 284

research on, 179, 469, 483 psychosomatic ill and, 156

routine, rehearsal of, 285 reason for uncertain effects

simplicity of, 247 of, 140

war and, 559 tests on drugged

who can practice, 239 patients, 135

645

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

dub-in, see also imagination emotion(al), see also affinity;

case, 396, 475 tone

imagination dubbed in for captured units of, 525

recall, 266-267, 386 charge, emotional charge(s),

lie factories and, 273, 440 see also charge

sign of secrecy imposed on location of, 425

child, 437 not displaying itself, 383

testing recall for somatic strip and, 451

dub-in, 270 defined, 61

dynamic(s), 51; see also discharge, 362-363, 390

survival dynamics and, 158

behavior and, 54-55 engram(s) and, see engram

blocked dynamics, 151, 191, laughter and, 174

214 335 369 'loss' emotion of 171, 354, 525

defined' 59' painful, see painful emotion

emotion and, 158 Plus and minus' 158

engrams and, 60 role in 60 TMf

intelligence and, 60 shut-off's' 442~443

spectrum of, 277 state, 173

strength of, 53 endocrine 138

survival dynamic, 39, 53, 161 $\langle \rangle^{\text{TM}}_{n(S)(c)}$, see also basic;

. ... cobasic-basic; command,

dynamic, 1st, 53 engramic; command

dynamic, 2nd, see also phrase; pain; unconscious

child; sex aberration and, 396

blocked, 191 analytical mind, analyzer, see

defined, 53 also analytical mind

deviation in, 149-151 justification of engram, 309

dynamic, 3rd, 53 power has nothing to do

dynamic, 4th, 53; see also man with, 223-224

dynamic principle of reaction of analyzer to, 262,

existence, 32 298, 301

education(al), aPathy case and> 433- 435

analytical thought and, 115 approach to, 236-237,

contagion of aberration249-250

and 476 "assist" aspect, 329

faulty educational bank- see reactive mind

system, 471basic engram> see basic;

valid method of therapy, 216 basic-basic

Educational Dianetics, ^irth' see bir*

defined, 219 bou"cer' see bo""cer . ^

break engram, defined, 207 ejector, see bouncerchronic 152

elan vital, 320 coitus 370

electric shock, see shock command(s) in engrams, 298,

electroencephalograph, 320-458; see also command,

embryo, 188, 227; see engramic; command phrase

also fetus in chronic restimulation, 316

646

INDEX

engram(s)(ic), (cont.) engram(s)(ic), (COM.)

command(s) in engrams, (cont.) primary engram, 181

more important than action pro-survival engram,

in it, 369-336, 370

not computable, 293 reduction of, 307

sleep commands, 422 shocks and operations, 512

command value of, 128-129 suppressed by other data, 449

common denominator surrender engram, 142

of, 107, 399 sympathy engram, see

contrasurvival engram, sympathy, sympathy engram

214> 335 talking out of, 257, 301

Achilles' heel of, 357 thought (engramic), 91,

defined, 90, 367 306-307; see also think

restimulator for, 490 three-day aspect of, 541

cross engram, defined, 207 (one value ^ m cycle of action of, 134

"development," 309, 540 engram-denyer, *, denyer

dramatization of, see engram-grouper, see grouper

dramatization engram lock chain, 112; see

dynamics inhibited als° chain; lock

by, 60, 335 environment(al),

emotion and word content approach on asthma case, 215

of, 371 change of, 215, 534-535

emotionless engram, 352danger or sympathy in, 165

filing system, 445-446 restimulative, 216-217, 534

habit and, 61 erasure, erase, 432; see also

illness, precipitated by, 145reduction

intelligence inhibited by, 60defined, 290, 401

Junior case engram, 295reduction and erasure, 393

key-in, keying in engram, seeescape mechanism, 448

key-in; lock estrogen, 138

language and, 297ether> 503

late engrams, 453euphoria, 141, 327, 541; see

locks, see lock fl/JO manic

memory and 88 evil, «* ate good

647

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

extended hearing, 135, 183; see forgetter, forgetter

also sonic , mechanism(s), 283,355,377;

exteriorization, see also command phrase

painful emotion and, 360 fourth dynamic, see

prenatal "ESP" and, 442dynamic, 4th

testing for, 387 function,

views, exteriorized, 360, always comes before

442-443 structure, 103

exteriorly determined, 8raph of mind functions,

defined, 322 286-287

»• r^nimagination, function of, 160

extrasensory perception, Ear, . , r • • r

/no AAn mind function, axioms tor

Qyy—44U ., . f.

• h IQ on auditor, 464

eyesight, 19-20 word causing pnvsciai function

fabricator, see lie factory to change, 136

faith healing, 246 future, 25, 160

fate, 220 gallbladder trouble, 272

fear, 162, 163 galvanometer, 405

fear paralysis, 162, 191 "garbage," 552

feeble-minded(ness), 191, 512 genetic insanity, defined, 193

feeling, 340, 442; see also germ(s), 132, 145, 146, 193; see

perception; shut-off als° disease; illness

fetus, see also prenatal gerontology, 139

coitus and, 207, 226 &****' 19720

has no ESP, 439, 440 <*** <f>f™an' 10

high blood pressure and, 8°°d' l4'*5'??™ a'S° 7"

372-373 grouper, 300, 461-462; see also

injury to, 224 command phrase

records in womb, 183-184 don ' use °n Pre^ar' ff

recovery qualities of, 189 dine trade and 301 317

words in, listed, 454

^ ' ™, habit, 61

addressing 281 happiness, 60, 203

auditor and, 281, 314, 317; see ^™ mferrine, 133, 314,

also auditor 372-373

basic personality and 288 544 he 2Q 183_lg4 26?. ^

data not given forth by, 459 , .

defined, 279-280 hear! ,36 B7

don t try to command 291 held.down seven, 28i 323; see

emotion in bank impedes, 445 ^ aberration

graph of position of, 286-287ho,der(s)? see also command

laws of returning and, 316-317 phrase

finger snap, 285; see also flash action of time track and) 3]7

answer canceller prevents installation

flash answer, 393, 411-413 of, 283

foreign-language case, 437; see defined, 300, 460

also case don't use on preclear, 389

648

INDEX

holder(s), (cont.) identity(ies), (cont.)

example of, 369 thought, identity thought, (cont.)

finding in therapy, 393examples of identity

repeater technique and, 304, 451 thinking, 91, 294

words contained in, 454Junior case, 295-297, 424

homosexuality, 149 key-in and, 94

hypnosis, hypnotism, illness, ills, see also disease;

hypnotic, psychosomatic; somatic

aberration and, 97-98 aberration and survival value

autohypnosis and, 509 of. 486

defined, 136, 531breaking dramatization

drug hypnosis, 177, 207; see and, 118

also narcosynthesis delay between restimulation

forgetter mechanism and, 355 and, 525

laboratory tool, 82 delirium of, 86

manic installed during, 169 precipitated by, 145

posthypnotic suggestion, see psychosomatic, see

suggestion psychosomatic

revivification and, 21 types of, 132

semblances of insanity and, 84 imagination, imaginary, see

sleep and, 109, 177-178, also dub-in

283-284; see also sleepcreative, 26

unwarranted in Dianetics, 509defined, 25

hypochondriac, 84, 147, 380 diagnosis and, 265-266

"hysterical" blindness, therapy using pc's

deafness, 267 "imaginings," 482

"I," see also basic personality; immortality, 40-41

file clerk immortality, 34, 59; see also

defined, 126 survival

drugs and, 136, 502 individual(s), see also dynamic,

file clerk feeds memory 1st; preclear

to "I," 280 location on survival

graph of "I," 286-287 spectrum, 160

nature of "I," 65-66 optimum, 16

reduction of awareness self-determined, 199

of "I," 68 injury,

things hidden from "I," 127 Dianetic first aid, 515

iatrogenic illness, 240, 245, pain of, 86

274, 510-512 prenatal injuries, 224

identity(ies), silence and, 169, 226,

derailers and identity 227, 230

confusion, 463 insanity, see also aberration;

reactive mind thinks irrationality; psychosis

in, 294, 464 confusion and, 562

thought, identity thought, defined, 42, 527

associative restimulators diagnosis of, 529

and, 490 genetic insanity, defined, 193

649

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

insanity, (com.) lock(s), see also engram;

organic, 245, 274key-in; restimulation

semblance of, 84 alleviation of, 446-447

temporary and chronic, 110 defined, 98, 154, 423

Institutional Dianetics, 245, engram lock chain, 112

529; see also Dianeticshypnoanalysis and, 177

insulin shock, 511 primary lock, defined, 423

intelligence, 60, 129 logic, 339, 466, 485

inversion, defined, 324iovej ioving, 223, 427-428; see irrationality, 27, 147, 465-466, also
affinity

525; see also aberration; children, 152, 489

insanity; rational propitiation and, 427

Judiciary Dianetics, 555; seeman mankind, see aiso

also Dianetics dynamic, 4th

Junior case, 295, 424, 454; see basic nature of > 14

also case; valence behavior of, 52, 54-55

key-in, see also lock; evil portion of 29, 210

restimulation goal of 3,

defined, 94 in affinity with j 50, 153

delayed character of, 525 self-determined organism, 47

mechanics of, 107-108, ., ^ , .

203-204 manic(s), see also depressive

moments of loss and, 358 ali&n^ TM* basic PurP°se-

prevention, 221-222 . c330, ,,'

key-out, 216 defined, 327

i • »i. • ^o euphoria and, 327, 541

(anesthesia, 68 . ,, . , . ,,.

installed in hypnotism, 84 language, see also word factor in engramic manic-depressive, 169, 180;
see

thinking, 297 also dePressive; engram;

foreign-language case, 437 manic

homonymic language, 89 Manichaeus, cult of, 151

in engrams, 128, 294 marriage, see also dynamic,

potential madness and, 100 2nd

word combinations and contagion of aberration in,

aberrations, 256 195-196

laugh, laughter, 174-175, 448 propitiation in, 427

lesbianism, 149 "reactive mind

lie factory, 271, 480, 549; see partnership," 428

also dub-inmemory(ies), see also

life,remember; standard bank

goal of, 32defined, 89

is a group effort, 45 deranged by electric

life force,shock, 441

engrams disperse, 60 difference between engram

mechanical theory of, 326 and, 88, 290, 401

therapy and, 172, 348 spectrum of, 278

650

INDEX

mental, see also mind norm, 100, 244

conditioning, 80 nymphomaniac, 381

healing, 235 occlusion, occluded, see also

illness, see also insanity; circuit; shut-off

psychosis emotion, 398

ancient treatments for, 9-10 life periods and people,

inorganic and organic, 167, 425

203, 275 person, occluded, defined, 354

organic mental alteration, 509 shut-offs and occlusion

voices, 125 demons, 126-127

Mesmer, Franz Anton, 355 operation(s), surgical, 235, 511;

migraine headaches, 133, see also engram

314, 372-373 absolute silence should

mind, see also analytical mind; attend, 168-169

reactive mind anesthetics used in, 516

analogy of, 559 contagion of aberration in, 194

characteristics of, 235 should be run as engrams, 512

function of, 59-60, 464 optimum solution, 54-55, 58

major divisions, 65 pain, physical pain, see also

mind knows how the mind engram; painful emotion;

operates, 254, 546 unconscious

parts of, 286-287 analytical mind and, 79, 104

protection, 235 cells record, 184

time, time track and, 315-316 commands, 479-480

unconsciousness and, 79-80 death and, 34

misdirector, 301, 393, 409, 462; defined, 34, 36, 59

see also command phrase engram contains, 99, 147

monitor, 65; see also file reactive mind and, 60

clerk; "I" shut-off, see shut-off

monologuing, 224, 293, 444 pain-drive theory, 50, 209

morning sickness, 224, 225, 417 painful emotion, see also

morphine, 502; see also drug emotion; engram; pain;

motor strip, 405; see also sorrow

somatic strip commands, 480

Napoleon, 55, 76 distorts the bank, 363

narcosynthesis, 169, 177, 501; exteriorized views and,

see also drug; hypnosis 360, 442-443

nervous system, 79, 139-140; laughter and, 175

see also brain prenatal and later-life, 357

neurosis(es), neurotic, see also palsy, 191

aberration; irrationality paralytic stroke, 510

example of, 83 parasitic circuit(s), see circuit

Institutional Dianetics and, 245 parent(s), see also child

working a neurotic case, 392 animosity toward, 425-426

nitrous oxide, 166, 503, 528; contagion of aberrations

see also anesthesia; drug; of, 194

hypnosis paresis, 275

651

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

pathology, 132, 146 preclear(s), pc(s), (cont.)

patient, see preclear indicators and

pc, abbreviation, see preclear manifestations, (cont.)

perceptions), see also sensesengramic command in awake

u t. j «.speech of preclear, 317

can be obstructed by . /I .,.,. 1,_.

. ,.- } laughter, 174-175

demon, 127 „? , , „„

„. . ' offhand and flippant, 448

defined, 17>. A- •

„„„„„ pretending pain or

d,agnosis and, 265-266 wounds, 482

differences of, 18 shut-offs, 480

engram includes all introversion of, 535

percepts, 106 opposition by, 262, 545

extrasensory perception, 439 optimum pc, defined, 272

personality, 117, 288; see also relative of auditor, 394

aberrated personality; basic responsibility and, 536

personality; valence shying away from engram> 36i

pleasure, 34, 36, 40, 48-49, somatic strip and, 406

59; see also pain; survival prefrontal lobotomy, 141, 217,

is permanent, 154275 511

life force augmented by, 332 pregnancy, 225-227

poison(s), 105, 510; see also prenatal(s), prenatal

anesthesia; drug engram(s), see also engram;

Political Dianetics, 219, 242, fetus

559; see also Dianetics acceptance of, 185

positive suggestion, see area, 357-358

suggestion different from prenatal

posthypnotic suggestion, see memory, 187

suggestion keyed in by moment of

potential value, of an individual 'oss' 358

or group, 61 living conditions, 444-445

preclear(s), 'pc(s), see also case more serious &*"

aberration pc will hold to, 338 postnatal, 223

advance in therapy, 332prerelease, defined, 250; see

cannot see his own als° P«clear; Release

aberrations, 249 present time, see also time;

classes of, 527 time track

contacting engram, 301 bouncer and, 301

defined, 250 defined, 411

emotional upset in pc's life misdirector and, 463

current with therapy, 500 "stuck in present time,"

exteriorized views, 360388, 396

hiding something in his life test of Pc being in, 393,

from the auditor, 436 411-412

indicators and manifestations, Preventive Dianetics, 219; see

ally computation, 352 also Dianetics

ashamed of past, 436 propitiation, 426-427, 429

652

INDEX

prosurvival engram(s), rational(ity), (com.)

335-336, 370; see also irrationality and, 465-466

engrain self-determinism and, 199

ally computation and, 343 survival conduct pattern

become chronic, 152 and, 55

defined, 90, 343, 370 test of, 468, 556

pseudoally, 343, 353-354, 492; what rational computation

see also ally depends upon, 473

psychosis(es), psychotic, 527; rationalization, 365

see also insanity reactive mind(s), see also

"organic psychoses," 509 analytical mind; engram;

produced by hypnosis, 83 mind

psychosomatic(s), cells and, 104, 184

psychosomatic ill(ness)(es), defined, 60

131; see also disease; illness; dreams and, 414

pain; somatic electric shock and, 441

alleviation of, 186 file clerk and, 280, 317

autogenetic illness, 132 habit and, 61

chronic, 152, 336 how best attacked, 251

classes of, 142 hypnotism and, 531

defined, 131 literalness of, 129

fluid flow and, 142 mechanisms of protection

is the former injury, 273 of, 525

occur when engram operates on two-valued

keys in, 189 logic, 339

pc continually holding to, 338 painful emotion distorts, 363

source of, 61, 100, 203 possessed by everyone, 75

punishment, punishment feeds, 211

contagion of aberrations source of psychosomatic

and, 197-198 ills, 203

corporal punishment of thinks only in identities,

children, 201 60, 294

does no good, 209 reactive thought, defined, 115

society and, 115, 197-198 reality,

puns, 293, 414 "facing reality," 325

purpose, perception and, 17, 23

aberee's purpose, 332 subjective, 544

basic purpose, 330 reason, 558, 561; see also

of therapy, 283 rational

"push button(s)," 108, 322, recall(s), see also memory;

491; see also key-in remember; return

"rapport," between auditor and basic personality and, 178-179

preclear, 432 classes of, 527

rational(ity), see also diagnosis and, 265-266

irrationality; sanity imagination and, 265-266

can be studied in cleared optimum, 23—24

person only, 27 shut-off of, 513

653

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

recall(s), (cont.) restimulation, restimulative,

standard banks and, 69 restimulate, (cont.)

testing, 270 chronic, 109-110, 316

recession, 403; see also environmental, see

reduction environment

reduction, reduce, see also example of, 95

erasure; recession marriage and, 429

defined, 400-401 mutually restimulative,

erasure and, 393, 400-401 defined, 538

Tone Scale and, 402, 447 of auditor, 406, 537

when any phrase or word is restimulative word, 147

in an engram will not pseudoally and, 492

reduce, 453 restimulator(s), see also push

regression, 21-22, 277; see also button; restimulation

return associative restimulator,

Release(s), see also Clear 337' 49°

defined, 242, 434 child lives with- 201

how brought about, 354 defined, 96, 106-107

therapy time to produce, 542 handling by environmental

value of, 243 change- 215

restimulator lag, defined, 526

reliving, 22, 277, 528; see also 6

return return(ed)(ing), 21-23,

remember(ing), 276-277, 418, 276-277; see also."*all;

498; ** also recall; return remember; reverie; time

track repeater technique, 301, 318;data jg2

see also technique; therapy defined 2, 2?9 3,g addressed only to action, not to fi,e derk and 2g,

aberra"0"" 3 0 indoctrinating pc into,

cautions, 454, 458 396-397

demotion of, 304-306, ^ for MI]ty ^ 22

handling shut-offs with, 532 reverie' 509; see also return

if pc does not work well fixes attention on self and

on, 450 audltor' 386

single word technique, 451 optimum, 282

sucks pc down track, 302, reveals where one is on

408-409 track' 412

- j c- j -,™ scouting for material in,

replay, defined, 390 350-351

restimulation, restimulative, use of on lock 445

restimulate, 536; see also revivification, 2, dramatization; key-in;

restimulator r'ght' 555-556; see also evil;

artificial, 334 g°od; wronf?

canceller and, 282-283 ringing in ears, 444-445, 507

childhood illness and, 145 "sag," 540

654

INDEX

sanity, see also rational shut-off(s), (com.)

break engram and, 207 pain shut-off, 386, 442-443,

bridge between insanity 499

and, 181 recall shut-off, 513

defined, 467 somatic shut-offs, 479-480

rationality and, 72 sonic shut-off, 296

relationship to law, 110 sight, 19-20, 265-266; see also

remembering and, 498 visio

schizophrenic, see also valence silence, 169, 226, 230

defined, 180 single word technique, see

insanities, 83 repeater technique

narcosynthesis and, 177 sinusitis, 75, 133, 380

time track and, 289, 463, 528^ a^ boi., off.

second dynamic, see hypnosis

dynamic, 2nd analyzer shutdown and feeling

secrecy, 418, 436-437, 501 "sleepy," 109

sedatives, 501; see also boil-off and, 301, 422

anesthesia; drug experience occurring

self-determinism, self-during, 105

determined, hypnotism and, 109, 283-284

child is entitled to, 202 society,

Clear is operating on, 29 clears and, 199-200

man and, 47, 199, 321-322 contagion of aberration in,

senses, 136, 269; see also 194-195, 197

perception ideal society, 556

sensory strip, 405; see also Political Dianetics, 219,

somatic strip 242, 559

sex(ual), 149, 206, 431; see also primitive, 195

coitus; dynamic, 2nd punishment and, 115

shock, tolerance of sexual

accident, shock of, 86 perversion, 150

electric shock, sodium pentothal, 177, 528; see

cases, 275, 511-512 also anesthesia; hypnosis

effect of, 141, 441, 529-530 somatic(s), see also pain;

shut-off(s), see also commandpsychosomatic

phrase anesthetics and, 502

analyzer, 399 clue to the presence of

case with, 272, 396 any, 479-480

defined, 480 defined, 266

emotion shut-off, 442-443, file clerk and, 291

480 location, 318

"feeling," 442, 451 reduction of, 402

handling with repeater repeater technique and,

technique, 397 408-409

indicators of, 479-480, 483 shut-off, 479-480

occlusion demon and, 126—127 strip, see somatic strip

655

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

somatic(s), (corit.) suggestion, positive

two kinds of, 420suggestion, (com.)

validity of engram and, 550 sympathy engram, 92

somatic mind, 60 suicide, 153

somatic strip, see also time suppressors), see also dynamic

trackanalytical mind and, 160

emotional charge and, 451 dams up emotion in

handling somatic strip, 388, engram, 171

405 engram type, 336

repeater technique and, 408 germ acts as, 146

works in all shut-offs, 442 survival suppressor, 42

sonic, see also hearing; surgery, see operation, surgical

perception survival, survive, see also

defined, 266 dynamic; succumb

recall(s), 386, 527 conduct pattern, 55, 74

shut-off, 296 depends on right answers, 199

sorrow, 171, 351, 355; see also descriptive graph of survival, 35

painful emotion dynamic principle of

split personality, 117; see also existence, 32, 57

schizophrenic; valence goal of, 59

stammerers, 230 illness and survival value, 486

standard bank(s), standard mind and, 464

memory bank(s), see also pleasure and, 36

analytical mind; memorypotential, 59, 332

basic personality and, 178 spectrum of, 278

content of, 67-68, 290 suppressor, 42

defined, 67tooth-and-claw, 116

file clerk monitors, 280 symbiote, symbiotic, 45, 53, 58

filing system described, 67-68 sympathy, sympathy engram(s),

potentiality of recall and, 69 see also engram

stimulants, 504 basic pattern of, 336

stream of consciousness, 125; buried, 377

see also think chronic psychosomatic illness

structure, and, 252, 486, 488-489

alteration of, 510 defined, 155

body structure and sympathy dramatization of, 155-156,

engram, 345-346 170, 492-493

function and, 103, 406 effect of, 344

stupidity computation, 500; see ESP and, 440

also computation posthypnotic suggestion

succumb, 212, 250; see also and, 92

survival pretends to be pro-survival, 154

suggestion, positive suggestion, psychosomatics and, 261

see also hypnosis-reluctance of pc and, 338

auditor and, 264, 533 syphilis, 530

deniers and, 355 tacit consent, 441

example of, 81 tactile, 136; see also perception

656

INDEX

technique(s), time track, track, (cont.)

repeater, see repeater technique grouper and, 301

single word technique, late end of, 411

451-452 moving on, 458

steps of, 350-352 occluded areas, 425

types of, 318 off the track, 443, 528

telepathy, 443 prenatal, 357

terra incognita, 1-2 reverie and- 412

testosterone, 138; see also "stuck in Present time-" 396

endocrine token(s)' 489-490, 491

j. tone, Tone Scale, see also

a cardinal principle in, 309 [^]"V^T,^

advance in, 332 c?ck of "»-"?•™

a fundamental axiom of, 180 engrams and' >™' 353

, . t r,-,great loss and, 358

future of, 564 ° . ' ,

, , reduction or engrams and,

goal>29 402 447

motto which applies to all, 398 ., ' . . . ,

, -,- social organism graphed

mutual, 5165f «

primary error* 248 ^ 3? ^

purpose of 247, 283 tone Q_2 fear ^ m

starting, 236 tone 0.5, apathy, 402

time in therapy, 541-543 tong ,, 6 terrorj ,62

Auditor s Code violations {one Q_9 fear 162

extend, 536tQne , 3? 56Q

esnmation of, 2461 273 543 tonf , 3 4Q2

valid methods of, 215-216 . , Q ~Q

tone i .7, jo think, thinking, thought, tone 2 3g

analytical thought, 115analyzer and, 164

identity thinking, see identity pc in tone 2 area 448

imagination, 25 society in tone 2, 560

reactive mind thinking, tone 2.5, boredom, 402

112-113 tone3, 38

three types of, 115 tone 4, 38, 448, 560

thyroid, 138 use in diagnosis, 273

time, see also time track zones of, 37

analytical mind's time tone-deaf, 75

sense, 78 toothache, 217

equation of optimum solution topectomy, 275, 511

and, 55-56 training pattern, 61, 71-72,

file clerk and, 291 114; see also circuit

handling pc in time, 315 trance, 283, 502; see also

shift, 318 hypnosis

time track, track, transference, 284, 547

condition of, 286, 317 transorbital leukotomy, 141,

derailer and, 463217, 275, 511

engrams and, 208 tuberculosis, 134

657

DIANETICS: THE MODERN SCIENCE OF MENTAL HEALTH

turnabout clearing, 431 vitamin B., 504-505

ulcers, 133 war, 198, 560-561

unconscious(ness), see also woman, women,

conscious; engrain; pain best audited by women, 432

boil-off and, 301-302, 421, 479 Preventive Dianetics

contagion of aberration 230

and- 194 psychotic women, 208

defined, 61, 68 womb, 183-184, 187-188, 445;

dr"g' 208 see also prenatal

emotions around unconscious Word(s), see also language

person, 170aberration and, 256

manifestations of, 421 chains 451

protection mechanism of contained in engrams can

bank, 525 .. h button" aberree, 491

source of aberration, 80 ^ ho mic word) 480

time track and, 279 T used fa ms J2g

valence(s), 15; see also ^^ demon and word

personality; sch.zophrenic mjstak nl

defined' n?->7 pam as a word, 147

derailer and, 463. wor(J techni 451

dramatization of, 117, 148 ,. no

. . . , . , you, used in enerams, 128

exteriorized views and, 360 , _ °. , _.

multivalence, multivalent, 117, worry' defined' 296' 473

180 379 worth, of an individual, 62

picking up a, 165-166 wrong, 555-556; see also right

shift, 414-415, 492 zone(s), see also tone

tokens and, 491 auditor locating pc in, 273

wall between pc and emotionalemotion, relationship to, 158

tone, 353 graph, 35

winning valence, 117, 148, 170 survival zones, 57

visio, 266, 267; see also zygote, 37, 185, 188, 227; see

perception; sightalso embryo; fetus; prenatal